

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2023 with funding from
Kahle/Austin Foundation

https://archive.org/details/irishamericanhis0002revj



COMMODORE JOHN BARRY,
Father of the American Navy

IRISH-AMERICAN HISTORY

OF THE

UNITED STATES.

COMPLETE IN TWO VOLUMES.

BY THE

VERY REV. JOHN CANON O'HANLON, M.R.I.A.

WITH AN INTRODUCTION BY THE

VERY REV. THOMAS J. SHAHAN,

CATHOLIC UNIVERSITY, WASHINGTON, D. C.

VOLUME II.

NEW YORK:

P. MURPHY & SON,

279 CHURCH STREET.

1907.

PRINTED BY
P. MURPHY & SON,
279 CHURCH STREET,
NEW YORK.

IRISH-AMERICAN

HISTORY OF THE UNITED STATES.

VOLUME II.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

Preparations for the Attack on Richmond—Defences prepared by the Confederates—General Wool takes Possession of Norfolk—Federal Approach—The Chickahominy River—The Battle of Seven Pines—Seven continuous Engagements around Richmond—Federals retreat to the James River—Battle of Malvern Hill.

MEANWHILE, General McClellan had been placed at the head of an army nearly 150,000 strong,[1] and comprising four corps, respectively commanded by Generals McDowell, Sumner,[2] Samuel P. Heintzelman,[3] and Erasmus Darwin Keyes.[4] He was obliged by orders from the Government to withdraw over 50,000 men, including McDowell's first corps and General Louis Blenker's division[5] of the second corps, for the defences of Washington, of Fortress Monroe and of other places.

About this period, General Robert E. Lee held command in directing the Confederate army in and around Richmond. He had there succeeded General Beauregard, and to his care was now entrusted its defences. Strong works had been erected on all the mounds and

[1] See M. Vigo Roussillon's "Puissance Militaire des Etats Unis."

[2] General Edward V. Sumner was born in Boston, Mass., January 30th, 1797, and he had early served with distinction in the Black Hawk and other Indian Wars, as also in the War with Mexico. He was appointed Governor of New Mexico, from 1851 to 1853. See the "Encyclopaedia Americana," Vol. iv., pp. 623, 624.

[3] See Appleton's "Cyclopaedia of American Biography," Vol. iii., pp. 159, 160.

[4] See "Encyclopaedia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 545.

[5] See Appleton's "Cyclopaedia of American Biography," Vol. i., p. 292.

hillocks about that city; while redoubts, casement batteries, breast works, entrenchments and rifle pits had been constructed. Moreover, heavy siege-pieces and field-guns had been placed, so as to cover and sweep all the roads and approaches. To the number of about 95,000 men, McClellan's army was then drawing near, while works had been erected at different points to retard his advance. At Yorktown, the rebel army covered a front of about seven miles, and it was defended by field works of all kinds.

On the 10th of May, General John Ellis Wool[6] took possession of the city of Norfolk, the Confederate troops having been withdrawn by Major-General Benjamin Huger,[7] there in command. This occupation gave the Federals command of Chesapeake Bay and the mouth of James River. Fortress Monroe protected the fleet and transports, while it was made the basis for further military operations. On the opposite side of Elizabeth River, the navy yard, dry docks, naval machinery and ships in the harbour of Norfolk were destroyed by the Confederates. Among these vessels was the famous Virginia or Merrimac, which was blown up to prevent her capture by the Federals.[8] Supposing the Confederate forces assembled near Yorktown, and in a strongly entrenched position, to have been more numerous than they were in reality, General McClellan commenced regular siege operations, which detained the army at that point in the Peninsula for a considerable time.[9] To General FitzJohn Porter[10] was assigned the direction of this siege.

[6] He was born at Newburg N.Y., February 20th 1784, and he was the son of a Revolutionary soldier. He served in the war of 1812-1814, as also in Mexico, where he was distinguished for his gallantry. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. vi., p. 609.

[7] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 358.

[8] See "Appleton's "History of the Rebellion" for the events of this campaign; as also Surgeon George T. Stevens' "Three Years in the Sixth Corps: A Narrative of Events in the Army of the Potomac from 1861 to the close of the Rebellion," Albany N.Y., 1867, 8vo. A second edition of the latter work was published in New York, 1870, 8vo.

[9] The campaign in Virginia has been treated by General M'Clellan himself in a "Report of the Organization and Campaigns of the Army of the Potomac," and this was filed in the War Department Office in 1863, being regarded as an extra-official paper, and being in reality an attempted justification of his career and generalship, when he had been relieved from connand, while it unfavqurably criticises the Administration. In 1864, it was published in New York, in 8vo. and 12mo. This book did not serve to establish him in pub.ic esteem, and much less, when he substantially revised it with additions, under the title of "McClellan's Own Story, the War for the Union, the Soldiers who fought it., the Civilians who directed it, and his relations to it and them." New York, 1887. In this work, he attributes to Mr. Lincoln's Administration and to the leaders of the Union party, a purpose to sacrifice the Army of the Potomac, in order to diminish the personal and political importance of the General commanding it.

[10] He was born at Portsmouth N. Hampshire, June 13th 1822, and afterwards he commanded the fifth corps of the Army of the Potomac. See "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iv., p. 228.

When the Federal troops were about to make the assault Magruder withdrew, and Yorktown was occupied by them on the 4th of May. General George Stoneman's cavalry,[11] with the divisions of Kearney,[12] of Couch [13] and of Casey [14] followed during their retreat, and had several skirmishes with them before reaching their entrenched works at Williamsburg. Several guns were also captured, and this brought on another engagement. The Federals had now reached Williamsburg. There Johnston had drawn up his army, and the Confederates fought a battle on the 5th of May.[15] In this engagement, M'Clellan lost over 2,000 men ; but after a determined resistance, the enemy retreated during the night with a loss of 1,300, as also of several guns and colours.[16] Norfolk Harbour being now in possession of the Federals, the next operation was to force the gun-boats up the James River. But here they met with a serious impediment. On the 9th of May, another battle was gained by M'Clellan at West Point, which enabled him to advance within seven miles of Richmond. About eight miles below that city, and on the north bank of the river, the Confederates had constructed a battery called Fort Darling. The ships proceeded notwithstanding, and prepared to force their way through piles, sunken boats and chains, obstructing the channel. Having reached Fort Darling, the Confederate batteries opened fire upon the Federal vessels. After an action which lasted four hours, and which caused considerable damage, all of the gunboats were compelled to retire.[17] Thus, the most important part of General McClellan's plan proved to be a failure. Richmond must now be captured—if at all[18]—by the army, and without the aid of gunboats. The Confederates had then retreated behind their defences, in front of Richmond. In a military point of view, it was well covered with positions and batteries ; but then, it was poorly protected by earth-

[11] See *ibid.*, Vol. v., p. 706.

[12] He was born in New York City, June 2nd 1815. For biographical particulars of this brave soldier, the reader is referred to J. Watts de Ryster's "Personal and Military History of Philip Kearney." New York, 1869, 8vo.

[13] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. i., p. 753.

[14] General Silas Casey was of Irish descent, and had previously distinguished himself under General Worth in the Seminole War of 1837-42. He also took part under General Scott in all the chief battles of the Mexican War of 1847. He died in New York, January 22nd 1882. See *ibid.*, pp. 550, 551.

[15] In this battle the Confederate Brigadier-General Inbal A. Early, of Irish descent, was left on the field, and as then supposed, he was mortally wounded. He recovered, however, and became distinguished in many subsequent engagements. He died in Lynchburg Va., 2nd March 1894.

[16] See Captain D. P. Conyngham's "Irish Brigade and its Campaigns," chap. vi., p. 66.

[17] See M. le Comte de Paris' "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amerique," Tome iii., Liv. i., chap. i., pp. 2 to 58.

[18] A graphic account of succeeding transactions, may be found in a work Colonel C. Chesney has written, "A Military View of the Recent Campaigns in Virginia and Maryland," London, 1863, 8vo. A second edition, revised and enlarged, was published there, in two volumes, 1864, 1865. The author was born near Kilkeel Ireland, in 1826. He died in 1879.

works.[19] Meanwhile, great consternation broke out in the Southern capital, and several of the inhabitants hastily took their departure for places less exposed to immediate danger. The Confederate Congress there assembled was also adjourned.

The Chickahominy River rises in the State of Virginia, about twenty-five miles N.W. from Richmond. After a course of about sixty miles, it unites with the James River, thirty-seven miles above Point Comfort. It protected the principal approaches to Richmond from the east. About nine miles above its junction, that river was navigable for the largest vessels, while its banks were fringed with a dense growth of forest trees, and it was bordered by low-lying and deep marshes. All the bridges which led over it to Richmond had been destroyed. Over this difficult ground, M'Clellan had designed to approach that city; and accordingly with much effort the old bridges were reconstructed and new ones built; while plank and corduroy roads were laid down, to support the ammunition and to supply trains advancing. That line was very defensible, however, and it was stoutly contested. General Casey's division crossed over on the 20th at Bottom Bridge. After a heavy fire on the 24th of May, the village of Mechanicsville was carried by the right and centre of the Federal forces.[20] Meanwhile, General McDowell was operating against the enemy's line along the Rappahannock River, in order to create a diversion.

The Confederate General Jackson, who had been at Fredericksburg, now fell back towards Richmond. A force of the enemy was met at Hanover Court House, by General Fitz-John Porter. On the 27th of May, a battle was fought, in which the Confederates were repulsed with a loss of 930 men, while the Federals lost 397. He then destroyed their camp.[21] When General Johnston was ordered from the Rappahannock to oppose McClellan, he asked to be reinforced with troops from the sea-coast; but this request Jefferson Davis and his Cabinet would not allow. Such refusal led to a hostility between Johnston and the Confederate President, which was often exhibited during the after prosecution of that war.

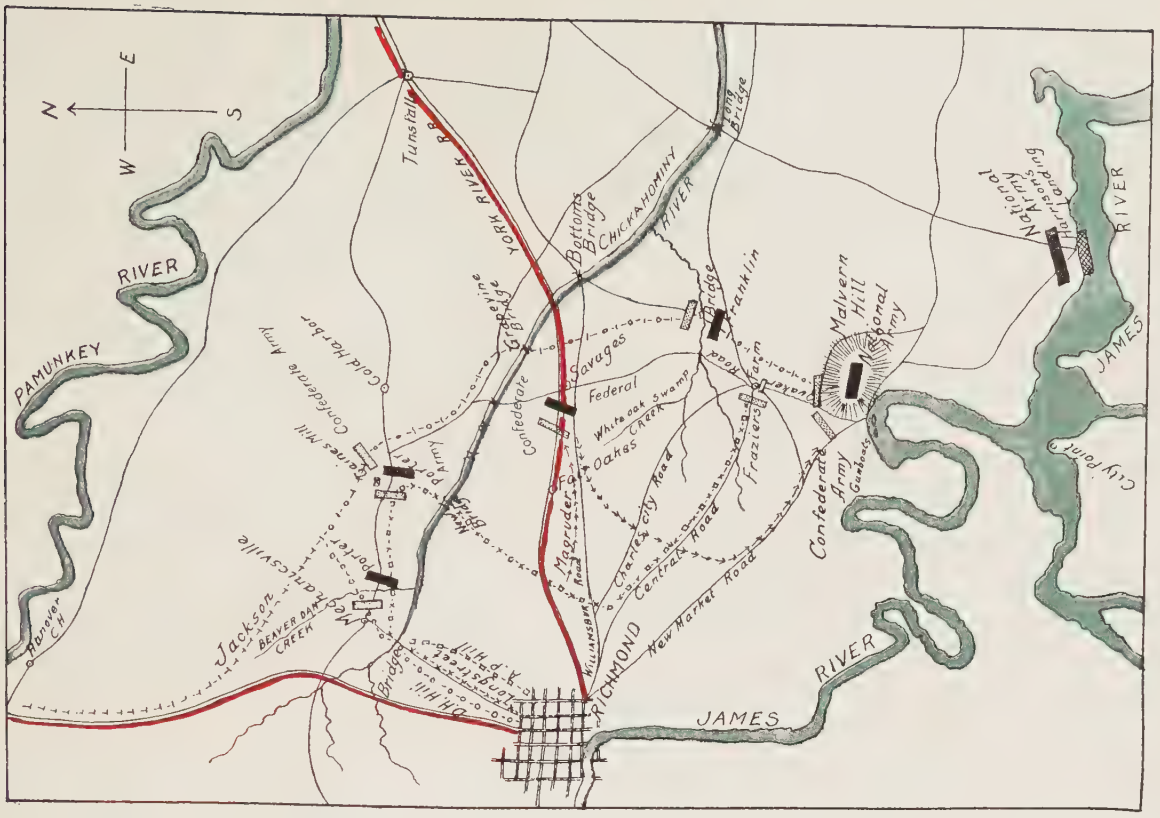
The Southerners were then engaged concentrating all their available forces in the east for the defence of Richmond. They found General McClellan's army placed in a most disadvantageous position.[22] At this time, General Johnston was chief in command of the Confederates. On the 30th of May, the Federal Generals in advance, on the south banks of the Chickahominy was Casey, with his division

[19] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 650.

[20] Several graphic descriptions of this war, and from the Southerner's point of view, are to be found in a work published anonymously, and intitutled, "The Wearing of the Grey," This latter was the colour of the Confederates' military uniform. See, likewise, Colonel B. Estran's "War Pictures from the South," New York, 1863, 8vo. In two volumes, London, 1863, 8vo.

[21] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 650.

[22] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. v., chap. xxi., pp. 388, 389.



Scenes of Seven Days' Battles around Richmond.



Battle-Scene of Fredericksburg.

on the right of the Williamsburg road, and having his centre at Fair Oaks Station; Kearney's division was on the railroad from Savage Station to the bridge; while General Joseph Hooker's division[23] reached to the edge of White Oak swamp.[24] On that night, a very heavy rain storm set in swelling the river and the swamps, while it destroyed some of the bridges. This was an opportunity eagerly availed of, and accordingly Johnston massed his forces on the right for a sudden attack, thus hoping to crush the Federal left, before M'Clellan could have time to reinforce it. About six o'clock on the morning of the 31st, the divisions of Generals D. H. Hill,[25] of Huger,[26] of Longstreet,[27] and of W. J. Smith,[28] were formed into line of battle. They commenced moving down upon Casey's division. The Confederates attacked it furiously in front and upon both flanks. General Nagle's brigade[29] received the first shock, and it gallantly resisted the overwhelming numbers that pressed it on both sides. Meantime, Casey's artillery played on the enemy's lines with destructive effect, as owing to the nature of the ground the rebels could not bring up their cannon. Eight new regiments were in this division, and some of these, fearing to be cut off, gave way in confusion. The enemy now occupied Casey's first line of works. General Keyes had by this ordered General Couch[30] to move General Pick's brigade, so as to support Casey's left. Some of the Federal guns were already taken. Next, an attack was directed on Regan's battery, the fire of which then redoubled. Four infantry regiments hurried up to save it, and there a desperate conflict raged for some time. Then Casey ordered a bayonet charge, and this drove back the rebel torrent. However, he was obliged to yield ground, thus long maintained with resolute tenacity. Next, Bates' and Fitche's batteries opened on the enemy, while a regular fusilade was kept up along the infantry lines. The rebel batteries now came into play, and their

[23] General Joseph Hooker was born in Hadley Mass., November 13th 1814. Embracing the military profession, he served bravely in the Florida and Mexican Wars. Afterwards, he retired from the army, but when the Confederate War broke out in 1861, he once more tendered his services to the Government, and he was appointed Brigadier-General of Volunteers. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iii., pp. 249 to 251.

[24] These various positions are very distinctly shown on the sketch map of McClellan's operations before Richmond, in Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. ii., chap. ii., p. 20.

[25] His ancestors came from Ireland and settled in York, Pa. D. H. Hill was born at Hill's Iron Works, S.C., July 12th 1821. He served bravely in the Mexican War and afterwards in the Confederate army. He died 1889.

[26] Benjamin Huger was born in Charleston S.C., in 1806, and he died there, December 7th 1877.

[27] General James Longstreet had already served in the regular United States Army, and with distinguished bravery in Mexico; but he resigned June 1st 1861, when he was commissioned a brigadier-general by the Confederate Government. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iv., p. 16.

[28] See *ibid.*, Vol. v., p. 594.

[29] See *ibid.*, Vol. iv., p. 476.

[30] See *ibid.*, Vol. i., p. 753.

infantry dashed forward, storming the defended redoubts and rifle-pits. Moreover, they captured Bates' and Sprat's guns. Casey's artillery was also in the enemy's hands, and now turned upon the troops he commanded. His division was soon overwhelmed and routed. Then Couch, who arrived to support him, was attacked by Hill on the right, and by Anderson on the left; he bravely resisted, however, and charged the enemy repulsing them, but they rallied once more, and drove in his advanced lines. Another column was charging the Tenth Massachusetts Regiment, on the Federal extreme left. In vain did McCarthy's and Miller's batteries strive to stem the onset. The regiment at length broke, and the left flank was doubled in on the centre. At the same time General Couch was driven back half a mile towards Grapevine Bridge. There he re-formed, however, and faced Fair Oaks Station.[31]

Meantime, General Keyes had sent to General Heintzelman for reinforcements; but it was near five o'clock in the evening, when Generals Kearney and Hooker appeared on the field. General Sumner also despatched Richardson's[32] and Sedgwick's[33] divisions in support. This battle, contested with the greatest obstinacy on both sides, had lasted the entire day. Already the Confederates obtained a decided advantage, having captured General Casey's camp and taken many prisoners. But now, General Kearney's division, with General Berry's[34] and Jameson's[35] brigades, had come up at Seven Pines, and there they fell upon the enemy's flank. General Berry's brigade, consisting of the Thirty-seventh New York Irish Rifles and three Michigan Regiments, drove the Confederates back over the ground they had occupied, thus enabling Casey's troops to join the main body. General Sumner's forces also arrived in time to support Couch, and forming five regiments into line, these were ordered to charge with the bayonet. They did so in a gallant manner, and the rebels yielded ground, This desperate engagement, known as the battle of the Seven Pines or Fair Oaks, cost the victors 5,739 men. The Confederate loss amounted to 4,283 in the divisions of Longstreet and Smith, while Hill's division

[31] See M. le Comte de Paris' "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique." Tome iii., Liv. i., chap. ii., pp. 63 to 128.

[32] Israel Bush Richardson was born in Fairfax Vt., December 26th 1815. He entered the United States Army, and served in Florida and Mexico. His bravery in action caused him to be called "Fighting Dick" by his troops. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. v., p. 242.

[33] General John Sedwidge was born in Cornwall, Conn., September 13th 1813. He embraced a military career, and had already served with distinction in the Seminole and Mexican Wars. See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iv., pp. 462, 463.

[34] Hiram George Berry was born in Rockland, Me., August 27th 1824, and throughout this campaign as brigadier- general of Volunteers, his courage and conduct were admired by his soldiers. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. i., p. 250.

[35] Charles Davis Jameson was born in Gorham, Me., February 24th 1827, and for his bravery at the battle of Bull Run he was appointed brigadier-general of Volunteers. See *ibid.*, Vol. iii., p. 400.

lost 2,500.[36] In this battle, General Johnston was severely wounded, and incapacitated for duty until the following autumn. Then, General Robert E. Lee was appointed to succeed him as commander-in-chief, a position he afterwards held until the close of that war.[37]

On the morning of June 1st, fresh corps of Federals were pushed forward. As part of General Sumner's corps, the Irish Brigade had been ordered to the front. Having encamped at a distance, when he heard the booming of cannon, Brigadier-General Thomas Francis Meagher[38] ordered his men to be in readiness and under arms. Rapidly as the nature of that ground permitted, they marched through a dismal and dreary swamp, the artillery and cavalry especially sinking deep in mud-holes at almost every step. About midnight, the Brigade bivouacked in the forest, prepared a hasty meal, and thoroughly fatigued they crossed the Chickahominy at Grapevine Bridge. Before morning's dawn, they reached a part on the battle-field of the previous day, near Fair Oaks. Two of the Brigade regiments were ordered to the front, the Sixty-ninth and Eighty-eighth, while the Sixty-third was detailed to extricate their artillery from the swamps and to guard the bridge.[39]

During that night, the rifle-pits near Seven Pines were occupied by Couch's and Kearney's divisions and the remnant of Casey's troops, General Hooker's division was placed to the right and rear of these; Richardson was connected with Kearney's lines; French's brigade[40] was posted along the railroad; Howard's[41] and Meagher's being in the second and third lines. Owing to the state of the roads, it was found impossible until near morning to get up the artillery, and to place it in the batteries. Meantime, the enemy had resolved on renewing the fight. So early as five o'clock on the morning of June 1st, in solid columns their forces approached French's brigade in the first line. It comprised the Fifty-third Pennsylvania, Sixty-first, Sixty-fourth and Sixty-ninth New York Volunteers. For an hour they stood firm, and Howard came to their assistance. During the advance he was severely

[36] See Captain D. P. Conyngham's "Irish Brigade and its Campaigns," chap. vii., p. 80.

[37] A very interesting account of these military operations may be found in Stevenson's "Thirteen Months in the Rebel Army." The author had been pressed into the service, and his narrative is valuable, owing to the curious incidents it relates. Also Dr. Thomas Ellis' "Leaves from the Diary of an Army Surgeon."

[38] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iv., p. 283.

[39] See Captain D. P. Conyngham's "Irish Brigade and its Campaigns," chap. vii., p. 74.

[40] Major-General William Henry French was born in Baltimore Md., of Irish extraction, in 1815, and he served in the U. S. regular army through the Seminole and Mexican Wars. During the peninsular campaign he served with distinction in the army of the Potomac, and he commanded a division in the battles of Antietam and Fredericksburg. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. ii., p. 549.

[41] Oliver Otis Howard was born in Leeds Me., November 8th 1830. He commanded a brigade at the first battle of Bull Run, and for his gallantry he was afterwards commissioned brigadier-general of Volunteers. See *ibid.*, Vol. iii., p. 278.

wounded in the arm, and it had to be amputated. Meantime, Colonel Nugent's regiment the Sixty-ninth, and the Eighty-eighth, moved forward. These swept the enemy's line with a withering fire, which checked his advance. While thus engaged, General Hooker ordered a bayonet charge, and his regiments beat back the enemy in confusion. Generals Heintzelman and Couch held their position on the left; while Sickles[42] with his Excelsior Brigade pressed forward to the woods, where the Confederates were rather protected. These were then put to flight at the point of the bayonet. Still the enemy resolved on making one more desperate effort. Three columns were again massed in front of Richardson, but these were unable to dislodge him. French also held his position, supported by Howard's troops. Meagher brought up the Irish Brigade, and rode from line to line encouraging his men. He was constantly exposed to great danger. At length, with a sweeping fire and then with fixed bayonets, the Brigade charged home on the broken lines of the Confederates. These retired before them in disorder, and the Federals regained the ground they had lost on the previous day.[43]

As it was found impracticable to follow the Confederates, General McClellan ordered his troops to hold their present position, as also to form entrenchments, redoubts and forts around their camps. While there, General Meagher's Brigade was reinforced by the Twenty-ninth Massachusetts Regiment under Colonel Ebenezer Pierce. An occasional skirmish happened, when the troops on both sides were out on a reconnaissance, or while engaged on picket duty, but no action of importance took place for some days. However, the rebel General James E. B. Stuart,[44] with about 1,500 cavalry and some pieces of artillery, made a successful raid round the rear of the Federal lines. During that foray, he destroyed a large amount of their stores, and threatened their communications.[45]

During the month of June, General McClellan had constantly importuned the Washington Government for reinforcements, before he could advance against Richmond.[46] The division of McCall had been detached from McDowell's army, and it embarked on the 11th and 12th of June. On the 20th, McClellan had present 115,102 effective soldiers, besides those invalided or absent.[47] The Confederates in front naturally followed the example of their opponents, and employed the

[42] Daniel Edward Sickles was born in New York City, October 20th 1823. In the beginning of the Civil War, he raised the Excelsior Brigade in New York City, and on the 3rd of September 1861, he was commissioned brigadier-general of Volunteers. See *ibid.*, Vol. v., p. 523.

[43] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. ii., chap. ii., pp. 26, 27.

[44] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iv., pp. 615, 616.

[45] See M. le Comte de Paris' "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome iii., Liv. i., chap. iii., pp. 141 to 143.

[46] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol v., chap. xxiii., p. 413.

[47] See M. le Comte de Paris' "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome iii., Liv. i., chap. iii., pp. 134 to 138.

respite in throwing up field-works; while their able General Lee was engaged in drawing reinforcements from distant places, and in forming those plans for defence or attack, which subsequently proved so successful. All this time, and almost in sight of Richmond, the Union army was doomed to spend inactively fully three weeks in a swampy and malarious region, while fever and ague began fearfully to prevail among the troops.[48] Meantime Lee and his Generals had prepared for agressive movements.

On the night of the 25th of June commenced the seven continuous engagements around Richmond.[49] On that and the succeeding day, General Lee attacked the Federals at Mechanicsville with great vigour, but the lines were firmly maintained there by Generals Reynolds[50] and Seymour.[51] He was finally repulsed; and he retired about nine o'clock in the evening. Large reinforcements had arrived, by this time, to strengthen the Confederates. General Jackson brought them from the army opposed to McDowell, and without the knowledge of that General. Having learned that these troops were now endeavouring to surround him, and to cut off his communications by their vastly superior numbers, General McClellan found it necessary to draw off his army from their unfavourable position, and to make dispositions for a retreat.[52] Having ordered his subsistence and stores with the heavy guns, to be removed from the left bank of the Chickahominy, McClellan hurried all the disposable troops he could possibly spare, to support Fitz-John Porter's Fifth Corps that then held it against the threatened approach of General Jackson.[53] Preparations were made on all sides to cover the retreat. The position of the Fifth Corps was nearly like the arc of a circle, to protect the communications across the Chickahominy.

Soon after noon on the 26th, the Confederates approached with skirmishers in advance. They vigorously charged on the works and lines opposed to them. There, however, they were met by sweeping volleys of canister and musketry. Generals Pryor,[54] Wilcox,[55] and Featherston[56] attacked the left of the Federal line, Hill the centre, while Jackson moved on in massed column against the right. About three o'clock, the enemy had pressed so severely along the front, that Porter

[48] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 650. Also, Surgeon-General Letterman's "Medical Recollections of the Army of the Potomac." New York, 1866, 8vo.

[49] The Confederate account of these engagements may be found in the "Seven Days' Battles in Front of Richmond," published in that city.

[50] John Fulton Reynolds was born in Lancaster Pa., September 20th 1820, and, in the United States Army, he had already been distinguished during the Mexican War. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. v., p. 228.

[51] Truman Seymour was born in Burlington Vt., September 25th 1824. See *ibid.*, p. 479.

[52] Se M. le Comte de Paris' "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amerique," Tome iii., Liv. i., chap. iii., pp. 158 to 167.

[53] See the Confederate work, "Life of Stonewall Jackson," by John E. Cooke.

[54] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. v., p. 131.

[55] See *ibid.*, Vol. vi. p. 504.

[56] See *ibid.* Vol. ii. p. 424.

sent word it was threatened with destruction. Then reserves were marched to sustain it, but the rebels had gained the woods held by him, and with their numbers outflanking broke his ranks, obliging him with great loss, to gain a hill in the rear. At this critical moment, French's and Meagher's brigades were ordered up, and with fixed bayonets driving back the fugitives who were rushing towards the bridge, they formed in position to protect the artillery. Afterwards they charged the victorious rebels, who soon gave way. This movement enabled the troops to rally behind them.[57] However, on this day the rebels had a decided advantage, as they captured several pieces of artillery, stores and camp-equipage. Darkness had now set in, and having orders to cover the retreat, the Irish Brigade lay on their arms all that night under shelter of some trees. Meanwhile, the artillery, baggage, infantry and cavalry were retreating over the Chickahominy. When all had crossed, the Irish Brigade got orders towards day-light that they should move, and the bridge was then destroyed.[58]

On the following day, the rebel cavalry charged on the rear-guard. However, the Eighty-eighth Regiment was drawn up to receive them and they retired. The guns were brought to bear, also, in obstructing the enemy from repairing the bridges, while a retreat was directed towards the James River, where the gun-boats had been anchored. Towards noon, the Confederate troops were brought together for a general attack, and during the whole afternoon the combat raged along a stripe of wood near Gaines' Mill Creek. Magruder directed an assault on one of the Federal batteries, but this was repulsed with considerable loss. However, about six o'clock p.m., a general advance was made along the whole Confederate line; and then, notwithstanding their great losses sustained from the Federal artillery, the right wing began to give way. The disorder soon spread to other parts of the Federal line. Sumner's corps was now left covering the rear,[59] and his two brigades commanded by General French and Meagher moved through the mass of fugitives with difficulty, when taking up position on a hill. Then the pursuit was effectually checked, until the Federal army, ambulances and caissons had crossed the river. More than twenty pieces of artillery were left behind, and nearly all those who had fallen in the battle.[60]

The Federals held the south bank of the Chickahominy, against all

[57] See Lieutenant Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. ii., chap. iv., pp. 78 to 82.

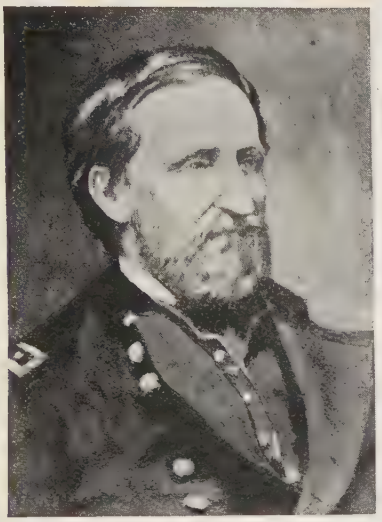
[58] See Captain D. P. Conyngham's "Irish Brigade and its Campaigns," chap. ix., p. 92.

[59] See the "Encylopædia Americana," Vol. iv., p. 623.

[60] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. ii., chap. iv., pp. 85 to 91.

[61] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. i., p. 390.

[62] Winfield Scott Hancock, of Scottish descent, was born in Montgomery Co., Pa. February 14th 1824. He entered the United States Army, and served in Mexico. He was comsioned a brigadier-general of Volunteers, September 23rd 1861. See "The Life of General W. T. Hancock," by Jenkin and Norton, New York, 1880, 8vo.



WILLIAM STARKE ROSECRANS,
Major-General of U.S. Army.



WINFIELD SCOTT HANCOCK,
Major-General of U.S Army.



DAVID DIXON PORTER,
Admiral of the U.S. Navy.



THOMAS FRANCIS MEAGHER,
Brigadier-General of U.S. Army.

the efforts of Jackson to cross over; so that he was obliged to build bridges further up, and this detained him until Sunday June 29th. Then he commenced advancing on their right flank. Falling back to Savage Station, Generals Sumner and Heintzelman, with Smith's division, there took up a position, and formed into line of battle. Brooks' brigade[61] held a wood to the left, while Hancock's brigade[62] was thrown forward into woods on the right. About five o'clock, the enemy commenced an attack, which was gallantly met by Burns' brigade, supported by two reserve lines, as also by the Eighty-eighth and Sixty-ninth regiments of the Irish Brigade. For two hours a desperate conflict continued, the Federal batteries showering canister and shell into the enemy's lines. At length, the rebels firing as they advanced across the fields and in great force were met by about four thousand of Sumner's troops, who were ordered to charge. This onset drove the enemy back to their batteries. Meagher's brigade even charged up to the guns of a Virginia battery. Two of these they hauled off, while they spiked others, and broke the carriages into pieces.[63] In this gallant act, the Eighty-eighth, Sixty-third and Sixty-ninth participated.[64] Night came on, and thus put an end to the carnage. The Confederates suffered severely in this engagement, and in it their General Griffiths was killed.[65]

The next order given the Federal troops was to move near midnight beyond White Oak Swamp, as the enemy was making desperate efforts to gain the high grounds beyond it, thus to cut off their retreat from the James River. All the supplies that could not be removed from Savage Station were burned; while the dead and wounded were left on the field. The railroad bridge had been also burned while the superfluous ammunition and baggage were run into the Chickahominy. All night, the Federal troops marched in line of battle to White Oak Creek, which flows through swampy woods and morasses. It was only from four to six feet in depth, and it was crossed by a bridge. Meanwhile, the enemy was endeavouring to turn the Federal flanks, and to capture the large train of artillery, baggage and supplies. However, all was safely brought over to the north side of the Creek. There a sloping hill, crowned with a farm house, afforded a good position for a battle which now seemed imminent.

In making dispositions for that engagement, General Hancock held the right of the line, resting on a small creek; Brooks[66] and Davidson[67]

[63] See Captain D. P. Conyngham's "Irish Brigade and its Campaigns," chap. ix., pp. 96 to 98.

[64] Here the brave Colonel Pierce of the Twenty-ninth Massachusetts Regiment, and also the General Pierce of Big Bethel fame, had an arm taken off by a solid shot.

[65] The "Seven Days' Battles around Richmond" is a work which presents an interesting account of these various engagements.

[66] William Thomas Harlaugh Brooks was born in New Lisbon Ohio, January 28th 1821, and had been already distinguished in the Mexican War. In September 1861, he was appointed Brigadier-General of Volunteers.

[67] John Wynn Davidson was born in Fairfax County Va., August 18th

lay next to him; Sumner, Heintzelman and Porter ranged their batteries on a very commanding hill, and then extended their lines to the borders of the marshes. The enemy suddenly opened fire on Hancock's position, and it caused much confusion at first; but, the batteries were soon brought to bear on them, and the Federal infantry gallantly resisted every attempt made to cross the Creek. Firing continued without cessation along the whole line. At this juncture eight fresh brigades, commanded by General Henry A. Wise, were marching direct from Richmond, with a view to cut off the Federals from reaching the James River. Soon, Generals Keyes and Porter moved forward to meet them. The Confederates opened a steady and well-directed fire on their troops. However, the gunboats Galena, Aroostook and Jacob Bell had taken their station at Turkey Bend on the river; when from their immense rifled guns shot and shell were hurled on the dense columns of the enemy, who now began to waver. Then signalling the gunboats to cease firing, Heintzelman ordered a charge along the whole line. The brigades of General Meagher, of Hooker and of Sickles, dashed onwards, and these soon broke the enemy's ranks. The Confederates retired in confusion through the swamps. Nevertheless, in the beginning of the engagement, some guns were captured by them, while the Federals lost many in killed and wounded.

At one o'clock in the morning, the Union forces took up the line of march for Malvern Hill, an elevated plateau near the James River. It formed an admirable position for defence, having several ravines in front, with slopes which presented open ranges for artillery, and a sheltered dell, extending along the north-west side down to the James River. The various divisions of the Federals formed a semi-circle in front; one flank resting on the river, and the other protected from it by the gunboats. Towards the left flank, where Porter's corps held the line, the troops were chiefly massed and several batteries were placed. Commodore Rogers commanding the flotilla placed his gunboats so as to protect the flanks, and especially to cover the approaches from Richmond—the heaviest onset being expected from that direction.[68]

About ten o'clock on Tuesday July 1st, the battle began by a demonstration against Heintzelman's corps on the right; but about three o'clock p.m., the Confederate troops moved round to the front, and opened a heavy fire on Kearney's left.[69] This was followed by a brisk

1824, and entering the United States Army, he served in the West during the Mexican War. In the Virginia peninsular campaign of 1862, he commanded a brigade in General Smith's division. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. i., p. 390, and Vol. ii., p. 87.

[68] These various movements are well set forth, in William Swinton's "Campaigns of the Army of the Potomac; a critical History of Operations in Virginia, Maryland, and Pennsylvania from the Commencement to the Close of the War, 1861-65," with Maps and Portraits, 1866, 8vo.

[69] Colonel James McQuade of the 14th New York Regiment served bravely at Malvern Hill, and afterwards at the battle of Chancellorsville. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iv., p. 159.

attack on Couch's position. The attack was instantly repelled, and the enemy's advance was speedily driven back on his supports. Then followed artillery firing for some time between the opposing forces. Again, about six o'clock in the evening, the Confederate batteries opened fire on Porter's and Couch's divisions, and this was followed by an advance of their infantry columns. The sweeping fire of the Federal guns, and the steady discharges of the infantry, again drove the rebels back, and then the columns charged after them at the point of the bayonet. About seven o'clock they were massing fresh troops in front of Porter's line. Soon Meagher's and Sickles' brigades advanced to support it. The enemy repeatedly charged with great resolution; but each time they were met with a ringing cheer, and by a charge of the Irish Brigade.[70] Night was now approaching, and baffled at every point the enemy fell back to his lines.[71] During this series of battles, the Irish Brigade under General Thomas Francis Meagher was usually covering the retreat, and engaged in battle-line each day, while acquitting itself with distinguished bravery. As an unavoidable consequence, it suffered most severely.[72] The results of these engagements, varying from day to day, were on the whole to the advantage of the Federals, who lost in killed, wounded and missing, 15,249.[73] The Confederate loss is estimated to have been hardly less than 20,000.

After the battle of Malvern Hill was over, M'Clellan withdrew his troops across the James River. He then fell back to Harrison's Landing, where he took up a fortified position. The gun-boats were able to protect it from the river side. Soon after the French princes, the Count de Paris and his younger brother the Duke de Chartres, took leave of General McClellan and his staff, owing to the serious illness of the latter prince, and soon they departed for Europe.[74] They were much beloved and respected during the period of their service, by

[70] See the work of William Swinton "The twelve decisive battles of the War: a History of the Eastern and Western Campaigns, in Relation to the Actions that decided their Issue," 1867, 8vo. Afterwards he wrote "A Condensed History of the United States." New York, 1871, 16mo.

[71] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865." Vol. ii., chap. iv., pp. 71 to 105.

[72] See Captain W. F. Lyons' "Life of Brigadier-General Thomas Francis Meagher," chap. vi., pp. 68 to 84.

[73] From the 26th of June to the 4th of July, when the chiefs of corps made their returns. Besides these, McClellan had about 6,000 invalids in hospital. See Le Comte de Paris' "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome iii., Liv. i., chap. iv., pp. 260 to 262. Also, for more detailed statements, see the official returns, in the appended notes B, to p. 262, pp. 648 to 659.

[74] They resolved on this course, when all appearances were in favour of the Federals, with whom they served as volunteers. While it was arranged, that the invalid brother should leave for Washington and was preparing to do so, General Jackson's reinforcements had arrived and attacked the right wing. Notwithstanding his severe illness, the Duc de Chartres then refused to leave the army; when he and his brother acted as A.D.C. to General Porter at Gaines' Hill, and afterwards during the trying time of his retreat, they rendered most efficient services as A.D.C. to the General Commander-in-Chief.

the leaders and officers of the army of Virginia, owing to their affability, endurance and gallantry.[75] After several days of reconnaissance, Generals Lee and Jackson agreed that it should not be advisable to attack the Federal troops in their new position, and on the 8th of July their army was withdrawn to Richmond.[76] Thus came that Peninsular campaign to an end.

CHAPTER XXIX.

Exhaustion of both Armies after the Seven Days' Battles—McClellan urges another Advance against Richmond—He is superseded as Commander-in-Chief by General Henry W. Halleck—General John Pope appointed to command the Army of Virginia—McClellan's Troops recalled from the Peninsula—Advance of the Confederates against Washington—Pope's Campaign—He resigns and McClellan succeeds in Command—Campaign in Kentucky and Tennessee—Operations in Arkansas and Missouri—Beauregard's Defences around Charleston.

DURING the late struggles both sides were exhausted, nor was any important military achievement attempted in Virginia for a considerable interval. On the 20th of June, McClellan had over 100,000 effective troops before Richmond, besides over 11,000 sick or incapacitated for service. Altogether, he had still about 84,000 men under arms at Harrison's Landing. During that same period, both armies being nearly equal in numbers, Lee had found his troops diminished, through the casualties of war and sickness, by about 25,000 men.[1] Nevertheless, Jefferson Davis issued an address of congratulation to his troops, on the series of brilliant victories which they had won.[2] Meantime, the mind of General McClellan had been greatly depressed by the failure of that campaign, which he had planned and directed. Moreover, he had greatly exaggerated the strength of the Confederate forces opposed to him. He then resolved to throw all blame on the President and his government, because they had not forwarded more troops; and as we now know, that General had sent very offensive and almost mutinous despatches.[3] These were of an alarming character, with regard to his exposed situation. Greatly moved by such reports, the President set out for Harrison's Landing, where he arrived on the 8th of July.

[75] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. ii., chap. iv., p. 105, n.

[76] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. v., chap. xxiii., p. 440.

[1] See Le Comte de Paris' "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome iii., Liv. i., chap. iv., pp. 260 to 262.

[2] Dated, Richmond, July 5th 1862. For the text, see Jefferson Davis' "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., part iv., chap. xxxiv., pp. 311, 312.

[3] On the 28th of June 1862, General McClellan forwarded the following unwarranted and spiteful telegram to Mr Stanton, Secretary of War:—"If I save this army now, I tell you plainly, that I owe no thanks to you or to any persons in Washington. You have done your best to sacrifice this army."

The idea of McClellan was, that he should not leave the Peninsula, but remain there until he could receive an enormous reinforcement, so that he might have another chance to take Richmond.[4] Having little confidence at that time in McClellan's capacity or judgment as a commander-in-chief, and having conferred with others at the seat of war, the President then resolved on his removal.

Accordingly, on the 11th of July the order was issued, that Major-General Henry W. Halleck be assigned to command the whole land forces of the United States, and that he repair to the capital, so soon as he could with safety to the positions and operations, within that department under his charge.[5] He had been praised for administrative ability, and at that time, he had attained a great reputation for the success achieved under his direction of affairs in the West. It was then thought, a better choice for General-in-Chief could not have been made.[6] Leaving General Ulysses S. Grant to command in Tennesse, and having been obliged to assume a more responsible position, General Halleck then set out for Washington.[7]

From the very commencement of the war in 1861, propositions had been made to the Confederate Government from an enterprising Charleston and Liverpool firm,[8] to purchase those large and powerful steamers then built in England for the East India Company, to arm and equip them, to use them as blockade runners, and to take their value out in large cargoes of cotton, afterwards to employ them as cruisers to prey on Northern commerce. Under the impression that the coming war should be a short one, those offers were at first declined.[9] Yet, as the Southern officers of the United States Navy abroad justly recognised their duty to deliver those vessels they commanded to the Federal Government; the Confederate President and his cabinet sent a competent and well-deserving navy officer to obtain in England or elsewhere, by purchase or by building, vessels which could be transformed into ships of war. He had a commission from the Confederate Government, to use his best exertions in securing the accomplishment of their object.[10] Moreover, a military officer was sent to Europe to purchase and make contracts for the supply of arms.[11] In December of that year, arms began to come in,[12] and a good many

[4] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. v., chap. xxiv., pp. 441 to 455.

[5] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. ii., chap. vi., p. 119.

[6] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. v., chap. xix., p. 355.

[7] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War." Vol ii., sect. x., chap. li., p. 311.

[8] That of John Frazer and Co.

[9] See Alfred Roman's "Military Operations of General Beauregard," Vol. i., chap. v., pp. 55, 56.

[10] See James D. Bulloch's "Secret Service of the Confederate States in Europe, or How the Confederate Cruisers were equipped." Two vols. London, 1833, 8vo.

[11] See Jefferson Davis' "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. i., Part iv., chap. iii., pp. 311 to 314.

[12] See *ibid.*, chap. xii., p. 476.

Enfield rifles were in the hands of the Confederate troops at the battle of Shiloh. In June 1861, a small schooner the Savannah had escaped from Charleston S.C., and this was followed by the Sumter commanded by Captain Semmes. Soon afterwards, the Nashville and the Petrel were afloat. These did some damage to the merchant shipping of the Northern States, but they had only a short run at sea. So early as June, the keel of the first foreign-built Confederate cruiser the Oreto, afterwards called the Florida, was laid in Liverpool.[13] Finding much sympathy and even material support from British capitalists, the agents of the Southern Confederacy had credit sufficient to engage ship-builders in English ports to prepare most destructive privateers. That called the Oreto was built in Birkenhead, nominally for the use of the Italian government. The American Ambassador to England Mr. Adams[14] had warned the British Ministry regarding her real purpose; but the remonstrance was unheeded, and she was allowed to leave the Mersey soon afterwards to assume the name of the Florida. Within three months, she captured fifteen United States vessels; of these thirteen were burnt, and the other two were converted into cruisers.

When General Halleck started from St. Louis to command the Union armies in Tennessee, he left General John McAlister Schofield[15] to take care of Missouri, which was a task of no little difficulty, as irreconcilable factions and a daring secession minority were at work, to create social and political disorders.[16] Partisan leaders and guerrilla parties were actively at work in the interior of the State; and in the absence of sufficient military forces, secessionist manifestations began to increase. Along the dividing line between Missouri and Kansas more especially, outrages were rife. On the 22nd of July, Governor Gamble had issued an order to enrol and organize the entire State Militia—of which number 30,000 were armed; but as the State Treasury was empty, and as it was well nigh impossible to collect taxes, assessments were levied on the disloyal for the public expenses, while substitute money was taken from those unwilling to serve. Soon a new danger presented itself, as it was found that many disloyal persons were anxious to carry arms, while their object in doing so gave rise to grave suspicions. Many native Missourians, who had been beaten and dispersed after the battle of Pea Ridge, now returned to their State, and when General Thomas C. Hindman's emissaries from Arkansas came among them, a guerrilla

[13] See James D. Bulloch's "Secret Service of the Confederate States in Europe; or, How the Confederate Cruisers were equipped," Vol. i., chap. ii., pp. 53, 54.

[14] Charles Francis Adams, the son of John Quincy Adams, was born in Boston, August 18th 1807. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. i., pp. 12, 13.

[15] He was born in Chautaqua County N.Y., Sept. 29th 1831. See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iv., pp. 451, 452.

[16] See War Reports, Vol. viii., pp. 368 to 456.

[17] General Hindman was born in Tennessee, Nov. 1818. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of America Biography," Vol. iii., pp. 212, 213.

war broke out in various quarters and under different leaders.[17] From the 1st April to the 20th of September, the Federal troops met those bands in more than one hundred engagements, great and small, in which the Federal force varied in numbers from 40 or 50 to 1,000 or 1,200, while the Confederates ranged from a few to 4,000 or 5,000 men. At length, the Union columns converging forced most of the guerrillas out of the south-west corner of the State into Arkansas.[18]

Towards the end of June, General John Pope had been called from the West, to take command of the corps of McDowell, Banks and Fremont,[19] reserved for defence of the capital. On the 14th of July, he was commissioned Brigadier-General in the regular army. However, in his boastful address to the Army of Virginia, he unthinkingly gave great offence to the officers and soldiers by reminding them, that he had come from the West, where the Federal Troops had always seen the backs of their enemies after battle, and he advised them to dismiss from their minds all idea of talking about strong positions and of holding them, about lines of retreat, and bases of supplies. He announced, also, that the position a soldier should choose was that from which he could most easily advance against the enemy.[20]

General Pope's army of Virginia had been designed, partly to cover Washington and to ensure the safety of the Shenandoah Valley, partly to hinder General Jackson from joining the Confederates, and partly to co-operate with General M'Clellan, who was about to attack Richmond.[21] For these purposes, he deemed a concentration of his forces at Cedar Mountain on the north bank of the Rapidan, to afford the most desirable position.[22] On the 29th of July, General Pope left Washington to assume the direction of his army.[23] Meantime, General Stonewall Jackson had been stationed at Gordonsville since the 19th of that month, and there he had been reinforced by Major-General A. P. Hill. They had already resolved on an offensive movement.[24] The conscription had so greatly recruited the Confederate armies, and after the failure of the Peninsular expedition, it was supposed that while General Braxton Bragg[25] in the West might force his way to Louisville and Cin-

[18] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. xviii, pp. 368 to 379.

[19] He refused to serve under his junior officer, and being relieved of his command, his place was assigned to General Franz Sigel. See Le Comte de Paris' "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome iii., Liv. iii., chap. i., pp. 439, 440.

[20] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. i., pp. 3 to 5.

[21] On the 31st of July, General Pope, had a command of about 45,000 effective men thus distributed: first corps, Sigel, 11,500; second corps, Banks, 8,000; third corps, McDowell, 18,500; the brigade of Sturgis 2,000; besides cavalry 5,000. See Le Comte de Paris' "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome iii., Liv. iii., chap. i., p. 452, and Appendice, Note C., pp. 661 to 663

[22] See Dr. William John Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. xi., chap. lvii., p. 429.

[23] See "War Records," Vol. xi., Part iii., p. 306.

[24] See Jefferson Davis' "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., part iv., chap. xxxiv., p. 317.

[25] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of

cinnati, General Lee might move direct on Maryland, secure the fall of Washington, and dictate the terms of a peace in Philadelphia.

Having resolved on making a demonstration in the direction of Gordonsville, to assist the withdrawal of General McClellan's army from the James River, Pope ordered General Banks and Sigel to move on Culpepper Court Housé. Banks promptly obeyed, and arrived there shortly before midnight on the 8th of August, with less than 8,000 men; but mistaking the road, Sigel did not get there until the evening of next day. However, Banks pushed onwards to Cedar Mountain, where he found the army corps of Stonewall Jackson posted. It consisted of three strong divisions. Meanwhile, General Pope suggested to the President the propriety of General McClellan massing his forces on the north side of the Chickahominy, while Pope himself should move against Richmond by way of Charlottesville near the head of James River, thus compelling Lee to detach a part of his army to meet their combined movements, He proposed, that McClellan should advance by way of Hanover Court House, while he should move thither direct from Fredericksburg, and first engage Lee, provided the Federal general would then make a vigorous attack with his whole army. Deeply impressed with advantages to be derived from such a plan, Pope addressed a letter to McClellan then at Harrison's Landing, asking his views on the project, and offering him co-operation; but to this communication, he received only a lukewarm reply, from which it might be inferred, that such an arrangement was declined.[26]

During August, both sides had arranged for the embodiment of large levies. After that disastrous campaign in the Peninsula, the President authorised the calling into service an additional force of 300,000 men. At that time, it was deemed inopportune to embody negro soldiers; however, by degrees, the enrolment of some volunteers of their race had been officially authorised, although from motives of very guarded policy, the practice was not generally encouraged.[27] Fearing the Confederate efforts should now be directed against Washington, the President recommended General McClellan to retreat from the Peninsula, and to transport his troops by water to the Potomac River. Notwithstanding his ill-success, the latter appeared reluctant to leave, remonstrating against that order,[28] strangely insisting on holding his position and asking for additional forces, to make it the basis for renewed operations against Richmond. However, on the 30th July General Halleck sent an order to M'Clellan, that he should remove the sick as quickly as possible, preparatory to the subsequent evacuation of the Peninsula.[29] Still was he slow in

American Biography," Vol. i., pp. 355, 356

[26] See Dr John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sec. xi., chap. lvii., pp. 427 to 431.

[27] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. xx., pp. 440 to 469.

[28] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. xi., chap. lv., p. 416.

[29] See Le Comte de Paris' "His-

obeying that direction, while vainly urging on Halleck to direct another move on Richmond.[30]

Meantime on the 16th of August, General McClellan commenced his retreat from Turkey Bend. General Burnside was sent in advance to Acquia Creek with 13,000 men. These were intended for destination to Alexandria. From the 17th to the 20th of August, McClellan's army marched by Williamsburg to Yorktown and Newport, under the direction of General Keyes. The defences of Yorktown were strengthened, and then the army of the Potomac prepared to embark for the Rappahannock.[31] As the corps retiring from the Peninsula reached Acquia Creek and Alexandria, they were to be placed under the command of Pope.[32] In the meanwhile, until the 14th of August that General remained on the Rapidan expecting reinforcements from the retiring army. He was then joined by Reno's[33] division of General Burnside's army, estimated at 8,000 men.

Nevertheless, General Lee was too enterprising to remain altogether inactive. Having now no fears for the immediate security of Richmond, he resolved on crossing the Potomac, and then moving northwards with a large army.[34] He hoped to arouse a Southern sentiment in Maryland, and to recruit his army there. He had already collected a force of 54,000 men for the initiative. Besides, the drafts from the conscription ordered were beginning to arrive in great numbers.

On the 8th of August, at the head of about 15,000 men, Jackson had already crossed the Rapidan with his men; and six miles south of Pope's head-quarters at Culpepper Court House, he took up a strong position on the wooded slopes of Cedar Mountain.[35] On the afternoon of the 9th of August, the army of General Banks approached to attack. Then Jackson was in command of that post, and he repulsed the Federals with great loss. However the contest was still vigorously maintained. About seven o'clock in the evening, Pope arrived on the field, and Rickett's division[36] followed some hours later,[37] under the command of McDowell. These took up a position on the left side of the Banks. An obstinate engagement then ensued, when the Federal

toire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome iii., Liv. iii., chap. i., p. 447.

[30] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. v., chap. xxiv., pp. 445 to 460.

[31] See Lieutenant Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. ii., chap. vi., p. 126.

[32] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. xi., chap. lvii., p. 431.

[33] General Jesse Lee Reno was born in Wheeling W. Va., 20th of June 1823. See "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iv., p. 345.

[34] See Edward Lee-Childe, "Le General Lee," Paris, 1874.

[35] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. xi., chap. lvii., p. 433.

[36] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. v., p. 246.

[37] See M. Le Comte de Paris' "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome iii., Liv. iii., chap. i., pp. 462 to 469.

lines were forced back about a mile, and as night now closed in, the troops on either side bivouacked on the ground occupied. Towards midnight, and by the light of a bright moon, the Confederate artillerymen found their opponents within range of their guns, and accordingly opened on them as they lay wearied owing to fatigue after the previous battle. A panic spread through a portion of General Banks' corps, and great confusion ensued. Taking advantage of this, the Confederate cavalry charged, and they had almost captured General Pope and his staff.[38] The Federals were defeated with a loss of 1,800 men in killed, wounded and prisoners;[39] while the Confederates lost in killed and wounded 1,276 men.[40] On the following morning, General Seigel's corps arrived on the ground, which move, exclusive of General Banks' command, raised the Federal force to about 22,000 men. General Pope was joined by King's division from Fredericksburg on the 11th, and thus reinforced, he resolved to attack Jackson next day; but during the previous night, the latter retreated across the Rapidan, and the Federal cavalry advanced so far as that stream.[41]

When Lee had ascertained that the Federal army was retreating from the Peninsula, he marched the bulk of his army to engage that of Pope. On the 13th of August, Generals Longstreet and Jackson, with Stuart's cavalry corps, were ordered to the Rapidan. Finding himself greatly outnumbered by the enemy, Pope was now forced to retreat.[42] He then sent his wagon trains to the rear. Having taken a position on the north bank of the Rappahannock River on the 20th of August, Pope received instructions from General Halleck, that sufficient forces from the Army of the Potomac should reach Acquia Creek to prevent any further advance of Lee, until eventually with combined Federal troops, he should be driven back upon Richmond. Nevertheless, a variety of causes, and especially a want of steam transports, had greatly delayed the removal of men and material from Harrison's Landing.[43] On the 21st, Pope was joined by the division of Reynolds and by that of Kearney, amounting to about 7,000 men. The troops were now beginning to arrive from the Peninsula, and Fredericksburg was occupied by Burnside.

[38] See Colonel Charles C. Chesney's "Military View of the Recent Campaigns in Virginia and Maryland."

[39] Morevover, fully 1,000 more straggled back to Culpepper Court House or beyond, and never returned entirely to their commands, according to General Pope's official report.

[40] See Jefferson Davis' "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., chap. xxxiv., p. 320.

[41] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. ii., chap. vi., p. 125.

[42] On the 16th of August, an autograph letter of Lee fell into Pope's hands, and from it he ascertained, that commander was moving on him by forced marches, before a junction could be effected between him and the Potomac army. See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. xi., chap. lvii., pp. 433 to 435.

[43] See M. le Comte de Paris' "Historie de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome iii., Liv. iii., chap. i., pp. 470 to 474.

General Lee's main army on the 21st was at the south side of the Rappahannock. Several attempts were made for eight days to cross in front of Pope's position, but those were always steadily repulsed. However, the Confederate General had now resolved on another and a more successful movement, to ascend the river and outflank Pope on the right.[44] He crossed the Rappahannock on the 25th, and after sunset on the 26th he reached the railroad at Bristoe Station. At Gainsville, he was joined by General Stuart, with the brigades of Robertson[45] and of Fitzhugh Lee,[46] so that he was then nearly between Pope's army and the city of Washington,[47]

By apparent attempts to cross the river, Lee had kept Pope's attention engaged, while General Jackson commenced to move on the 25th of August, and he performed a secret march on the left. His direction was along the flank of the Blue Ridge. The cavalry of Stuart masked and covered his right.[48] Jackson was followed by Generals Longstreet and Ewell. So soon as he discovered that the Confederates had flanked him and were in his rear, General Pope hastily broke up his camp, and hurried forward in their direction. Nevertheless, with astonishing celerity, Jackson poured his forces through Thoroughfare Gap in the Bull Run Mountains, thus striking Pope's line of communication with Washington. Moving on in the night, they secured a valuable depot of military stores and commissary supplies at Manassas Junction.[49] Such as could not be used were then burned; while the lines of railway and telegraph were cut. Jackson then retired, but on the 28th he was pressed by a division of General Kearney, who after a skirmish with the rearguard occupied Centreville, thus opening communication with Washington. Jackson crossed Bull Run with the division of Ewell and Ambrose P. Hill,[50] and there he took up a strong position on the right bank, between Sudley Springs and Thoroughfare Gap.

At that time, Jackson was isolated from support, and he might easily have been destroyed had those troops at the disposal of Halleck and Pope marched direct against him. However, the latter had been endeavouring to stem the torrent of the rebels' advance for fifteen days after the battle at Cedar Mountain,[51] until some of McClellan's forces

[44] The relative positions of the armies of General McClellan and Pope, as also of Lee, after the battles around Richmond are easily ascertained from a Map illustrating the sortie of Lee, in Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. xi., chap. lvii., p. 435.

[45] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. v., p. 279.

[46] He was born at Clermont, Fairfax County Va., on the 19th of Nov. 1835. See *ibid.*, Vol. iii., pp. 674, 675.

[47] See Jefferson Davis' "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., part iv., chap. xxxiv., p. 322.

[48] See Le Comte de Paris' "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome iii., Liv. iii., chap. i., pp. 494, 495.

[49] See Jefferson Davis' "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., Part iv., chap. xxxiv., pp. 322, 323.

[50] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iii., pp. 202, 203.

[51] See the "Campaign of Virginia, of July and August, 1862," Washington, 1865, 8vo.

arrived to his aid. In retreating from Cedar Mountain, with scarcely half a day's intermission, McDowell's corps was making either forced marches several times during the night, or engaged in battle without food. Yet, their steady discipline was preserved to the last.[52] Owing to the constant and sudden changes of position, there was a want of concert in the Federal movements, and this left them exposed to be defeated in detail by the better-guided and co-operating troops of General Lee[53].

Having retired from his advanced position behind the North Fork of the Rappahannock, General Lee with a large force crossed the Rapidan, on the 19th.[54] Generals McDowell and Porter were then ordered to move their respective commands to Gainsville; thus to establish communications with Pope. Much confusion, however, attended the Federal movements.[55] On the 29th of August, Pope's main army confronted Jackson's at Groveton, while Porter was three miles to the left, and Longstreet was still on the march through Thoroughfare Gap to effect his junction with Jackson's right.[56] A fitful and an obstinate battle raged all day, and as it was waning to the close, McDowell's troops came up on Pope's left, while Longstreet had already arrived on Jackson's right. Porter had received an order to advance from the rear, and to outflank Longstreet's division, but he failed to execute it.[57] This proved to be a drawn battle when it grew dark, and both armies prepared for its renewal on the following morning. It was evidently preferable for Pope to have retired behind Bull Run, than to have risked a second engagement against superior and well trained forces, and while Franklin's corps was moving from Alexandria to reinforce him. However, having Porter's troops now under his immediate orders on the 30th, Pope directed an attack, chiefly against Jackson's position, and about 3 o'clock, p.m.; but that post was protected successfully by Longstreet's division on the Confederate right.[58] Pope had massed his forces chiefly against Jackson, and had well supported that onset; but they were met with firmness, and a destructive artillery fire drove them back in confusion, after repeated efforts to rally. Then, the whole Confederate line swept onward, and carried each successive

[52] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iv., p. 110.

[53] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. ii., chap. vi., p. 135.

[54] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. xi., chap. lvii., p 435.

[55] See "War Records," Vol. xii., Part ii., pp. 76, 509, 523, and Supplement, pp. 878, 903, 904.

[56] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. i., p. 7.

[57] See Le Comte de Paris, "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome iii., Liv. iii., chap. ii., pp. 515 to 528, and Appendice, Note D., pp. 669 to 671.

[58] For the various positions occupied by the contending armies on both days, the reader is referred to the Maps: Second battle of Bull Run, Position of Troops at sunset. August 30th 1862. See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. i., pp. 8, 9.

post held by the Union troops, who still slowly retreated and confronting the enemy, although sustaining immense losses. This continued until about 10 o'clock p.m., when darkness put an end to the battle and the pursuit.[59] This battle was most desperately contested by the opposing armies. There Sykes's regulars, commanded by McDowell, defended successfully Henry House Hill from the Confederate assaults. This enabled the Federal army to converge on the Stone Bridge over Bull Run, and to retreat leisurely on Centreville. A large number of prisoners were captured on the field; while the retreating army took refuge behind the field works, where Sumner's and Franklin's corps were then stationed. This desperate battle of Groveton, or as more generally designated of Manassas, and lasting for two days, was fought chiefly on the old ground of Bull Run.[60] In this engagement, the Federal loss has not been accurately returned, but it amounted to nearly 18,000, according to some estimates; while that of the Confederates has been set down at 8,400.[61]

The forces of General Pope had been harassed with continual fighting, from the 26th of August to the 1st of September. On the morning of this latter day, that general telegraphed his opinion to General Halleck, that the army should be withdrawn to those entrenchments in front of Washington, and there be reorganised and redistributed. He had likewise very great reason to complain, that his efforts had not been seconded in time; mainly through the disinclination of General McClellan to forward reinforcements,[62] although he had opportunity and troops sufficient for the purpose. During the whole of the 31st of August, the defeated army lay unmolested at Centreville, where the soldiers found rest and food, of which they stood much in need.[63] Still General Lee was not able to attack the Federal lines behind their field works. Meantime, Jackson was sent on the evening of that day, to make a detour on the left, and to find if he could possibly cut off their retreat.

On the morning of September 1st, General D. Hill was directed to move his corps on the right flank of the Federal army; thus threatening Fairfax Court-house and the direct road to Washington.[64] The Confederates advanced to Chantilly, a small village on the flank, and almost on the rear of the Federal position at Centreville. However, Pope had

[59] See Jefferson Davis' "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., Part iv., chap. xxxiv., pp. 326, 327.

[60] On this account, some writers have called it the second battle of Bull Run.

[61] According to the Confederates' report, their losses in Lee's army, from the 23rd of August to the 2nd of September, were in Longstreet's corps 4,725 men, and in Jackson's 4,387; in all, 9,112. See Le Comte de Paris' "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome iii., Liv. iii., chap. ii., pp. 550, 551, note.

[62] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. xi., chap. lvii., pp. 442, 443.

[63] See Le Comte de Paris' "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome iii., Liv. iii., chap. i., p. 542.

[64] See Jefferson Davis' "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., Part iv., chap. xxxiv., p. 327.

foreseen this movement and had prepared for it, by ordering a retreat on Washington towards evening on the 1st of September. General D. Hill then advanced, and made a vigorous attack on the flank of his retreating troops.[65] A very severe action took place at sunset, and it continued into night, in the midst of a furious thunder storm. The right flank was covered by General Heintzelman's corps. Here the Union army sustained a severe loss, in the death of Generals Philip Kearney and of Isaac J. Stevens[66] who fell mortally wounded. Notwithstanding the neglect of McClellan to co-operate in time. that attack was effectually checked.[67] After this desperate engagement, the Confederates were not in a condition to pursue the retreating army on the day succeeding. During those defensive movements, General Pope lost about 30,000 men, with a quantity of guns, munitions and stores.

On the morning of September 2nd, the combined troops of the Potomac and of Virginia re-entered the lines of fortification around the capital.[68] Having retired to the defences at Washington, General Pope tendered his resignation to the President. There can be no doubt whatever, that the relations between this meritorous officer and McClellan were not of a cordial character ; nor had the President good reasons other than as a matter of policy, for the selection of a successor he subsequently appointed.[69] General Pope was relieved of his command over the army of the Potomac, and this was again transferred to General McClellan. The latter was most popular with the troops he commanded,[70] notwithstanding his recent failure in the advance upon Richmond.

From the very commencement of this great Civil War, the parties and factions that had formerly contested their relative strength at the polls, were still arrayed in hostility towards each other ; and although the great rent of open secession had detached the most influential Democrats from the side of the Southern Confederacy, yet still was the true issue obscured and misrepresented by their partisans and sympathisers in that body, throughout the Northern, Middle and North-Western States. Still the Democratic party remained powerful in its resistance to the Government and solid in its organisation. After those reverses experienced, especially after the failure of McClellan in the Peninsula, the Government lost prestige, and the Republicans began to lose popularity ; while an unscrupulous press and violent demagogues were ready to criticise and censure their motives and policy in no measured terms. Accordingly in the Autumnal elections, the State of New York elected Horatio

[65] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. ii., chap. vi., p. 143.

[66] He was born in Andover Mass., on the 28th of March 1818. See "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iv., p. 595.

[67] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. xi., chap. lvii., pp. 444 to 446.

[68] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. i., pp. 11, 12.

[69] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. xi., chap. lvii., pp. 447, 448.

[70] See John R. G. Hassard's "History of the United States of America," Part v., chap. liii., sect. 13, p. 341.

Seymour as Governor, and he was actively opposed to the Administration; the State of New Jersey was also carried by the Democrats; while there were heavy losses of Republican Congressmen in the great States of Pennsylvania, Ohio and Indiana. Even in the President's own State of Illinois, nine of his opponents and only four of his friends were returned. A chorus of aristocratic hate and fear of the Republic's success began to proclaim in the English press the certainty of its approaching downfall and disruption; while in the minds of the Southern Confederate leaders the Northern political campaign of this year was deemed scarcely less important than the military in the results of a probable Democratic victory at the polls.[71] However, the real Union sentiment was sufficiently powerful enough to elect an easy working majority in the House of Representatives, while the Senate was strongly Republican; so that there was no danger of the Government wanting support and votes for their legislation. The Democratic leaders and party were divided into two chief and distinguishing sections. One of these was known as the "War Democrats," who favoured the prosecution of hostilities, with a view of effectively preserving the Union; while the other section was called the "Peace Democrats," anxious to procure a cessation of strife, by compromises with the South, and even to the extent of allowing a separation from the Northern States. Under the latter wing took refuge great numbers of those who desired most earnestly the success of the Confederates, and who were anxious to embarrass in every way the action of Government. Both in North and South, the desire for peace and for stopping the further effusion of blood was a universal sentiment, and its proclamation was popular; but how to effect such objects had altogether divided opinion, and had not been solved as a practical problem.

Late in August, holding a position on the Tennessee River and east of the Cumberland Mountains, the Confederate General Bragg commanding 50,000 men—chiefly raised through conscription—moved rapidly from Chattanooga[72] in the southern part of Tennessee. The corps of Generals Hardee[73] and Polk were serving immediately under his direction. It was then resolved to invade the State of Kentucky,[74] and an army of 12,000 men under General Kirby Smith[75] had previously moved from Knoxville in East Tennessee, to co-operate by way of Cumberland Gap. On the 29th of August, Smith defeated General William Nelson,[76] who had an inferior force, near Richmond Ky. Afterwards, he occupied Lexington and Frankford. He then directed a detachment of 6,000

[71] See Pollard's "Lost Cause," pp. 556, 557.

[72] See Joseph Irving's "Annals of our Time," p. 474.

[73] General William J. Hardee was born in Savannah Ga., about 1817. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iii., p. 77.

[74] Brigadier Jeremiah T. Boyle, of Irish origin, had been appointed Brigadier of U.S. Volunteers, Nov. 9th 1861, and he held the office of military governor of Kentucky from 1862 to 1864. He died in Louisville Ky., in 1871.

[75] See *ibid.*, Vol. v., p. 577.

[76] See *ibid.*, Vol. iv., p. 493.

troops under General Henry Heth,[77] and these took position a few miles from Covington, thus approaching towards the Ohio River and threatening Cincinnati. He was met however by General Lewis Wallace, who forced him to fall back on Frankford.[78] Bragg had thus turned the left flank of General Buell, then commanding on the Cumberland River. He then directed his forces against Louisville, while pretending to attack Buell's army at Nashville. Meanwhile, General Morgan[79] with 10,000 troops was obliged to evacuate Cumberland Gap. With 20 pieces of artillery and 400 wagons, he reached the Ohio River October 4th, having had several skirmishes during that retreat with advanced parties of the Confederates. However, from despatches he had intercepted, the Federal general detected the real object of his adversary.

The march of Bragg was slow, occupying six weeks; but by previous concert, having advanced to Frankfort[80] he was joined by General Kirby Smith. Nevertheless, General Buell leaving Nashville followed in parallel lines the invading army on the 7th September, outmarched it, and reaching Louisville one day in advance, he compelled the Confederates to move eastwards from that city. Having obtained some reinforcements, on the 1st of October Buell and Thomas proceeded to force the enemy back. At Frankfort, the rebels had gone through the farce of setting up a Confederate State Government: but the inaugural ceremonies were rudely interrupted on the 4th of October, when it was known the Federal army was fast approaching that place.[81] A slow retreat southward immediately commenced, as Bragg was desirous of gaining time for his long line of trains to escape, and as Buell was not closely pressing his rear.[82] An immense amount of supplies had been collected by the Confederates in Kentucky, when the Federal General had drawn his forces well together for an attack on the retreating enemy.[83] On the 8th of October, both armies came into collision, and a battle was fought in the vicinity of Perryville. It was brought prematurely on by the left wing of the Union army towards noon; but about four o'clock, detachments arrived from the centre and right, when General Bragg was defeated with great loss.[84] Brigadier-General

[77] See *ibid.*, Vol. iii., p. 190.

[78] See Le Comte de Paris, "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome iv., Liv. i., chap. i., pp. 2 to 26.

[79] George Washington Morgan was born in Washington County Pa., Sept. 20th 1820. See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 765.

[80] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. x., chap. liii., p. 354. A Map rendering the sortie of Bragg and the military movements of both armies intelligible may be found at p. 352.

[81] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. xiii., pp. 277, 278.

[82] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. x., chap. liii., pp. 356, 357.

[83] See Le Comte de Paris' "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome iv., Liv. i., chap. i., pp. 48, 49.

[84] The positions are shown on a Map of the Battlefield of Perryville Ky., in "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. xiii., pp. 280, 281.



ULYSSES S. GRANT,
Eighteenth President of the U.S.



GEORGE GORDON MEADE,
Major-General of U.S. Army.



WILLIAM TECUMSEH SHERMAN
Major-General of U.S. Army.



PHILIP HENRY SHERIDAN,
Major-General of U.S. Army.

Philip H. Sheridan, who had judiciously selected a position in advance, bravely conducted a charge, and compelled him to retreat through Perryville at night-fall.[85] Bragg next crossed the Cumberland mountains.

The slow movements of General Buell had been much criticised at Washington, and the President had repeatedly pressed on him the necessity for occupying East Tennessee, where the population generally favoured the Union. These recommendations nevertheless were disregarded by that general, even after the victory at Perryville. Marching westwards, he took up a position at Murfreesborough where he entrenched himself, and proceeded to recruit his forces.[86]

The Federal troops were then massed by General Grant[87] in triangular fashion; from Memphis to Corinth was the southern base line, the northern apex being at Jackson, where the general's head-quarters were. At Corinth, General Rosecrans was stationed with his troops. While these movements were proceeding, Price and Van Dorn with united forces having seized an advanced post at Juka threatened the Federal position there. However, after a desperate struggle on the 19th of September, General Rosecrans with inferior numbers defeated Price at Juka, a few miles from Corinth.[88] The latter retreated and joined Van Dorn's forces at Ripley. At Corinth, Rosecrans commanded about 23,000 men, and the Confederates had nearly an equal number. With these, they then resolved to sever Grant's communication, and to assault his troops in detail.

On the 3rd of October, Price and Van Dorn attacked the outlying posts at Corinth,[89] and the picket guards were driven into the town towards evening. There a very obstinate battle was fought next day. The Confederates succeeded in breaking into the town, but they were again driven out and forced to retreat. This battle ended in their repulse. They lost 1,423 killed, with many wounded and prisoners, amounting in all to 4,838.[90] Greater results might have been expected from that engagement, had General E. O. C. Ord[91] at Bolivar been able to co-operate in time. However, those attempts made on Western Tennessee were thus signally defeated by General Rosecrans, who pursued the enemy for about forty miles. Soon afterwards, he was appointed to supersede General Buell, as Commander-in Chief over the large army of the Cumberland.

[85] See "Personal Memoirs of P. H. Sheridan," Vol. i., chap. xi., pp. 196, 197.

[86] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. ii., chap. viii., pp. 185 to 221.

[87] For a very interesting account of his various military operations, the reader is referred to Henry Coppee's work, "Grant and his Campaigns: a Military Biography," New York, 1866, 8vo. A new edition, intituled, "Life and Public Services of General Grant," appeared in 1868.

[88] In this engagement, Rosecrans lost 790 and Price 535 men.

[89] See M. le Comte le Paris' "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome v., Liv. i., chap. i., p 86.

[90] See "War Records," Vol. xvii., Part i., p. 170.

[91] Edward Otho Cresap Orr was born in Cumberland Md., Oct. 18th 1818. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iv., p. 584.

Having announced his assumption of command at Louisville, on the 30th of October Rosecrans proceeded at once to Bowling Green. There, dividing his army into three wings, Thomas commanded the centre, McCook [92] the right, and Crittenden [93] the left. Then Rosecrans established his head-quarters at Nashville, when he began to strengthen and complete his lines of communication, especially with Louisville.[94] As Bragg had a great superiority in cavalry, and having two active and daring officers Morgan[95] and Wheeler,[96] who were constantly raiding the open country, Rosecrans was obliged to accumulate large supplies at Nashville, so that he should be independent of occasional interruptions.[97]

In the month of September, Major-General Theophilus H. Holmes[98] had been assigned to command the rebel force in the Trans-Mississippi department; while the Governors of Arkansas, Louisiana and Texas had agreed to a plan for a combined invasion of Missouri. Much about the same time, an order came from the President in Washington, and it directed that Missouri, Arkansas, Kansas and the bordering Indian Territory should be designated the Department of Missouri, and that it should be commanded by General Samuel Curtis.[99] On the 6th May the latter penetrated into Arkansas, so far as Batesville on the White River. He had designed to take possession of Little Rock; but supplies not arriving by water, and ten regiments having been removed from him for service at Corinth, that purpose failed.

Meanwhile, about the end of May, General Hindman had arrived in Arkansas to command there, and he ruled as a military dictator.[100] His chief object was to create a new disturbance among the western backwoodsmen, and in the more northern districts of Missouri. In view of preparing for another invasion of that State, the Confederates had sent their officers and soldiers in civilian dress through various parts of the interior. Then bands were organised to take up arms and co-operate, so soon as a supporting force marched thither from the south. Accordingly, in the month of July, about 3,000 partisans under the leadership of Porter, Poindexter and Cobb ravaged that part of the State north

[92] Alexander McDowell McCook was born in Columbiana County Ohio, April 22nd 1831. See *ibid.*, p. 92.

[93] Thomas Leonidas Crittenden was born in Russellville, Ky. May 15th 1815. See *ibid.*, Vol. ii., pp. 10, 11.

[94] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. x., chap. liii., p. 359.

[95] John Henry Morgan was born in Huntsville Ala., June 1st 1826. See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 765.

[96] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. vi., pp. 453, 454.

[97] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. xiii., pp. 281, 282.

[98] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iii., 80, 241, 242.

[99] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. xviii., pp. 380, 381.

[100] His arbitrary action and needless rigour were censured even by Jefferson Davis, in his letter to Holmes. See "Report of the Committee on the Conduct of the War," Vol. xiii., p. 874.

of the Missouri River. However, General Schofield had despatched a cavalry force under Colonels Lewis Mervill[101] and John McNeill[102] to engage them. At Kirksville in Adair County, August 6th, the latter entirely dispersed that band commanded by Porter. Meantime, under the leadership of one Hughes, the Southern Missouri rebels took possession of Independence on the 11th August. Soon afterwards, he was joined by the Confederate Colonel Coffey, who arrived from Arkansas with 1,500 cavalry From the State of Kansas, Major-General James G. Blunt[103] of the United States Volunteers had been called across the border. As the Federal forces were now advancing against them on all sides, the rebels sought safety in flight; and for a time, something like quiet seemed to prevail in the interior of Missouri.[104]

On the 26th of June, General Curtis had started from Batesville, and marched down between the White and Cache Rivers. On the 7th of July, his advance had been attacked by some Texan cavalry; these were repulsed with heavy loss. On the 9th he reached Clarendon. There he found neither gunboats nor transports as expected. He was then compelled to cross over to Helena, on the Mississippi, and to give up the idea of marching on Little Rock.[105] Afterwards General Curtis came to St. Louis, September 24th, there to take up his head-quarters.

Towards the middle of that month it was rumoured, how another invasion from Arkansas might be apprehended,[106] and that it was to be directed by a new commander, Major-General T. H. Holmes. To Hindman was assigned the task of leading a large army he had mobilised to take possession of the Ozark Mountains in south-western Missouri, and then to advance upon Springfield, an important post held by the Federals. Gathering what troops he could, Schofield marched in that direction to meet the expected invasion from Arkansas. He had a force of 15,000 men, one-half being cavalry. However, having long lines of communication to guard, even when joined by Blunt he had hardly 10,000 troops for the purpose, while the enemy's forces were much more considerable. He resolved on taking the offensive notwithstanding, and on the 1st of October, the Confederates not expecting such a move fell back towards Bentonville Ark. When at Pea Ridge, they separated into two divisions, that of Rains with his infantry and artillery retiring to Huntsville, while the cavalry with Cooper turned westwards towards Maysville. Immediately Schofield started in pursuit of Rains, with

[101] Born in New Berlin Pa., October 28th 1834. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iv., pp. 306, 307.

[102] Born in Halifax, Nova Scotia. See *ibid.*, pp. 153, 154.

[103] Born in Hancock County Me., in 1826. He had previously rendered most effective service in Kansas. See *ibid.*, Vol i., pp. 297, 298.

[104] See M. Le Comte de Paris' "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome iv., Liv. i., chap. iii., pp. 122 to 127.

[105] See Dr John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. ix., chap. lxvii., pp. 239, 240.

[106] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. xviii., pp. 379, 380.

the divisions of Herron[107] and Totten; but finding Huntsville abandoned, he returned to take a position near Pea Ridge.

Meanwhile, Blunt followed Cooper with two brigades, and before daylight on the 22nd October, he reached Maysville on the western border of Arkansas. There he defeated the enemy,[108] who still continued his flight. Again on the 28th, Schofield captured the Confederate camp near Fayetteville, and thence returning resumed his post at Pea Ridge. Nevertheless, a want of provisions, in that rugged and thinly populated region, obliged the Federal general to bring a part of his forces back to Missouri, while he left Blunt to cover the western slopes of the Ozark Mountains. On the 26th November, it was understood that General Marmaduke had advanced with seven or eight thousand men, and then Schofield inferred that General Hindman would soon follow. To prevent their junction, with five thousand troops—the half being cavalry—and thirty cannons Blunt advanced, and on the morning of the 28th he was in presence of the enemy at Kane Hill Ark.[109] The Confederates retired before him to the summit of the Boston Mountains, and afterwards to Lees-Creek near Van Buren, to await Hindman. The latter joined on the 1st December, and at once assumed command. In turn, Blunt was obliged to keep on the defensive, and taking up a position at Cane Hill on the 2nd, he sent a telegraphic message to Herron, for assistance. The latter instantly advanced, and by forced marches he reached Elkhorn Tavern on the 5th. Some detachments, commanded by the Union generals James G. Blunt and Francis J. Herron, had advanced by forced marches from Springfield, and met the Confederates under General Hindman on the 7th of December at Prairie Grove, in the north-western corner of Arkansas.[110] With a vast superiority in their numbers, Herron was surprised by the enemy. Heroically he resisted notwithstanding, until Blunt came to his aid. There a desperate battle was fought, the losses on both sides being nearly equal.[111] However, on the day following the Confederates retreated southwards across the Boston Mountains, and their further advance into Missouri was checked. The Union leaders were also restrained from another attempt to seize Little Rock.[112]

After the battle of Prairie Grove, Blunt conducted an expedition of light troops to the borders of the Arkansas River, where he took

[107] Francis J. Herron, who was born in Pittsburg Pa., February 17th 1837, served with great distinction in the campaigns of Missouri. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iii., p. 189.

[108] Blunt commanded the Kansas and Cherokee forces in this contest, known as the battle of Old Fort Wayne. See *ibid.*, Vol. i., p. 298.

[109] On the following day, Blunt was promoted to be Major-General.

[110] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. xviii., pp. 383, 384.

[111] The Federal loss was very considerable, numbering 167 killed, 798 wounded, and 183 prisoners; while on this total, the troops of Herron lost 953 men. See M. Le Comte de Paris' "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome iv., Liv. i., chap. iii., pp. 128 to 146.

[112] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. xviii., pp 384.

possession of Van Buren on the 28th of December,[113] burned many steamers, and destroyed the Confederate depots. Thence returning to the main body of his army, their winter quarters were established on the Ozark Mountains, where they were not further disquieted.[114] Thus terminated that year with an important Federal success west of the Mississippi River.

Having inspected the works of defence at Savannah, and having given directions in reference to them, General Beauregard returned to Charleston, in September 1862. He disapproved of General Pemberton's plan of defences there, that had been erected during his absence, and now he adopted an elaborate system, which thoroughly established his great engineering and military capacity.[115] On the 24th of that month he assumed command, and established his head-quarters in Charleston. Then General Pemberton repaired to Richmond, where shortly afterwards he was created Lieutenant-General, and sent to take command of the Department of Mississippi, having his head-quarters at Vicksburg on the river.[116] The Confederate defences around Charleston were ingeniously placed and elaborately constructed, under the direction of General Roswell Sabine Ripley.[117] The land batteries nearest the mouth of the harbour were intended to form the outer zone of a circle of fire, against the approach of a hostile fleet and army; had the invaders passed those fortifications, they should have come to within another circle of fire; and had they succeeded in forcing the latter, another circle of earthworks still interposed between them and the city. On the interior batteries were placed some of the heaviest guns.[118] An expedition had also been directed against St. John's Bluff on St. John's River Florida, a post which Lieutenant-Colonel Hopkins commanded. The Federals having landed 3,000 men at Mayport Mills engaged the Confederate batteries. Brigadier-General Joseph Finegan, commanding in that department, hastened to relieve him; but on arrival there October 3rd, he found that place had been evacuated.[119] Brigadier-General R. S. Ripley was very active as an assistant to General Beauregard, in his

[113] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. i., p. 298.

[114] See M. Le Comte de Paris' "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Vol. vi., Liv. i., chap. iii., p. 147.

[115] John Clifford Pemberton was born in Philadelphia Pa., Aug. 10th 1814. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iv., p. 707.

[116] See Alfred Roman's "Military Operations of General Beauregard," Vol. ii., chap. xxvi., pp. 2 to 10.

[117] He was born in Worthington Sabine County, Ohio, March 14th 1823. He served in the Mexican War, and afterwards settled in Charleston, S.C. In 1861, April 12, he took sides with the Confederates and directed the fire on Fort Sumpter. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. v., p. 260.

[118] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xvi., chap. lxxii., pp. 173 to 177.

[119] See Alfred Roman's "Military Operations of General Beauregard," Vol. ii., chap. xxvi., p. 16, and Appendix, p. 441.

plans for the defence of Charleston; for, during the months of November and December of that year, great fears had been entertained, that a Federal fleet was then gathering in great force for its reduction.[120]

CHAPTER XXX.

Progress of Negro Emancipation—Internal and external Condition of Affairs relative to the United States—Advance of General Lee into Maryland—Battles of South Mountain and of Antietam—Retreat of Lee—General Banks succeeds General Butler at New Orleans—Confederate Invasion of Missouri—Secretaries Seward and Chase—Battle of Murfreesboro in Tennessee—General M'Clellan removed from Command—General Burnside succeeds—Conditions existing in Northern and Southern States—Defeat at Fredericksburg—Failure of the Federal Attack on Vicksburg—Confederates capture Galveston in Texas.

When the Southern members retired from Congress, the Republican party occupied a position of irresistible influence in that body. Some of the more ardent and zealous spirits—especially from the New England and Northern States—were constantly engaged in urging upon administration those arguments and efforts which tended to promote the total and immediate abolition of slavery. With President Lincoln however, a primary object was to secure the integrity of the Republic and the preservation of the Union.[1] Nevertheless, as the war progressed, he not unwillingly felt ready to approve such legislation in both Houses of Congress, as was most calculated, directly or indirectly, to forward Negro Emancipation. However desiring the ultimate abolition of slavery, notwithstanding the President resolved to stand midway between headlong reform and blind reaction.[2] On the 6th of August 1861, he sanctioned a Bill making free all slaves, who had been employed to construct rebel batteries, or who had been otherwise used for military purposes by the Confederates. As the war continued, and as National armies advanced into the slave-holding districts, many fugitive slaves men and women sought protection under their flag. According as the commanding officers had been swayed by political convictions or influences, some sympathised with and afforded protection to the negroes, while others refused to admit them within their lines; some drove them away, while several permitted slave masters to search the camps and to carry off their fugitive slaves.[3]

On the 13th of March 1862, the President approved a Bill, which enacted an Article of War dismissing from the United States service

[120] See *ibid.*, chap. xxvii., xxviii., xxix., pp. 20 to 65.

[1] See Joseph Irving's "Annals of our Time," p. 631.

[2] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol, vi,, chap. v., p. 107.

[3] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. xiii., chap. lxiv., pp. 600, 601.

officers guilty of surrendering fugitive slaves. The next advance made was the abrogation of the "Black Code" in the district of Columbia, and granting compensation to the owners there for the enfranchisement of about 3,000 slaves, living under the immediate jurisdiction of Congress. This Bill was signed by the President on the 16th of April. After vehement protest from certain Democratic members and much opposition from the Border States, an Act was passed through both Houses to prohibit slavery in the existing or future territories that might subsequently be formed or acquired. This Act was approved by the President on the 10th day of June.

During the summer months, Mr. Lincoln had seriously studied that most important question of slavery, as it was regarded by different parties, and as involving personal interests throughout the country; nevertheless, to adopt a measure in reference to the complete emancipation of slaves was then surrounded by grave political difficulties.[4] However, he had resolved on the issue of a proclamation to that effect; yet, when discussed in the Cabinet on the 22nd of July, it was decided to postpone such announcement until some decisive success had been obtained by the armies of the United States. Meantime, the President was urged by a strong bent of Northern opinion to decide on the total abolition of slavery. Notwithstanding, he deemed the time for such declaration to be inopportune.

By Act of Congress again approved July 17th 1862, the President was empowered to receive into the service of the United States, for military and naval purposes, persons of African descent, but subject to certain constitutional regulations. It was further enacted, that any slave of a rebellious person and rendering valid services, together with his wife, mother[5] and children—if they also belonged to persons in rebellion—should become free. Anxious if possible to bring about reconciliation,[6] the President was uncertain about the course he should adopt, having scruples on constitutional and political grounds. Those qualms of conscience urged him to propose compensation to the slave-owners, in order the more readily to procure the emancipation of their slaves. That proposal was opposed nevertheless by several Representatives, and it remained inoperative.

No sooner had the Union armies began to occupy localities in the Southern States, than many of the white inhabitants left their lands and homes, so that numbers of the negroes were then and there unemployed. But at length the Treasury Department sanctioned the distribution of instruments of husbandry, food and wages, to keep them in their derelict gardens and fields, within the Union lines. Benevolent and Relief

[4] See Le Comte de Paris' "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome iv., Liv. iv., chap. iii., pp. 621 to 636.

[5] From this law the father was omitted, owing to the immoralities tacitly sanctioned by the odious system and usages in the Slave States; it being well known, that several of the proprietors were fathers as well as masters of their own slaves.

[6] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. ii., *Art.* "Emancipation," p 769.

Societies also co-operated in giving timely and valuable assistance. Encouraged by such a state of affairs, General David Hunter with advanced Republican principles conceived himself authorised to organise the arming and training of coloured soldiers; and accordingly on the 9th of May 1862, he issued an order declaring that the slaves in Georgia, Florida and South Carolina were thenceforth and forever free,[7] This unathorised assumption of power was repudiated at once, when made known to the President;[8] but while the Radical Republicans highly approved of General Hunter's action, the Democratic Party and the Conservatives violently denounced it. In the Cabinet were Seward representing the more Conservative element in the Republican Party,, and Chase who was radical and restive under the President's control, while he considered many early untoward events of the war to have been results of Lincoln wanting administrative ability.[9] On the subject of emancipation, the views of those eminent men were quite divergent. Meanwhile public opinion was ripening. and the progress of the war came gradually to dispose of that question, while the majority in Congress gave unmistakeable signs of the times in successive anti-slavery enactments. The Democratic members were in opposition, but as a mere faction and greatly diminished in numbers. As the summer advanced, the President had nearly arrived at the conclusion that the emancipation of the slaves by Proclamation had become even a military necessity. Nevertheless, the fall elections then coming on were to be dreaded, and also the difficulty in overcoming much of the white prejudice to serve with coloured regiments as companions in arms. Very guardedly at first was permission granted to the generals to arm—for purely defensive purposes—those slaves coming into their lines, while restricting the numbers to be enrolled.[10] At first, indeed, recruiting went on very slowly among the coloured men;[11] and many of the whites doubted if their efficiency and courage could render them useful, even when trained in the use of military weapons. However, the progress of time resolved such doubts; especially when the President's Proclamation of Freedom was issued, and a fair motive had been furnished for negro recruiting. It proved to be eminently successful,[12] and many were the deeds of heroism and devotion exhibited by colored troops, during the subsequent prosecution of that war.

This arming of the blacks had been watched by the rebel authorities

[7] See "War Records," Vol. xiv., p. 341.

[8] See Warden's "Life of Salmon P. Chase," p. 434.

[9] See Schucker's "Life of Salmon P. Chase," p. 443.

[10] See Stanton to General Saxton, August 25th 1862. "War Records," Vol. xiv., p. 377.

[11] On the 7th of November 1862, Colonel T. W. Higginson began the formation of a negro regiment known as the First South Carolina Volunteers. See his work, "Army Life in a Black Regiment," p. 276.

[12] In the beginning of December 1863, the President announced in his annual Message that about 50,000 late slaves were then actually bearing arms in the ranks of the United States forces. See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. xx., p. 468.

with the keenest apprehension and hostility. The Confederate War Department expressed its rage, in a formal order of August 21st 1862,[13] directing Major-General Hunter and Brigadier-General John Walcott Phelps[14] to be treated as outlaws, and liable to be condemned for execution as felons; while at such time and place as their President should order, commissioned officers commanding negro slaves, as also these latter, were to be reserved for execution when captured, being "robbers and criminals," according to Jefferson Davis's Proclamation of December 23rd.[15] On the 1st of May 1863, the Confederate Congress passed a joint resolution approved by Davis, and which prescribed, that white officers of Union negro soldiers should if captured be put to death, or otherwise punished at discretion of a military court.[16] The Confederate Cabinet seems to have been quite willing to execute this barbarous decree.[17] With great reluctance, the United States government were obliged to issue a retaliatory order, on the 30th of July 1863.[18] However it did not seem to be at all probable that it should be carried into execution; as humanity revolts from the mere idea, that the innocent ought to suffer for acts or crimes committed by others.[19]

Towards the close of 1861, Lord John Russell had proposed delivering a somewhat peremptory summons, for both North and South to make up their quarrel;[20] it being understood nevertheless, on the terms of the latter becoming completely independent, thus forming two separate and perpetually waring Republics on the American Continent. As it perfectly suited their policy, Lord Palmerston entertained the same notion, in September 1862; while in such view, the Emperor of the French coincided,[21] and it was even sought to engage the Russian Government to forward a like project. However, the United States' ministers with dignity and firmness protested against any such attempt at mediation; for they had good reason then to believe, that French

[13] See "Report of the Conduct of the War," Vol. xiv., p. 599.

[14] He was born in Guilford Vt., November 13th 1813, and had served bravely in the Mexican War. On the 17th of May 1861, he was made Brigadier General in the Volunteer service. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iv., p. 761.

[15] See the "Annual Cyclopædia" for that year, p. 738.

[16] According to the Confederate Statutes-at-Large for 1863, p. 167.

[17] See War Reports, Vol. xxii., Part ii., p. 965.

[18] See Report of the Provost Marshal General.

[19] Even in the case of Forest's atrocious massacre of his prisoners at Fort Pillow, which remains to be related, the Federal Government generously pardoned the guilty murderers, when it was in their power to exact a just retribution.

[20] See Spencer Walpole's "Life of Lord John Russell," Vol. ii., pp. 344, *et seq.*

[21] As the French Minister of Foreign Affairs, M. Drouyn de Lhuys had termed the American Government and the rebels alike as being "belligerents." This caused great irritation to the Cabinet, and Mr. Dayton emphatically announced to him, that such an overture should prove perfectly fruitless. See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. iii., p 63.

imperialism and the English oligarchy were alike thoroughly hostile to the Northern cause.[22] The unfriendly attitude of the English Government towards the United States was very clearly shown, not alone by issuing the Queen's proclamation of neutrality as between belligerents, having equal international rights; but, even by refusing the naval vessels of the Federal power to supply themselves with deposits of coal provided for use at Nassau, while granting to the Confederate vessels permission to buy and take on coal in all their ports.[23]

Meanwhile, the able Mexican President Juarez, having succeeded in breaking up the alliance of England and Spain with France, then continued his preparations to meet the latter power, and to guard against the traitorous and factious attempts made to cause another Revolution in Mexico. The united expeditionary force of 25,000 troops was now seriously reduced; the intriguing Almonte did his utmost, but in vain, to stir up insurrection, while the French General Lorencez met with a prompt and severe defeat under the fortified walls of Puebla, in the spring of 1862. However, through his intelligence and energy, Lorencez's small force was saved in the month of May.[24] Not being then able to take any effective opposing action, the United States Government, well informed on the subject and quite distrusting the professed objects of Spain, France and Great Britain, took every proper opportunity to assert its traditional policy of discouraging European intervention in the affairs of the New World. The diplomatic correspondence of Mr. Seward at this period, in a tone of courteous sarcasm, professed to entertain small doubt, that those European powers should not endeavour to procure a change in the constitutional form of rule then established in Mexico.[25]

In order to pursue his designs, the French Emperor was obliged to send over a reinforcement of 35,000 men, under the command of General Forey, in October 1862. However, the Mexicans almost destroyed a force of 4,000 men under General Berthier, and as winter came on, Tampico and Jalapa were evacuated by the French; while at the close of that year, Forey was obliged to press Napoleon III. for additional reinforcements. These were sent accordingly, until he had an army of 38,000 infantry and 6,000 cavalry. This invasion involved the French Government in vast expense, as munitions and provisions had to be brought from the Southern States of America and from Havanna.

[22] See "Histoire de France depuis 1789, jusqu' a nos Jours," Tome vi., chap. viii., pp. 303, 304.

[23] The complaining and published despatches of Mr. Seward and Mr. Adams, with the quibbling defence of Lord John Russell, are on record, to show the unsleeping vigilance, unwaried industry, patriotic devotion, prudence, skill and remarkable ability of those distinguished American Statesmen. See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. iii.

[24] See "Histoire de France depuis 1789, jusqu' a nos Jours," par Henri Martin, Tome vi., chap. viii., p. 292.

[25] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. ii., pp. 47, 48.

Throughout the great struggle for national preservation, numbers were to be found in the Northern borders, and North-Western States, who sympathised with the Secessionists. Their ostensible pretence was for obtaining peace. Those persons belonged to the Democratic party, who had advocated compromises tending in such a direction; while through the press and on the platform, they insidiously criticised and denounced every act of the existing administration.[26] They seemed to rejoice at each reverse or failure experienced, as if it were a confirmation of their own sinister predictions. Willing to wound, and yet concealing their true motives, that faction generally received the name of "Copperheads," from a well-known venomous snake,[27] supposed to be peculiarly treacherous and covert in its mode of attack. During the second year of the war, their paralysing influence was frequently exercised at the elections, while their proceedings were watched with interest and expectation in the South, although their power for evil was there greatly exaggerated. The Democratic party had always found its chief support in the Southern States, while many of its members, actuated by factious motives, had sympathies and prejudices in favour of the asserted State Rights doctrine, even to the extent of permitting secession, and of holding property in slaves to be perfectly justifiable. Those issues raised by the war had led to very perplexing and confused opinions among the Representatives returned, especially from those constituencies in the border Slave States, that had not openly declared for rebellion.

The Confederate General Lee, prosecuting his invasion, then commanded the corps of General Jackson, consisting of the divisions of Generals A. P. Hill, of Ewell, and of his own division; as also the Corps of General Longstreet, comprising the divisions of Generals Lafayette McLawes,[28] William H. T. Walker,[29] of Brigadier-General George B. Anderson,[30] and of Hood. A division under General D. H. Hill usually acted independently of the other generals commanding corps. However, the defences around Washington were so strong, that no intention had been then entertained for making a direct attack.[31] Soon after the second battle of Manassas, and on the 5th of September, a portion of General Lee's army under Jackson crossed the Potomac. The object was to move onward into Maryland and Pennsylvania. In the former State, they had hoped for reinforcements and assistance. There, the Confederates occupied Hagerstown, Frederick

[26] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xx., chap. lxxxiv., pp. 429 to 442.

[27] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. xiii., p. 379., n. 1.

[28] He was born in Georgia, May 1821. See "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 655.

[29] He was born in Georgia, October 1816. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. vi., p. 332.

[30] See *ibid.*, Vol. i., p. 68.

[31] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. xi., chap. lviii., p. 449.

City and other places. The cavalry under General Stuart covered their advance.[32] On entering Frederick, General Lee issued a proclamation; but Western Maryland, which had been thus invaded, gave little response and fewer recruits to his cause.[33] Meantime, the Federal troops under General Julias White[34] retreated from Winchester to Martinsburg. Soon General McClellan had immediate orders to follow the invaders; but notwithstanding the fine army he commanded, a request was made by him for more troops. Then Porter's corps was directed to join him. Yet still he moved leisurely from Washington; when on the 13th of September he arrived at Frederick, and there one of his officers got possession of Lee's special order of the 9th, containing his chief plan of campaign.[35] From this McClellan learned that his enemy was before him, and only a day's march in advance; that Lee's whole force was inferior to his own; that it was divided into two portions, one in camp near Boonsboro', and the other besieging Miles[36] at Harper's Ferry. Notwithstanding it was not in his nature to act promptly;[37] and he merely instructed General Franklin[38] at Buckeystown, to march thither the day following. At this time, the passes of South Mountain were very feebly guarded,[39] and these should have been seized by McClellan. At Frederick and elsewhere, the Confederates collected large quantities of stores.[40] General McClellan had now concentrated his army. On the 14th September, he came up with the Confederates at South Mountain. They endeavoured at first to resist his passage over Catochin Creek—a small stream running into the Potomac River—but in this they were not successful. Whereupon, under General Howell Cobb[41] they retired to a higher position, and occupied the road-passages at Crampton's Gap, having a fine park of artillery bearing on all the approaches.[42] At 8 o'clock a.m., General Cox advanced to the attack, when after severe fighting, General Hooker and Reno carried the heights right and left of the road. The latter was killed early in the evening, while gallantly

[32] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. ii., chap. vii., p. 154.

[33] See M. Le Comte de Paris' "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome iii., Liv. iii., chap. iii., pp. 559 to 561.

[34] Born in Cazenovia, Madison County N. Y., Sept. 29th 1816. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. vi., pp. 473, 474.

[35] See "War Records," Vol. xix., Part ii., p. 281.

[36] Brigadier-General Dixon S. Miles was born in Maryland in 1804. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iv., p. 321.

[37] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. vii., pp. 135, 136.

[38] General William Buel Franklin, was born in York Pa., February 27th 1823. See *ibid.*, Vol. ii., pp. 535, 536.

[39] See Swinton's "Army of the Potomac," p. 202.

[40] See Pollard's "Second Year of the War," p. 128.

[41] He was born in Cherry Hill, Jefferson County Ga., Sept. 7th 1815. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. i., pp. 666, 667.

[42] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. xi., chap. lviii., pp. 452, 453.

leading an assault.[43] All day the battle lasted, as the Confederates were constantly reinforced. At noon, General Franklin stormed the crest, and won a brilliant victory over Cobb's detachment of McLawes' division, which was left to guard it. Late in the evening the Confederates yielded the central position. Some six miles further north, and at South Mountain, a sharp engagement for possession of Fox's and Turner's Gaps took place.[44] There also advanced positions were gained by the Federals.[45] On the 15th, the enemy had retreated from their front, to take up a still stronger position on the eastern side and near the Potomac River.

Meantime, General Jackson had moved on very rapidly, and with a considerable force he invested Harper's Ferry. After a very brave resistance, he compelled its garrison commanded by Colonel Miles to surrender, on Monday the 15th. At that very moment, Miles was killed. On the 14th, the Federal cavalry, to the number of 2,500, cut their way through the enemies' lines. There the Confederates captured 11,583 prisoners, while they obtained 13,000 small arms, and 73 cannons, with a large quantity of ammunition and stores.[46]

The chief design of McClellan should have been to separate Lee's forces from those of Jackson. On the 15th the latter marched his army down to Antietam Creek, and there placed them in position; however he did nothing more, or even on the 16th, but to advance a portion of his right wing beyond Antietam Creek, while the soldiers of Lee were hastening to join him from across the Potomac. Before noon on the 17th, most of Lee's forces were on the ground, which was highly favourable to them. In front was Antietam Creek, and on the high ground over it partly wooded there was a cover for his batteries. The crests of the hills were made still stronger, by a range of field-works in suitable positions. The town of Sharpsburg was centrally situated behind the Confederates lines, while the Potomac River in a curve and its bridges secured were more to their rear.[47] Jackson was still on the other side of that river; but he was hastening now to join Lee at Sharpsburg.

In that position, General M'Clellan opening with an artillery fire attacked them at daylight on the 17th.[48] His plan of battle was to throw

[43] General Jesse Lee Reno was born in Wheeling Western Virginia, June 20th 1823, and he served bravely in the Mexican War See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. v., pp. 221, 222.

[44] See an excellent map, showing the positions occupied at the battle of South Mountain, and at Fox's and Turner's Gaps in "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. vii., p. 136.

[45] The National loss at Turner's Gap was 328 killed, and 1,463 wounded and missing. The loss at Crampton's Gap was 115 killed, with 418 wounded and missing.

[46] See M. Le Comte de Paris' "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome iii., Liv. iii., chap. iii., pp. 591 to 594.

[47] See Map of Antietam and the various positions held, in "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. vii., pp. 144, 145.

[48] See Jefferson Davis' "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., part iv., chap. xxxv., p. 335.

forward his right wing, the corps of Hooker leading supported by that of General Joseph King Fenn Mansfield,[49] and by those of Sumner and Franklin if necessary; when the right wing had well engaged the enemy, the left wing under Burnside was to cross the lower bridge over the Antietam. Instead of a simultaneous attack and in force, Hooker's division advanced early in the morning, and it fought unsupported until shattered to pieces, while its general was borne wounded from the field. Then General Meade led that attack, and Mansfield came to his assistance. The latter was killed in front of his line. Unopposed as yet on the left, Lee was able to mass his forces well on the side most threatened. There Sumner, Richardson and Sedgwick led division by division and brigade by brigade, yet almost in isolated succession against the Confederate left, until the carnage became frightful on the Federal side, and without any proportionate success. In this battle, Brigadiers James Nagle[50] and Willis A. Gorman[51] were distinguished by their bravery, and for the admirable manner in which their troops were led to the attack.

During that engagement, General Richardson with Thomas Francis Meagher and the Irish Brigade[52] advanced against the enemy on the right, and particularly distinguished themselves, losing heavily in officers and men.[53] Afterwards, the brave General Richardson was killed. Meanwhile Burnside's corps had not crossed Antietam Creek before one o'clock,[54] nor was any further advance made from the west bank until after three. Then General Cox's command[55] attacked the Confederate right. Late in the evening, the division of General A. P. Hill that had marched from Harper's Ferry in all haste now con-

[49] Born in New Haven Conn., Dec. 22nd 1803, and he served bravely in the Mexican War. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iv., pp. 195, 196.

[50] Born at Reading Pa., April 5th 1822. He served in the Mexican War. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iv., pp. 475, 476.

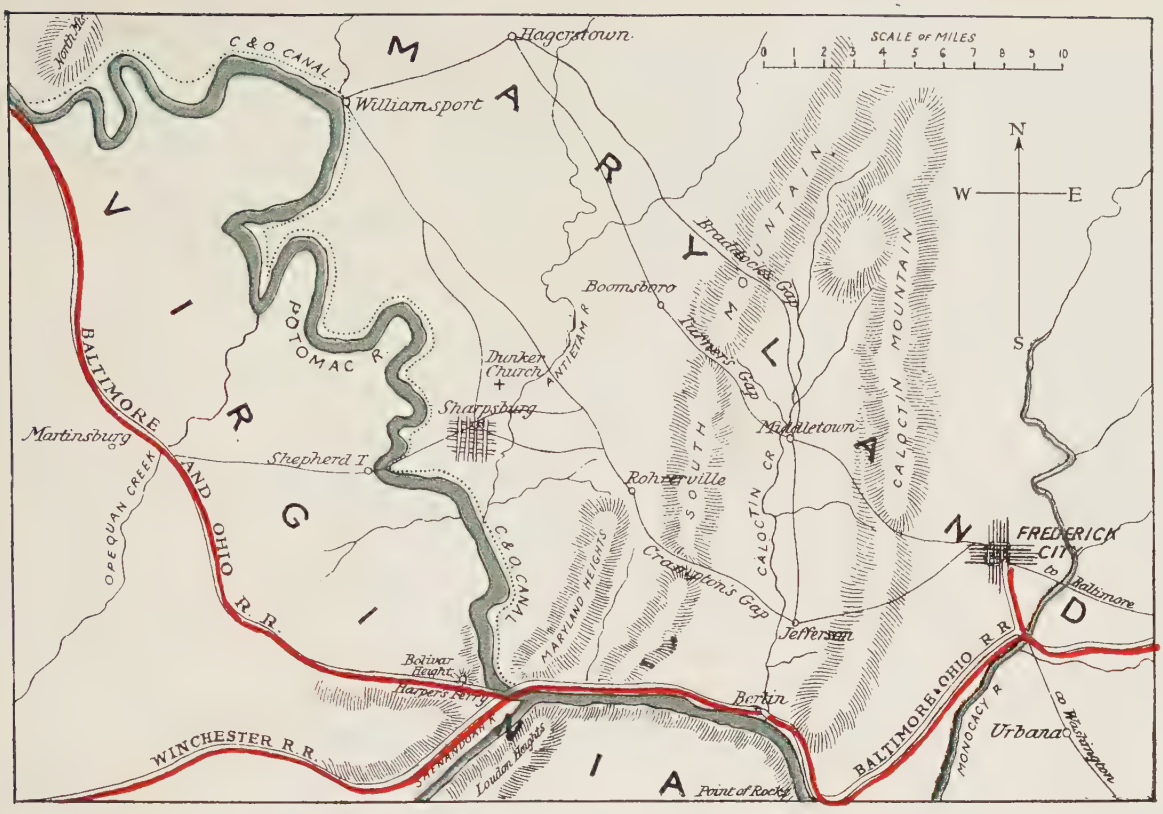
[51] He was of Irish extraction, and born near Flemmingsburg Ky., in 1814. He was a co-operator in several battles during the Mexican War of 1847, and he had been actively engaged with his brigade at South Mountain a few days before. He also served valiantly to the end of the Confederate War.

[52] "Son chef, le Général Meagher, est blessé; il est remplacé par le Colonel Burke, qui conduit ses compatriotes avec autant de courage que de sang-froid."—Le Comte de Paris, "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome iii., Liv. iii., chap. iv., p. 628.

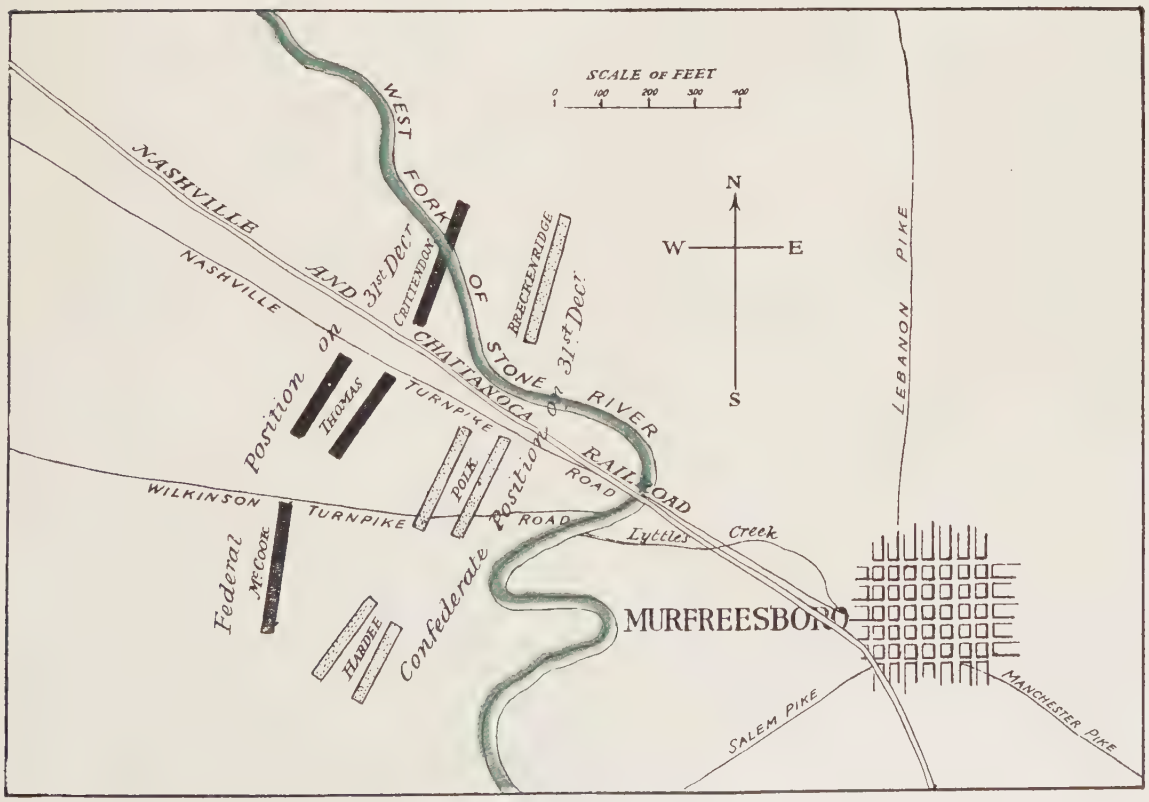
[53] See Captain D. P. Conyngham's "Irish Brigade and its Campaigns," Chap. xiv., xv., pp. 148 to 153.

[54] Swinton, in his "Army of the Potomac," has accused Burnside of having through his inaction prevented M'Clellan from having pushed the army of Lee into the Potomac. On the other hand, Woodbury, the biographer of Burnside, has given reasons for that delay in his work, "General Burnside and the North Army Corps," Providence, 1867.

[55] General Jacob Dolson Cox was born in Montreal Canada, Oct. 27th 1828. As Brigadier-General of the Ohio State Militia he entered the National army in 1861, and served in Western Virginia. He afterwards acted under General Pope, and he served in the Ninth Corps. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. i., p. 758.



BATTLE-GROUND AT ANTIETAM OR SHARPSBURG.



BATTLE-FIELD OF MURFREESBORO.

fronted M'Clellan, and the Federal column fell back a little distance to the hills near the Antietam. Night at last came on. This battle was desperately contested; but at last, the Confederates were obliged to retire somewhat from their earlier positions.

In this great battle of Sharpsburg, or as more frequently called, of Antietam, in killed and wounded Lee lost about one-fourth of his army, while M'Clellan's loss was fully one-sixth of his entire force.[56] Notwithstanding the opinion given by some of his generals—to renew the battle next day and when the Confederates were in no condition to hazard a stand—M'Clellan hesitated.[57] Still calling for reinforcements, although 14,000 fresh troops had now joined him after the battle, it was with the greatest feelings of relief he saw Lee's rear-guard retreat across the Potomac early on the 19th. No energetic effort was made to pursue,[58] although the Federal forces were most eager to improve on the result of their dearly-purchased victories.

On the forenoon of that day, M'Clellan telegraphed to Halleck: "Our victory was complete. The enemy is driven back into Virginia. Maryland and Pennsylvania are now safe." [59] But, the administration and the people had expected more from the General and his army than merely repelling that invasion; they even thought, that M'Clellan should have driven Lee back in disorder to Richmond, even if he had not destroyed all chances for continuing the war. The Confederates mustered about 70,000 men[60] drawn up to engage at Antietam, while M'Clellan's army numbered at least 87,000. The President was sorely disappointed at the escape of Lee's army; especially when he learned from the morning report on the 20th of September, that 93,149 soldiers were still present, and fit for duty in the army of the Potomac.[61] On the 1st of October, the President visited their camp and remained there several days. Meantime, Lee's forces moved southward in an orderly retreat; and without molestation, they arrived at Winchester. A portion of their cavalry under Stuart recrossed the river, and made a raid on the State of Pennsylvania, where they captured Chambersburg, and destroyed much property. Then as if to insult M'Clellan, they took a complete circuit around his army, and returned into Virginia by crossing the Potomac below him.[62]

[56] The estimated loss on the Union side at Antietam was 12,416, and 15,203 in this campaign, not including the losses at Harper's Ferry, which were 12,737. The closest calculation that can be made shows a loss to the Confederates at Antietam of about 11,172, and of 13,964 during this campaign. See "Battles and Leaders," Vol. ii., p. 600 to 603.

[57] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 650.

[58] On the 20th, some of the Federal brigades followed, but these were repulsed with considerable loss by General A. P. Hill, who commanded the Confederate rere-guard. See Jefferson Davis' "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., part iv., chap. xxxv., p. 342.

[59] See "War Records," Vol. xix., part ii., p. 330.

[60] Nevertheless in his Report, General M'Clellan estimated the Confederates at 97,445 men.

[61] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. vii., p. 146.

[62] See Dr. John William Draper's

Meanwhile, the resolute and rigorous measures, which in the necessary discharge of his duties Major-General Butler exercised in the south, had been grossly misrepresented throughout the United States and abroad. The victim of calumny and intrigue, an order came from Washington, November 9th, for his removal.[63] On the 14th of December, the Federal General Banks who brought with him large reinforcements arrived at New Orleans, and replaced General Butler.[64] These forces were deemed requisite, as a sort of guerilla warfare still continued in the States of Missouri, Arkansas and Louisiana.[65]

During the greater part of this year, certain differences of policy prevailed in the Cabinet. Salmon P. Chase Secretary to the Treasury had devoted his extraordinary financial ability and untiring zeal to regulate the revenue, and to raise the thousands of millions necessary to carry on that war. He originated the legal tender notes of the United States, and the system of National Banks.[66] He had distinguished himself in early life, as an earnest anti-slavery advocate and propagandist; while he carried those opinions so far, as often to have urged them inconveniently on the President's attention.[67] On the other hand, Mr. Seward the Secretary of State was more cautious and conservative in his policy regarding the emancipation of slaves. This created a great prejudice against the latter, especially in the Senate, and it resulted in a vote there taken, to demand of the President his dismissal from office. However, this was afterwards altered to a request for the President to reconstruct his Cabinet, as one conveyed in better taste and form. Immediately on hearing of those proceedings Secretary Seward resigned; but the President was very reluctant to accept his resignation. He called together the committee appointed by the Senate and the members of his Cabinet, to have a better understanding on those questions in dispute. The meeting also resulted in the resignation of Salmon P. Chase. However, at the earnest request of Mr. Lincoln, both officials were induced to resume the duties of their respective departments.[68]

In the West, General Bragg had an army of about 60,000 under his command; after his return from Kentucky he went into winter quarters at Murfreesboro, about twenty miles south from Nashville. Meantime, having secured his position as he thought, Bragg despatched a portion of his cavalry force under Generals John H. Morgan and Forrest against General Grant, while he detached another portion for

"History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sec. xi., chap. lviii., pp. 465 to 467.

[63] See "Autobiography and Personal Reminiscences of Major-General Benjamin F Butler," chap. xii.

[64] See the "Encyclopædia Americana." Vol. i., p. 685.

[65] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. ii., chap. ix, pp. 222 to 227.

[66] See the "Encyclopædia Americana." Vol. ii., pp. 38, 39.

[67] See the "Life of Salmon P. Chase," written respectively by Schuckers and Warden.

[68] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. xii., pp. 253 to 272.

service in Kentucky. Such information had been communicated to the Federal commander, and he resolved to profit by that opportunity. From Nashville on the 26th of December, General Rosecrans set out to meet his adversary, having about 45,000 men and 100 pieces of artillery. Generals McCook led on the right, Thomas followed by a road in the centre, while Crittenden was on the left.[69] The approach was through a difficult forest country. When Bragg was apprised of that movement, he sent out his cavalry force to skirmish in front, and to retard the march as much as possible, so that he might concentrate his troops, consisting of Polk's and Hardee's corps, and McCowan's division[70] of Kirby Smith's corps. These were strongly intrenched north of Murfreesboro, near Stone River; the division of Breckinridge being posted east, and the other Confederate divisions west, of that stream. Constantly skirmishing as they advanced, Rosecrans' troops arrived before this line late on the 30th, and then he matured a plan of attack for the day following. It seems strange, that both the Federal and Confederate generals conceived the idea of outflanking each other, but in opposite directions.[71] The Confederates however had the initiative, in that movement.

Early on the morning of the 31st, General Bragg directed a great number of battalions against the Federal right, which was weakened in force and quite overlapped, when that fierce battle commenced before Murfreesboro. Soon McCook's regiments began to crumble away before the overwhelming onslaught of the enemy. The extreme right was held by the division of General Richard W. Johnson,[72] and on his left was that of General Jefferson C. Davis;[73] but, after an obstinate resistance, both were forced to give way. However, General Philip H. Sheridan now came up with his division, and infusing his own indomitable spirit into it, for the first time after the opening disaster he held the Confederates in check, and with desperate tenacity.[74] An obstinate engagement took place at this point, where General Bragg was pressing for the mastery, and where he had already obtained a decided advantage. Four different times the enemy pressed his serried columns on Sheridan's lines; but never were his ranks broken, although his narrow

[69] See Le Comte de Paris' "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome iv., Liv. ii., chap. iii., pp. 252 to 254.

[70] John Porter M'Cowan was born in Tennessee about 1820. He served in the Mexican War, but he resigned his commission in the U.S. army in 1861, and entered the Confederate service. He commanded at New Madrid Mo., in March 1862, but afterwards he evacuated it. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iv., p. 96.

[71] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. x., chap. liii., pp. 360 to 362.

[72] Born near Smithfield, Livingston Co. Ky., February 7th 1827. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iii., p. 445.

[73] He was born in Clark Co. Ind., March 2nd 1828. He had served bravely in the Mexican War, and also in the Missouri campaign. See *ibid.*, Vol. ii., pp. 102, 103.

[74] See "Personal Memoirs of Philip H. Sheridan," Vol. i., chap. xiii., pp. 219 to 245.

front was obliged gradually to lose ground. In one instance he ordered a charge, and drove back the opposing forces; but, so obstinate was the struggle in which he engaged, that his three brigade commanders, Generals Joshua W. Sill,[75] George W. Roberts,[76] and Frederick Schaefer, were killed. Meantime, intent on moving his chief strength against the Confederate left, General Rosecrans disregarded too much the attack on his right, until he found how the fate of that army of the Cumberland depended on his sending McCook reinforcements. At this very moment, all Sheridan's ammunition had been spent. When fresh troops arrived to his support, his regiments reformed with fresh courage. During the heat of this conflict, Rosecrans was constantly under fire, as he appeared in various posts of danger, encouraging and inspiring his men, and while Bragg continued to throw his heavy battalions against the re-formed Union lines. This fierce battle raged from dawn to twilight, during all that day. It closed on a scene of frightful carnage. However, the Federals had repulsed all those desperate assaults of the enemy. During the night, General Rosecrans drawing in his left chose a much stronger position towards the rear.[77] Meantime, the Confederates boasted of this battle as a victory obtained, insomuch as the fortune of that day had given them some thousands of prisoners and two general officers, besides the guns, wagons and stores they had captured.[78]

The armies engaged were nearly equal in numbers; about 43,000 on both sides.[79] During the night two good brigades had arrived from Nashville to strengthen Rosecrans' position; and there he resolved to await Bragg's expected attack, on the first day of the new year 1863. But having made reconnaissances the next morning, and ascertaining his own terrible losses in the previous engagement, the Confederate general made no further move forward. On the 2nd of January, Rosecrans resolved on taking the offensive.[80] Having occupied the high ground East of Stone River, he there confronted Breckinridge's division. Whereupon Bragg ordered the latter to advance and dislodge the Federals, who at first were driven across the stream; but soon Breckinridge was checked by a murderous fire of artillery, and met by three

[75] He was born in Chillicothe Ohio, December 6th 1831, and he served previously with distinction in this war. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. v., p. 527.

[76] He was born in Chester Co. Pa., October 2nd 1833, and had served honourably in previous battles. See *ibid.*, p. 273.

[77] The various positions occupied by the forces on both sides are shown on a Map of the Battle Fields of Stone's River, Tenn., Dec. 31 to Jan. 3 1862-3, in "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. xiii., pp. 288, 289.

[78] See Le Comte de Paris' "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome iv., Liv. ii., chap. iii., pp. 305 to 309.

[79] In killed, wounded and missing, Bragg lost 10,266 in this battle of Murfreesboro', while Rosecrans had 1,730 killed, 7,802 wounded, and 3,717 captured—in all about 13,249. See "War Reports," Vol. xx., Part i., pp. 215, 674.

[80] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil

brigades. The Confederates' defeat was completed in forty minutes, during which they lost 2,000 men.[81] Night came on and heavy rain fell, which continued all the next day. Then Crittenden crossed the river once more, and entrenched himself on the heights. Some skirmishes took place that day; but the waters of Stone River rising rapidly filled Bragg with alarm for his safety. Before midnight on the 3rd, he began to retreat southwards.[82] Soon afterwards, Rosecrans entered Murfreesboro. Notwithstanding, such was the mirey state of the roads that he could not successfully pursue the retreating army to Shelbyville. After the retreat of General Bragg Rosecrans fortified Murfreesboro, and made it a depot for supplies, while he remained there for some months preparing for an advance, but awaiting reinforcements which were slow in arriving. Meanwhile, General Bragg took up an entrenched position at Shelbyville.[83]

So soon as the several States in the West and South were controlled by Federal occupation, Military Governors had been appointed by the President with very ample powers, until the loyal inhabitants of each State should be able to organise a civil government in conformity with the Constitution of the United States.[84] On the 22nd of September 1862, and after a full discussion of the measure with his Cabinet, President Lincoln issued his celebrated Emancipation Proclamation to the effect that on and after January the 1st 1863, all slaves within any State or part of a State, the people whereof shall then be in rebellion against the Federal Government, should thenceforward and for ever become free.[85] At that time, such a proclamation was thought to have been a dangerous political experiment to make, in face of sentiments entertained by some of the people, especially in those States bordering on the South, and while the Democratic party was ready to advance many opposing arguments against its adoption.[86]

Meanwhile, General M'Clellan had been urged repeatedly by the President and by General Halleck to pursue General Lee's retreating army. He still alleged excuses for not moving after them. He has been generally accused of inertness for not having pursued the Confederates into Virginia after the battle of Antietam, and when he was at the head of a superior force in good condition to follow, and flushed with their recent victory. At last, after repeated procrastinations, M'Clellan fixed upon November 1st as the earliest date at which he should be ready, and about that time he crossed the Potomac, moving

War," Vol. ii., sect. x., chap. liii., p. 365.

[81] See Joseph Irving's "Annals of our Time," p. 479.

[82] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. xiii., pp. 282 to 296.

[83] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. ii., chap. xi.

[84] See "War Records," Vol. ix., pp. 396, 397.

[85] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. xiii., chap. lxiv., pp. 590 to 614.

[86] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. vi., pp. 129, 130.

slowly along the east side of the Blue Ridge Mountains in the direction of Gordonsville. However, Lee rapidly moved parallel to him through that valley on the west side, and as a matter of course he secured that line of march and the Confederate communications.[87] Having been already so obstinate in refusing to pursue the enemy, and now so dilatory in his movements as to allow such an escape, the forbearance of Government was thoroughly strained by that inaction of the Federal commander. Therefore, he was removed by an order of the President from the command of the Army of the Potomac, and this was dated on the 5th of November. At the same time, General Burnside was appointed to succeed him.[88] The latter doubted much his competence to take charge and direction of such a large army. He had already refused a like provisional offer, and previously made to him; but as the Government had now ordered it, he was unable to persist longer in his refusal.

Both the President and General Halleck had approved a plan of campaign, to advance on the Confederate flanks, and thus to cut off their retreat from Richmond. Instead of this, the newly-appointed commander preferred to transfer his army to Fredericksburg, there to meet their forces and drive them across the Rappahannock.[89] The President reluctantly assented, but urged him to move rapidly, so that the enemy should not have time to concentrate all their forces on this point.

The Federal Congress met on the 1st of December, when the President's Message was then laid before them, with a proposal for a gradual and compensated emancipation of all slaves in the United States. His plan, however, was not then adopted. For a considerable time, the expediency of this measure had been questioned by Mr. Lincoln.[90] Violently it was opposed by the Democratic minority, and by the pro-slavery Conservatives from the border slave States, in the House of Representatives. A resolution proposed on the 11th of December, that the President's proclamation was unwarranted by the Constitution, and that it was useless and dangerous as a war measure, had been there rejected by a vote of ninety-four against forty-five. A few days later on December 15th, the Republican party put the same phraseology in an affirmative form, and carried their resolution by a test vote of seventy-eight to fifty-one. Moreover, that proclamation was heartily endorsed by nearly every Free State Governor, and in due course it was approved with increasing expression from the armies in the field, and from the people in their homes, especially throughout the loyal North.[91]

[87] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. xi., chap. lviii., p. 468.

[88] General C. P. Buckingham was the bearer of that message to both. In after years, M'Clellan makes the extraordinary statement:—"Many were in favour of my refusing to obey the order and of marching upon Washington to take possession of the Government."—"M'Clellan's Own Story," p. 652.

[89] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. x., p. 198.

[90] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. ii., chap. xii., pp. 288, 289.

[91] See "Abraham Lincoln, a His-

Meanwhile, the President was very ably assisted in the Cabinet by men of the highest talents, industry and capacity for the administration of home and foreign affairs. As Secretary of State, on William H. Seward[92] devolved chiefly the foreign diplomatic correspondence, which was conducted with resources of argument, as with a prudence and dignity that lent persuasion and force to the representations of Mr. Adams[93] Ambassador to England, and of Mr. Dayton[94] Ambassador to France, at the respective courts and cabinets to which they had been accredited. When Salmon P. Chase was made Secretary of the Treasury, he found United States finances and credit in a deplorable condition; the national debt on the 1st July 1861 being 30,000,000 dollars, there being only a balance of 2,000,000 dollars to meet it, and that at a high rate of interest.[95] Then a formidable war was imminent, and the expenditure was foreseen to be enormous. In July, Congress had authorised a loan of 250,000,000 dollars; the duties were increased; an internal revenue system was adopted; and a direct tax of 20,000,000 dollars was imposed. When the session closed Mr. Chase went to New York, where with the concurrence of bankers there, as also with those of Philadelphia and of Boston, he negotiated a loan of 150,000,000 dollars. Various expedients were adopted by the administration to provide for the increasing expenditure, in the shape of treasury and legal tender notes; as also in the issue of 500,000,000 dollars of bonds, bearing interest at 6 per cent., and payable after five and within twenty years. Temporary loans were also authorised,[96] and heavy taxes were levied. The financial measures of Mr. Chase were of a singularly able and decisive kind,[97] which not only bore upon the current requirements of the war, but which gave a permanent impress to the business relations of the United States.[98] As Secretary of war, Mr. Stanton was able to report[99] towards the end of

tory," Vol. vi., chap. viii., pp. 147 to 172.

[92] See "Autobiography of William Henry Seward (1801-1834); with Memoir of his Life, and Selections from his Letters, 1831-1846," with illustrations, by his son Frederick William Seward. New York, 1877, 8vo. This work was continued by the same writer, to the time of his father's death, Oct. 10th 1872, in two additional volumes, published in 1891.

[93] See the Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. i., pp. 33, 34.

[94] See the article DAYTON (William Louis) in Pierre Larousse's "Grand Dictionaire Universel du XIXe Siecle," Tome vi., p. 172.

[95] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. xi., p. 226.

[96] "The principal Acts authorising loans besides the legal tender notes were passed February 25th 1862, which authorized 500,000,000 dollars of bonds; the 900,000,000 dollars loan Act of March 3rd 1863: the 200,000,000 dollars loan Act of March 3rd 1864; the 400,000,000 dollars loan of June 30th 1864; and the 60,000,000 dollars Act of March 2nd 1865. There were other Acts, but these five contained the authority for making the great loans of the war."—"Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., *Art.* Finance, p. 48.

[97] These have been fully reviewed in John Jay Knox's "United States Notes."

[98] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. xiii., chap. lxiii., p. 557.

[99] According to his Report, December 1st 1862, the Paymaster-General

1862 that the United States had an army amounting to 775,336 officers and privates, fully armed and equipped.[100] The Secretary of the Navy Mr. Welles[101] was able to report at the same date, an organization of the vessels afloat or progressing to rapid completion, a naval force of 427 vessels, there having been added 353 vessels to the old navy, and exclusive of those which had been lost; while the marine had been armed with 1577 guns, and having the capacity of 240,028 tons in the aggregate. Those ships had been divided on the maritime frontier, into the North Atlantic squadron; the South Atlantic squadron; the Eastern Gulf squadron; and the Western Gulf squadron. Besides those vessels, on the interior waters were the Mississippi flotilla and Potomac flotilla. At that time, the blockade of all the Southern ports had been completely established.[102]

From the very commencement of the rebellion, the financial condition of Davis's government was verging towards bankruptcy. Successive issues of paper money took place; loans on cotton were negotiated in Europe; loans were authorised on banks in the Southern States, but they were paid only in treasury notes. At Richmond, the gold dollar was frequently worth fifty or more paper dollars. The fiscal management was inefficient and chaotic; and as the war went on, gold disappeared from circulation. The actual cost of the war on the Confederate side has been estimated, as amounting to about one thousand millions;[103] while at the close of that contest, the nominal debt of the Confederacy was about 3,500,000,000 dollars. Yet, these portentous figures had little or no meaning for the creditors,[104] who lost nearly all that had

had certified, that no less than 135,274,468 dollars had been paid to the regular and volunteer troops at that date. In reference to warlike munitions, the Report adds: "In general terms, it may be stated that the issues by the Ordnance Department include, 1,926 field and siege, and 1,206 fortification cannon; 7,294 gun-carriages, caisons, mortar-beds, travelling forges, and battery wagons; 1,276,686 small arms; 987,291 sets of equipments and accoutrements, and 213,991,127 rounds of ammunition for artillery and small arms, still leaving large supplies of ordnance stores at the arsenals and depots."

[100] Edward M. Stanton was born at Steubenville Ohio, in 1815, and he died in December 1869. See Pierre Larousse's "Grand Dictionnaire Universel du XIXe Siecle," Tome xiv., pp. 1057, 1058.

[101] Gideon Wells was born in Glastonbury Conn., July 1st 1802, and he died at Hartford, Feb. 11th 1878. After his retirement from office, he published "Memoirs of the War," in the *Galaxy*. Also he was author of a work intituled, "Lincoln and Seward: Remarks upon the Memorial Address of Charles F. Adams on the late William H. Seward; with Incidents and Comments illustrative of the Measures and Policy of the Administration of Abraham Lincoln," &c. New York, 1874, 12mo.

[102] He adds in the Report: "The appropriations made by Congress for the navy for the fiscal year ending June 30th 1862, were upwards of 43,500,000 dollars; for the year ending June 30th 1863, nearly 53,000,000 dollars; and for the following year, June 30th 1864, upward of 68,000,000 dollars."

[103] See Edward Albert Pollard's "The Lost Cause," p. 426. New York, 1866, 8vo.

[104] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. xi., pp. 247 to 252.

been contributed by them, through a blind confidence in ultimate success, or through a spirit of self-sacrifice. Distress was severely felt by most of the richer and more distinguished families; while destitution and domestic suffering sadly contributed in the poorer homesteads, to aggravate the evils of that deplorable war. Moreover, the loss of lives and of limbs, owing to the various and fierce battles fought by volunteers and conscripts, left thousands of homes ruined, widowed, fatherless and childless, so vast was the extent and requirements of its devouring agency.

From the beginning of the war also one of the most deplorable episodes to be recorded was referable to the exchange and treatment of prisoners.[105] During the year 1861, the Confederates demanded their recognition as an independent government, which the United States were not prepared to grant. At the opening of next year the Washington authorities desired to release those soldiers captured at the first battle of Bull Run; but they found the Confederate demands inadmissible, one of which was, that United States regulars should not be exchanged for Southern volunteers; and another, that seamen taken in rebel privateers should be exchanged on equal terms with seamen in the merchant service. The pretensions of the Richmond administration were, that they should be recognised as belligerents, and that exchanges should be made on a frontier, which was not even defined, but which was understood to embrace a large extent of territory, then actually held in military possession by the Federal armies.[106] However, after a great deal of negotiation and correspondence on both sides, on the 22nd of July 1862 a cartel was agreed to by General Dix and General D. H. Hill; but even then, the course of exchange did not run smoothly, and especially after the Proclamation of Emancipation, a most serious obstruction was added, as the Confederate government had decreed, that rebel slaves could not be recognised as soldiers,[107] and summary execution must be inflicted on them even without trial by court-martial.[108] Meanwhile, the unfortunate Federal prisoners were subjected

[105] This subject is fully set forth in a Report issued by the Fortieth Congress in 1869, and amounting to about 1,200 pages.

[106] See General E. R. S. Cranby's "Report on the Treatment of Prisoners," addressed to the Fortieth Congress.

[107] Jefferson Davis thus proclaims deliberately the reasons for this failure. "The Government of the United States contended that the slaves in their ranks were such no longer; and that it was bound to accord to them, when made prisoners, the same protection that it gave all other soldiers. We asserted the slaves to be property, under the Constitution of the United States and that of the Confederate States, and that property recaptured from the enemy in war reverts to its owner, if he can be found, or it may be disposed of by its captor."—"Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., Part iv., chap. xlix., p. 599.

[108] "The object of these hellish instructions was evidently to prevent any record of the murder of negro soldiers being made. On the 24th of December 1862, Jefferson Davis issued his proclamation declaring General Butler a felon, and ordering

to the most dreadful privations and sufferings, in those prisons where they had been closely confined and strictly guarded. It is difficult to describe all those miseries endured by Union soldiers in Libby Prison [109] at Richmond, as also in the prisons of Salisbury and of Belle Isle. Nevertheless, the Confederate prisoners were treated humanely by the Federal government, and their physical condition was only injured by the necessary laws of restraint.

Having marched on the direct line towards Richmond about the beginning of December, General Burnside's army was stationed on a range of hills known as the Stafford Heights, extending along the north side of the Rappahannock River and opposite to Fredericksburg; while General Lee's large army, now concentrated, occupied the south side, holding the heights to the rear.[110] These were all strongly entrenched and batteries were posted at every advantageous point. The cavalry of Stuart and the horse artillery occupied the plains below, extending to the river banks. Valuable time had been lost by the Federals, before bridges were prepared for crossing; although Generals Sumner and Hooker had asked permission to advance and take possession of those heights, before they had been fortified and occupied in great force. This permission was refused.[111] For nearly three weeks, both armies remained confronting each other. The Confederate pickets held the town of Fredericksburg, and the right bank of the river; the Federals were in

him to be hanged without trial as soon as captured, and also directing that no commissioned officer of the United States taken captive should be released on parole until Butler was caught and hanged; declaring all commissioned offiers in Butler's command 'robbers and criminals deserving death,' and ordering them, whenever captured, to be reserved for execution. This frantic proclamation, of course, put an end for a time to the exchange of officers on either side."—"Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. xvi., pp. 452, 453.

[109] When the war had closed, this large wooden building, containing distinct lofts ascended by a flight of stairs, was purchased by a public-spirited merchant, who had it removed to Chicago Ill., and re-erected as a fac-simile of the original design, on a city site. There it had been converted into a vast Historical Museum filled with Memorials of the great Confederate War. When visited by the writer in 1891 it was in chief charge of a retired Federal soldier and pensioner, who gave a very graphic and doleful description of the hunger and privations to which himself and fellow-prisoners had been subjected in it. The building was then filled with not only various arms, accoutrements and uniforms, belonging to the Federal and Confederate officers and soldiers; but likewise, with paintings and engravings, which formed a variety of portraits representing the chief actors on both sides, views of the different battles, with maps illustrating them, books, tracts, periodicals and newspapers, containing accounts of all the military and naval affairs during that war. To this building free admission was given to the general public, through the generosity and courtesy of the proprietor, who collected the numberless curiosities there, and who provided all the expenses of erection, maintenance and the services of several attendants, at his own sole charge and expenditure.

[110] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. xi., chap. lviii., pp. 468, 469.

[111] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. x., p. 199.

possession of the small town of Falmouth a little above it, and on the left bank. The army of General Burnside, amounting to about 150,000 men, consisted of three grand divisions; the centre was under the command of General Sumner, the right under General Hooker, and the left under General Franklin.[112] On the night of the 10th, having posted his powerful artillery on commanding positions, General Burnside commenced to throw two pontoon bridges across the river; one at Fredricksburg and another bridge about a mile lower down.[113] Under a heavy fire from the enemy, a bombardment of the town being then commenced, those bridges were completed on the 11th despite the Confederates' opposing efforts. On that same evening, a corps from Sumner's command, and one from Franklin's, crossed the river, and driving the enemy to their entrenchments, they took possession of Fredricksburg.[114] Then massing the greater portion of his army near the pontoon bridges, Burnside endeavoured to move Stoneman's corps[115] across the river; but the fire from the Confederate batteries delayed this attempt until after dark.

On the 12th, and under cover of a dense fog, a large Federal force passed the river. General Sumner's division occupied Fredericksburg, and took position on the south bank, having Franklin's men on his left; both being covered by heavy guns on the Stafford Heights. An artillery duel was kept up with great energy by the Federals all that day, and it was replied to sparingly by the Confederates; the object of General Lee being to conceal the position and number of his batteries.[116] His command numbered about 80,000 men in an exceedingly strong position. The right of the Confederates, commanded by Jackson, extended nearly to the Massaponax river running into the Rappahannock, about five miles below Fredericksburg. The cavalry and horse artillery, under General J. E. B. Stuart, were posted there on open ground to enfilade the Federal advances; and it was well proportioned by Generals D. H. Hill, Early and Taliaferro,[117] in positions. The left wing of the Confederates under General Longstreet comprised the divisions of Hood on the right, then Pickett,[118] then Major-General M'Lawes and

[112] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. ii., chap. x., pp. 245, 246.

[113] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. xi., chap. lviii., pp. 469, 470.

[114] See Le Comte de Paris' "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome iii., Liv. iii., chap. ii., pp. 387 to 393.

[115] George Stoneman was born in Busti Chautauque Co., N.Y., August 8th 1822. He served in the Mexican War. He was appointed chief of cavalry in the Army of the Potomac, and afterwards he became commander of the Third Army Corps. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. v., p. 5.

[116] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. ii., chap. x., p. 248.

[117] General William Booth Taliaferro was born in Belleville Gloucester Co. Va., Dec. 28th 1822. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. vi., p. 25.

[118] George E. Pickett was born in Richmond Va., 25th of January 1825. See *ibid.*, Vol. v., p. 5.

Ransom,[119] opposite Fredericksburg, while R. H. Anderson occupied the heights on the extreme left, and extending to Beck's Island at a bend of the Rappahannock. Lee's artillery was judiciously massed in front of Fredericksburg, so that it could sweep all approaches from the lower valleys.[120]

At nine o'clock on the morning of the 13th, and veiled by a thick fog, the Federal army under General Franklin advanced boldly against the right wing of the Confederates. General Meade's division went in first, and this was followed by Gibbon's,[121] Birney's, Sickles's, Doubleday's and Newton's[122] corps. Meade resolutely charged the line of Hill's Division, and succeeded in putting it to the rout. After a protracted struggle and assistance coming to Hill, that attack was repulsed, although the fight was well maintained all day on the Federal left.[123] This attack was intended by Burnside as a feint to draw Lee's troops from his centre and left; but it had not that result, as it was very strongly supported by three of the corps detached for that purpose. Neither had the general any proper conception of the extent and preparation for defence at Lee's central position. In the meantime, several detachments of troops were passed over the bridges at Fredericksburg, and massed in front of the Confederate left wing held by General Longstreet's corps. About eleven o'clock, General Sumner was ordered to move his troops from Fredericksburg to attack the heights in front. He had selected the corps of French and Hancock for that purpose.[124] These were intended to form the front column, assisted by a part of Hooker's command.

Meanwhile General Lee had ridden early in the morning, and by convenient roads in the rere of his position, going from one end of his line to the other, to see that every disposition of his troops had been secured. Afterwards, he selected a hill south-east from Fredericksburg, and overlooking the whole field of battle. There taking his station during the day, he was able to watch and direct every movement. The artillery was distributed in the most eligible positions, so as to command the open ground in front.[125] On the heights above there was a sharp eminence, surmounted by a high ground, known as Marye's Estate. A

[119] Robert Ransom was born in North Carolina, about 1830. See *ibid.*, p. 181.

[120] These various positions are very distinctly shown on a Map of the Battle of Fredericksburg, attached to "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. x., pp. 208, 209.

[121] John Gibbon was born near Holmesburg Pa., April 20th 1827. He had served in the Mexican War. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. ii., p. 635. lxxvii., pp. 246 to 248.

[122] John Newton was born in Norfolk Va., Aug. 24th 1823. See *ibid.*, Vol. iv., p. 508.

[123] See Le Comte de Paris' "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome iv., Liv. iii., chap. ii., pp. 402 to 411.

[124] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. xi., chap. lviii., p. 472.

[125] See Jefferson Davis' "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol ii., Part iv., chap. xxxvii., p. 354.

deep ravine called Hazel Run, with a high road above it, had been fenced by stone walls, covering the flank towards the east, and these defences were carried round in front of the Confederate batteries, McLawe's and Ransom's divisions supporting them. This was the key of the enemy's position, and it had been so strengthened by the engineers that it was actually impregnable.

Under their brave leader General Thomas Francis Meagher, the Irish regiments in front had formed for the assault in Hancock's division. About twelve o'clock the battle became general. Sumner sent forward the divisions of French and Hancock as his storming column. Under a withering fire of artillery and musketry, and without any shelter, their troops marched in the open, so that when they came near the hill's crest, and to within about twenty-five paces of the stone wall. Hancock's division had lost 2,000 men, and French's 1,200. After this terrible slaughter, only a few were left to attempt that assault. Against the impregnable position of Marye's Estate, General Meagher led his troops; but they advanced under a murderous fire of grape and canister to the first fence, which they gained and passed. The enemy then fell back behind his second line of breastworks. The Irish Brigade still rushed on to the second fence, within sixty yards of the rebel batteries, where they were met by a most disastrous enfilade from infantry and artillery securely posted. Their regiments were broken before it, and still the advance was made over piles of dead bodies; an oblique flanking fire adding to their destruction.[126] On this day, the Irish Brigade performed prodigies of valour, while the greatest coolness and bravery were displayed by General Meagher. In a very short time, two-thirds of their officers and men lay on that bloody field.[127] Sturgis's second division of the Ninth Army corps[128] exhibited like bravery, and shared a similar

[126] Colonel C. C. Sanders of the 24th Georgia Regiment who fought on the Confederate side, and who was an eye-witness of this assault against Cobb's and Kershaw's Brigades of McLaw's Division,—one fourth of whom he estimates to have been Irishmen or of Irish extraction —thus describes the scene he witnessed. "In our immediate front one could walk on the dead for hundreds of yards. We were pained to see the noble fellows coming up in steady columns to be mowed down before our lines of solid flames of fire from our entrenched position behind the rock wall and the terrible fire from the Washington Artillery on Marye's Hill, just in our rear and commanding every inch of approach. The Irish Brigade would receive our well-directed fire steady and firm, and when great gaps were cut through their ranks by the artillery would reform under the incessant fire, come again, sink down and rise again, trample the dead and wounded under foot, and press the stone wall of liquid fire, then recede a few feet and come again, like an avalanche into the very jaws of death, until strength and endurance failed, having been forced back by shell and the deadly minnie-ball that no human being could withstand. The field of battle ran great streams of blood, and the immortal Irish Brigade recoiled before the living wall of fire in glory."

[127] See Captain D. P. Conyngham's "Irish Brigade and its Campaigns," chap. xvi., pp. 165 to 174.

[128] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. v., p. 734.

fate; General Carroll then came up, and the fire redoubled; but all were obliged to fall back, without having effected any result.[129]

Meantime some of Hooker's troops had been withdrawn for other services, when an order came from General Burnside to move what remained with him against those heights. A witness to what had occurred there, Hooker remonstrated at first and urged the impracticability of carrying them, but the order was reiterated. He thereupon obeyed it, by bringing forward and bravely leading his Fifth corps under General Daniel Butterfield,[130] the division commanders being Griffin,[131] Sykes[132] and Humphreys.[133] The latter commanded two brigades about 4,500 strong. When near the enemy's works, they were formed for a charge with fixed bayonets, and led by Humphreys and Tyler.[134] Officers and men were falling rapidly, so that when close to the wall, and after losing more than 1,000 men in the course of a very few minutes, they were all obliged to retreat in face of the enemy.[135] Darkness then set in, and although some partial successes had been achieved on the Federal left, in the earlier part of the day; yet because the advance of General Meade had not been well supported, his troops were driven back from certain heights they had already captured. On that side, the Confederate divisions commanded by General Jackson lost in killed and wounded 3,315 men.[136] Altogether, General Lee reported his casualities at about 1,800 in killed and wounded.[137] However, his medical director afterwards officially stated, that the total number amounted to 4,201. The Federal loss was estimated at 13,771 in killed, wounded and missing;[138] but a more accurate return has brought the aggregate to 23,537.[139]

On the following day, General Burnside wished to renew the attack; but his subordinate generals dissuaded him from such an attempt, as the troops were already demoralised so by their previous repulse. All that

[129] See Le Comte de Paris, "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome iv., Liv. iii., chap. ii., pp. 414 to 419.

[130] This brave man had previously written a book, "Camp and Out-Post Duty for Infantry," which was published at New York in 1862, 18mo.

[131] Simon Goodell Griffin was born in Nelson Co. N. H., August 9th 1824. He had previous to this served with marked gallantry in several other engagements. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. ii., p. 755.

[132] George Sykes had served bravely in many of the previous battles. See *ibid.*, Vol. vi., p. 14.

[133] He commanded a division of new troops in the Fifth Corps. See *ibid.*, Vol. iii., p. 314.

[134] Erastus B. Tyler was born in West Bloomfield Ontario Co., N.Y., April 24th 1822. He was wounded in this battle. See *ibid.*, Vol. vi., p. 193.

[135] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. x., pp. 206 to 208.

[136] See Le Comte de Paris' "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome iv., Liv. iii., chap. ii., pp. 424 to 427.

[137] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. ii., chap. x., p. 254.

[138] See "Report of the Committee of Inquiry into the Conduct of the War."

[139] See "War Report," Vol. xxi., p. 314.

Sunday, the Federal dead and wounded lay in front of the Confederate lines, Burnside refusing to acknowledge his defeat by sending a flag of truce; while Lee, resolving to maintain his privilege as victor, refused those terms proposed by the subordinate generals of the advanced positions. However on Monday, most of the wounded were removed. On the 14th no attack was made, although one seems to have been anticipated by General Lee.[140] Nor did the latter find himself in a position to follow up his victory. The Federal army, under cover of darkness and a storm coming on from the south, was conveyed across the river during the night;[141] and on the morning of the 16th, the Confederates were surprised to find the plain abandoned and Fredericksburg unoccupied, except by the wounded too badly injured to bear removal.[142] In his report of this battle on the 17th December, General Burnside assumed entire responsibility for those disasters, while giving generous praise to his officers and men. This frank admission raised him greatly in public estimation, and even brought him encouraging letters from General Halleck and the Administration. But far different were the criticisms and opinions of his subordinate officers and men; for he still entertained the desire to make another forward movement, and they had little confidence in his ability to render it successful. Nor would it be approved by the Government. Wherefore during several months succeeding, the Federal and Confederate armies continued to watch each other from opposite sides of the Rappahannock, without any important manœuvre taking place.[143]

Meantime at the seat of war in the west, Van Dorn, who kept the field with a large force of Confederate Texan cavalry, continued to get between Grant and his base of supplies, which were chiefly at Holly Springs. There, a force of cavalry and infantry was surprised and captured on the 19th of December. Then, stores of all kinds were burned; the railway was torn up, and a magazine exploded, causing the demolition of a great part of the town. Having completed this destruction, Van Dorn evacuated that place and retreated.[144] After

[140] See Le Comte de Paris' "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome iv., Liv. iii., chap. ii., p. 427.

[141] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. xi., chap. lviii., p. 474.

[142] Most interesting and detailed particulars of the last charge at Fredericksburg, and the withdrawal of the Federal troops over the Rappahannock, under the able supervision of General Daniel Butterfield, on the morning of the 16th of December, are given in a paper written by Colonel Edward Hill, and published in "Proceedings of the Third Brigade Association, First Army Corps, Army of the Potomac," &c., pp. 30 to 45. Washington, 21st September 1892. New York: 1893, 8vo.

[143] On the last day of 1862, the return of Lee's army gave the aggregate present as 91,093, and the aggregate present and absent at 152,843; while in that of Burnside's, on the same day, the aggregate present was 185,386, and the aggregate present and absent 267,379. See the "War Reports," Vol. xxi., pp. 924, 1082.

[144] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. ii., chap. xi., p. 227.

losing his supplies, Grant was obliged to concentrate his forces, and thus to check an onward march into the State of Mississippi.

The position and works occupied by the Confederates on the heights near Vicksburg were almost impregnable; nevertheless, General Sherman resolved on assaulting them.[145] The conjoined attack on the batteries took place on the 29th of December. General Frank P. Blair, jun.,[146] and John F. De Courcy led the foremost brigades. Owing to some mistake, and notwithstanding their heroic efforts under a tremendous fire, those assaults were not simultaneous on the part of the Federals.[147] Their right was repulsed, and not well supported by the centre division; so that a failure to carry the heights resulted, with a great loss to the Federals in killed and wounded.[148] As night closed in rain fell in torrents, and those low marshy grounds they occupied became impassable. The troops then returned to Milliken's Bend. Shortly afterwards, Sherman was superseded in the command, which was transferred to McClernand.[149] However, the forces were divided into two corps, respectively under the leadership of Sherman and Morgan,[150] and these were called the Army of the Mississippi. The failure of Sherman before Vicksburg further paralysed Grant's movements. Information having been received, that he could not be expected to join them, Sherman's troops were placed on board the fleet. On the 10th of January 1863, having assaulted Fort Hindman at the town of Arkansas Post forty miles up the Arkansas River, on their return to Memphis the Federals captured 5,000 prisoners.[151] However, that proved to be a very slight achievement, for the great results that had been at first anticipated.

Another signal success rewarded the enterprise of General Magruder, who had been appointed to the Confederate command in the State of

[145] See "Memoirs of W. T. Sherman," by Himself, Vol. i., p. 292.

[146] He was born in Lexington Ky., Feb. 19th 1821. He became Major-General of Volunteers Nov. 23rd 1862. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. i., p. 280.

[147] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. x., chap. li., pp. 323, 324.

[148] Blair's brigade, out of about 1,800 men marched into action, lost 603 in killed and wounded and missing; De Courcy's brigade even more (724); the total casualties of Sherman's force being 1776.—"Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. v., p. 134.

[149] General John Alexander McClernand was born in Breckenridge County Ky., May 30th 1812. See "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 651.

[150] George Washington Morgan was born in Washington Co. Pa., Sept. 20th 1820. He had previously assisted the Texans in their Rebellion against Mexico, and afterwards he served in the Mexican War. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iv., p. 399.

[151] They also took 17 guns, 3,000 small arms and a large quantity of stores, with a loss of 977 men. Behind this, the Confederates kept several steam-boats to sally forth on the Mississippi, so as to interrupt the Federal line of supply. See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. x., chap. li., pp. 325, 326.

Texas.[152] Having collected artillery at Houston, he marched against Galveston, then occupied by a detachment of Federal troops, and by a small blockading squadron. For purposes of attack, the Confederates had improvised two steam packets with bulwarks of cotton bales, behind which armed volunteers took shelter. Early on the 1st of January 1863, by a simultaneous attack on the town, it was recaptured, and the garrison surrendered as prisoners of war. The Federal Flagship Westfield grounded in the bay, and she was then blown up by her captain; but as the explosion occurred prematurely, he and several of his crew perished. This daring attack greatly contributed to the general rejoicing in the Confederacy, at that particular period.[153] However, when news of this exploit reached New Orleans, Admiral Farragut sent vessels to re-establish the blockade.[154]

CHAPTER XXXI.

Negro Emancipation—Confederate Government—General Hooker succeeds General Burnside in Command of the Army of the Potomac—Federal Conscription Bill—Factious Proceedings in Ohio—Treasonable Societies—Siege of Charleston—The Battle of Chancellorsville—General Banks in Louisiana—Admission of West Virginia into the United States.

THE opening of a new year had been regarded with great expectancy on both sides, as a measure of vital importance was then anticipated. In accordance with a proclamation issued on September 22nd 1862, the President designated Arkansas, Texas, Mississippi, Alabama, Florida, Georgia, North and South Carolina, with portions of Louisiana and Virginia, as being in rebellion.[1] However, Delaware, Maryland, Kentucky, Tennesee and Missouri, with certain districts of Virginia and Louisiana, were exempted from its provisions. He decreed by proclamation on the 1st of January 1863, that all slaves, within those States or parts of States as designated, are and henceforward shall be free.[2] This was the initial blow given to slavery, but it still required to be rendered more complete. Even before the publication of the President's proclamation, several negro slaves had escaped from their masters, and those were encouraged by some of the Federal Generals to enter as soldiers in their respective regiments. From the beginning of this year, thousands of those liberated negroes volunteered, and were admitted to bear arms in the northern military service.

[152] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. ii., chap. xi., pp. 282, 283.

[153] Magruder's loss in this achievement was only 26 killed and 117 wounded

[154] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xvii., chap. lxxvii., pp. 246 to 248.

[1] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. ii., chap. xii., p. 288.

[2] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. xiii., chap. lxiv., pp. 613, 614.

For some time during the winter and spring of 1863, the operations of war on a wide scale had been intermitted on both sides in the east. However, there were occasional skirmishes between the opposing armies, then gathering strength for a renewal of the great contest. Thus in January 1863, Brigadier-General Joseph B. Carr[3] commanded an expedition, that severed communications of the enemy at Rappahannock Bridge. Much about that time, an irregular force under John Singleton Mosby[4] had crossed the Rappahannock river, and these partisan rangers did much damage, by destroying supply-trains and by cutting communications in the rear of the Federal army.[5]

Early in the same year, General John Sappington Marmaduke[6] entered South-Western Missouri, having from 4,000 to 6,000 men under his command, and with a view of capturing Springfield, where stores for the Federal army of Arkansas had been collected.[7] After some ineffective attempts on that place, which was defended by about 1,000 troops, on the 8th January he withdrew under cover of night. During that attack, the Federals lost 164 men.[8] However, all danger was not removed from Missouri. Towards the end of April, General John M'Neil[9] learned that the Confederates were threatening Cape Girordeau. He succeeded in occupying that place, and in reinforcing its garrison, before Marmaduke arrived. The latter demanded its surrender, but this was indignantly refused. Whereupon, the invading leaders retired towards the Arkansas frontier, M'Neil following, but not pressing the pursuit.[10]

When Jefferson Davis had been inaugurated as President of the Provisional Congress, he selected for his cabinet, Robert Toombs[11] of Georgia

[3] He was born at Albany N.Y., in 1828, and he was of Irish descent. He fought with conspicuous bravery at many of the great battles that followed this exploit. For meritorious services during the war, he was brevetted Major-General, June 1st 1865.

[4] He was born in Powhattan County Va., December 6th 1833, and he was distinguished for many daring exploits, having received several bullet wounds during the war. On the 21st of April 1865, Mosby disbanded his partisans; and afterwards, he laboured earnestly to restore tranquillity in the South. He published "War Reminiscences," Boston, 1887.

[5] See John Scott's "Partisan Life with Mosby," London, 1867, 8vo., and John Marshall Crawford's "Mosby and his Men," New York, 1867, 12mo.

[6] He was born near Arrow Rock Mo., in 1833. See "Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iv., pp. 211, 212.

[7] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. ii., chap. xiv., p. 368.

[8] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xvii., chap. lxxvii., pp. 252, 253.

[9] He was born in Halifax N.S., of Irish parentage, and he went to St. Louis Mo., where he joined the National Army under General Nathaniel Lyon, with the rank of Colonel. In 1862, he became Brigadier-General and soon cleared north-east Missouri from bands of troublesome guerillas.

[10] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. ii., chap. xiv., pp. 368, 369.

[11] He was born in Georgia 1810. He was a distinguished lawyer, and in 1844, he was elected to Congress

as Secretary of State, Leroy P. Walker[12] of Alabama as Secretary of War, Stephen R. Mallory[13] of Florida as Secretary of the Navy, Charles Gustavus Memminger[14] of South Carolina as Secretary of the Treasury, Judah Peter Benjamin[15] of Louisiana as Attorney-General, and John Henninger Reagan[16] of Texas as Postmaster-General. From the very beginning of the war, Davis was the supreme legislator of the Confederacy; while his cabinet,[17] and even the Permanent Congress of Senators and Representatives, were ready to pass whatever laws were framed in his office. After their flight from Richmond on the approach of M'Clellan's army, public respect for that body began to decline. The proceedings of the members were conducted with little attention to ceremony, and during their sittings even, several breaches of decorum took place.[18] Most of the war provisions and public business was transacted in secret session.[19]

The matter of finance was one that caused great anxiety and embarrassment in the Confederacy; but so long as a hope remained for European intervention, and for the export of cotton from the South, some credit attached to the issue of Treasury Notes which were circulated, with bonds professing to return a stated interest for the holders. Moreover, the leaders indulged in the delusion, that peace on their own terms of separate autonomy must become popular both in the Northern and Southern States. Within the Confederacy, as within the Union, were numbers who dissented from the policy and measures of their respective Governments; yet in the former, it was not deemed safe or expedient to express such dissent in public; whereas in the latter, freedom of speech and of action was allowed to a degree, often bordering on defiance, if not on treason, against the administration.

On the 27th of January, General Burnside resigned his command in the Army of the Potomac, then in a very disorganized condition. He was succeeded by General Joseph Hooker, who had still under his immediate command an army of 120,000 infantry and artillery, 13,000

as a State-rights Whig. Afterwards he became a U. S. Senator. He resigned in 1861, and in the Confederate States Convention he warmly advocated secession.

[12] Born in 1817 in Alabama, he became Speaker of the House of Representatives in that State.

[13] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 661.

[14] See *ibid.*, p. 699.

[15] See *ibid.*, Vol. i., p. 495.

[16] Born in Sevier Co. Tenn., in 1818, on the 8th of October. He became a member of Congress in 1856, and voted for secession in 1861. He was Irish by descent. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American biography," Vol. v., pp. 201, 202.

[17] For portraits of the several members, and for Jefferson Davis' estimate of their respective characters and abilities, the reader is referred to "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. i., Part iii., chap. vi., pp. 241 to 243.

[18] Many of these scenes were suppressed in the Richmond newspapers. See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xx., chap. lxxxiv., pp. 447 to 449.

[19] Some of these Acts, however, are to be found in the "Statutes at Large of the Provisional Government, Confederate States of America," printed at Richmond

cavalry, and 400 guns, on the north bank of the Rappahannock. These he now formed into seven corps. The first he placed under command of Reynolds, the second under Couch, the third under Sickles, the fifth under Meade, the sixth under Sedgwick, the eleventh under Howard, and the twelfth under Slocum. On the opposite side of the river was General Lee's army, 62,000 strong, the cavalry numbering 3,000, and all placed within supporting distances, covering a line of twenty-five miles.[20]

At the end of February, and in the beginning of March, the Federal Congress passed the Conscription Bill. This gave a power to the President to call out for military service all able-bodied men between the ages of eighteen and forty-five; but, persons who paid 300 dols. obtained exemption. As troubles had been anticipated regarding the enforcement of this measure, Congress also passed an Ordinance to indemnify the President for any requisite suspension of the *Habeas Corpus* Act. On the 24th of March, General Burnside arrived at Cincinnati, there to fix his headquarters, and to take command in the department of the Ohio. His formal appointment took place on the day succeeding.

On the 10th of April following, the President of the Confederate States issued a Manifesto warning his countrymen against engaging too much in the culture of cotton, but rather to cultivate grain and roots for the food of man and beast.[21] At this time cotton, which was the great staple product of the South, had accumulated to a large extent on the various plantations; nor was it found possible to export any considerable quantity, so closely was the blockade maintained along the whole coast line. Meantime, the guaranties inscribed in their new Constitution were not respected by the Confederate government; and for any manifestation of Unionist sentiments in their power to repress, summary and severe punishments were inflicted, even before the *Habeas Corpus* was suspended in 1864. At that time, likewise, their Congressional vote legalised those acts that had preceded its adoption.[22]

When General Burnside went to Cincinnati, bitter opposition to the prosecution of the war and to the Government had widely spread; while Clement L. Vallandigham,[23] who for several years had been a Member of Congress from Ohio, was known to be most eloquent and

[20] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sec. xv., chap. lxix., pp. 106, 107.

[21] See Joseph Irving's "Annals of our Time," p. 646.

[22] See M. Le Comte de Paris' "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amerique," Tome iv., Liv. i., chap. iii., p. 617.

[23] From the very beginning of the war, he had declared that the several States of the Union were the sole judges regarding the sufficiency of cause for and justice of Secession. After the election of Mr. Lincoln, he had proposed in February to amend the Constitution, by dividing the Union into four sections, and by giving to each section a veto on the passage of any law, or on the election of Presidents or Vice-Presidents, while allowing to each State secession on certain specified terms. He was born in Lisbon, Columbiana Co. Ohio, in 1820. See an account of him in Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. vi., pp. 227, 228.

energetic in denouncing the measures of administration, and in exciting the public mind particularly against the Conscription Act. On the 13th of April, General Burnside issued a very stringent order enumerating acts that he deemed treasonable, and tending to serve the enemies of the country, while he declared, that persons guilty of such acts should be arrested and tried as spies or traitors, and if convicted, that they should suffer death. Moreover he announced, that the habit of declaring sympathy with the Secessionists would not be allowed in his department, and that persons committing such offences should at once be arrested, "with a view to being tried as above stated, or sent beyond our lines into the lines of their friends." The order at once excited a most furious denunciation, especially on the part of those, who owing to their acts or well-ascertained sympathies felt themselves threatened by it. A public meeting was held at Mount Vernon Ohio, on the 1st of May, and there Vallandigham inveighed with peculiar bitterness against the war and the President. More particularly, he denounced General Burnside's order as a base usurpation of arbitrary power. For this action he was arrested, and brought before a military tribunal on the 6th, tried, and found guilty. He was sentenced to close confinement in some fortress of the United States. From that trial, an appeal was taken to the United States Circuit Court in Cincinnati; but his sentence was affirmed by the Judge, who denied the motion for a writ of *Habeas Corpus*.[24] Although this transaction took the President and his Cabinet by surprise, yet they resolved to sustain General Burnside's course. However the sentence was commuted to deportation within the enemy's lines; and accordingly, on the 25th of May the culprit was delivered up to the Confederates near Murfreesboro. Then Vallandigham affected to protest formally, that he was within their lines by force, and against his will, while he surrendered as a prisoner of war. In case of his return to the Federals, it was ordered that he be arrested and kept in close custody for the term specified in his sentence.[25]

The arrest and sentence of that popular demagogue excited a profound sensation throughout the North and South. In the former, his case was discussed with the greatest earnestness, and even violence, in the Democratic newspapers, as almost in a multitude of pamphlets and leading articles, and at public meetings. The arguments preferred against Government were, that it was a despotic and an unconstitutional act in their free country, as also one endangering the rights and liberties of individuals and of citizens. Governor Seymour of New York was especially vehement in his condemnation.[26] However, in an able letter, the President defended his conduct, and proved how malignant and baseless were the censures levelled against his administration.[27] The

[24] The several pleadings are to be found in the published "Trial of Hon. C. L. Vallandigham."

[25] See M'Pherson's "History of the Rebellion," p. 162.

[26] See the "Annual Cyclopædia of 1863," p. 689.

[27] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. xii., pp. 343 to 349.

divided state of feeling on this subject in the North excited general rejoicing in the South. The Governor in Richmond thought it promised them a counter-revolution, in favour of their cause; while some of the Confederate generals built upon it the rosiest hopes for future campaigns. The real motives of Vallandigham had been revealed, while he remained with the Confederates; and in a conversation he stated, that if they could only hold out for that year, the Peace Party of the North should sweep the Lincoln dynasty out of political existence, while he held the idea, that the Union should be reconstructed under Democratic rules.[28] The spirit of party was still rife in the North Western States, and to gratify its resentment against the government, various devices were adopted by seditious leaders to deceive the public and to foster discontent.

When the Democratic Convention of Ohio met at Columbus, on the 11th of June, the Peace Party dominated all their proceedings, and hoping to profit by the public excitement, they called upon the President to restore Mr. Vallandigham to his home in Ohio. Moreover, they nominated him by acclamation, as the most suitable candidate for the office of State Governor. Meanwhile, the Union party, meeting in like manner at Columbus, nominated John Brough[29] a War Democrat, pledging themselves to support the President, and vigorously to prosecute the war. Vallandigham, who had escaped to Canada, wrote his thanks to his friends in Ohio.[30] However, when the issue was thus knit, at the coming election Vallandigham was defeated by the unprecedented majority of 101,000 votes.[31] Foiled in their attempts to promote sedition on public platforms and through the press, the Copperheads began to organize secret societies, especially in the States of Indiania, Ohio and Illinois, as also in the border States of Kentucky and Missouri. Their organization was framed in a military phraseology.[32] Their objects seemed to be the evasion of justice and governmental restraint in resisting the laws, and the embarrassing in every way the administration, by communicating information to rebels in arms, and by inflicting serious damage on the lives and property of many Unionists. Several members of the order enlisted for the express purpose of alarming those in arms, and of inciting men to desert their

[28] See John B Jones, "A Rebel War Clerk's Diary," Vol. i., pp. 357, 358.

[29] He was born in Marietta, Ohio, in 1811. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. i., p. 391.

[30] See Moore's "Rebellion Record," Vol. vii., Documents, pp. 438, 439.

[31] Of these 62,000 were cast in the State, and 39,000 by the troops in the field. In June 1864, Vallandigham returned considerably discredited to the United States, but the President declined to take any notice of his presence. See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. xii., pp. 328 to 359.

[32] Thus they were known under various designations, such as "Knights of the Golden Circle," "The Order of American Knights," "The Order of the Star," and "The Sons of Liberty." Their State Lodges were commanded by major-generals, the Congressional districts by brigadiers, the counties by colonels, and the townships by captains.

respective regiments, while others offered the most violent opposition to conscription and enrolment. However, the government had taken measures to be apprised of all their movements;[33] and through their agents, the fullest information and evidence had been obtained to arrest any of the ring-leaders when necessary,[34] or to guard against any local disturbance. Desperate Southern emissaries, as likewise their aiders and abettors in the British provinces[35] caused most trouble.

The Federal Government had planned an attack on Charleston, under the direction of Admiral Samuel Francis Dupont,[36] with a large number of ships and of iron-clads. These were destined to rendezvous opposite Charleston, while their base of supplies was at Port Royal. During the month of September 1862, General Beauregard had been appointed to relieve General Pemberton from duty in South Carolina and Georgia.[37] He was then transferred to the Department of the Mississippi; and General Beauregard began to erect forts and prepare for expected attacks from the Federals.[38] Before the close of that year, a large part of the Atlantic southern coast had been recovered from the Confederacy.[39] On its way to join Dupont's fleet before Charleston, the famous Monitor encountered a strong gale and foundered at sea, when several of her crew likewise perished.[40]

The blockade along the Atlantic sea-board had been maintained with great energy and efficiency: nevertheless, on the 31st of January 1863, two of the Confederate vessels, called the Palmetto State and the Chicora sailed out from Charleston early in the morning, and under cover of a thick haze disabled two of the Federal ships. The Confederate vessels were soon attacked by the Housatanic, and driven back to

[33] The rules and objects of those so-called secret oath-bound societies are fully revealed in a Report of the Judge Advocate-General, on the 8th October, 1864.

[34] See Benn Pitman's "Treason Trials at Indianapolis, disclosing the Plans of establishing a North-Western Confederacy." Cincinnati, 1865, 8vo.

[35] Among these were two Canadians, J. C. Braine and H. A. Parr, who enlisted a dozen British subjects, and these took passage on board the United States merchant steamer Chesapeake at New York, on December 5th 1863. That vessel they seized and brought into the Bay of Fundy, where they delivered her into the hands of a man calling himself Captain Parker of the Confederate navy, who came out in a pilot-boat to meet them. Afterwards, his real name was found to be Vernon Locke, and he was an Englishman. While the Chesapeake lay in Sambro Harbour, Nova Scotia, she was recaptured by the United States gunboat Ella and Annie. However, she was returned with her pirates to British jurisdiction, and finally the vessel was restored to her rightful owners, while the captors were allowed to escape.

[36] He was born at Bergin Point, N.J., September 27th 1803. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. ii., pp. 265, 866.

[37] See Alfred Roman's "Military Operations of General Beauregard," Vol. ii., chap. xxvi., pp. 2 to 10.

[38] See *Ibid.*, chap. xxvii., pp. 20 to 34, and chap. xxviii., pp. 35 to 54.

[39] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. xii., chap. lix., p. 497.

[40] See M. Le Comte de Paris, "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amerique," Tome iv., Liv., iv, chap. i., pp. 528 to 530.

the protection of their forts.[41] Meanwhile, the Confederate war-steamer Nashville had grounded near the mouth of the Ogeechee River, when disregarding the discharges from Fort M'Alister the Federal iron-clad Montauk approached and set her on fire. Soon afterwards, a trial of force took place between some of the Federal iron-clads and that Fort, protected by obstructions in the Ogeechee River. At long range, these vessels continued a bombardment for the whole day, and the Fort guns replied; but little injury was inflicted on either side, and this attack only proved a test trial between the ships and the shore batteries.

A large number of iron-clads had collected at Port Royal early this year; and during the month of March, about one hundred vessels of that fleet had been transferred to North Edisto River. The Admiral had waited for the spring-tides to enable the Ironsides, the largest of his iron-clads, to cross without risk the bar at the mouth of Charleston Harbour. At dawn on the 6th of April, the fleet started on its destination. In three hours it lay off the bar, and steps were then taken to buoy out the main channel.[42] Having crossed the bar, the ships took up a position about a mile from shore in the main channel, and along the line of Morris Island,[43] south-east from the city. The wooden vessels remained without the bar. On the 7th of April, a little after 2 p.m., the Monitors advanced for action to attack Fort Sumter and other batteries around the harbour approaches. After a furious cannonade between the forts and the iron-clad ships, the latter, having withstood the attack for two hours and a half,[44] were obliged to draw from range of the concentrated fire directed against them. Several of the ships were very considerably damaged, while many of their crews were killed and wounded. In the forts, but two death casualties had occurred.[45] The Admiral and naval officers were unanimous in an expression of opinion, that the armour-plated vessels were in no measure able to assail the forts and land defences with any prospect of success. Therefore it was resolved, that their operations for the present should be restricted to a complete blockade of the harbour.[46]

Meantime, Hooker had been watching for a favourable opportunity to advance upon the Confederate capital. Without exposing Washington or Harper's Ferry, the Federal general resolved on a plan of operations, so that while Sedgwick's forces should cross below Fredericksburg,

[41] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. iii., pp. 58, 59.

[42] A good Map of the Defences around Charleston City and Harbour, 1862-'5, may be seen in Alfred Roman's "Military Operations of General Beauregard," Vol. ii., chap. xxx., p. 80.

[43] See Lieutenant Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American Civil War, from 1861 to 1865," Vol. ii., chap. xxii., pp. 298, 299.

[44] See Alfred Roman's "Military Operations of General Beauregard," Vol. ii., chap. xxx, pp. 67 to 68.

[45] See Lieut.-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. ii., chap. xii., pp. 202, 203.

[46] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xvi., chap. lxxii., pp. 164, 165.

Stoneman with his cavalry was to move round to the right, and higher up on the river, to intercept Lee's communications with Richmond. It was known in February, that two divisions of Longstreet's corps had been detached for service south of the James' River. Excepting a cavalry engagement near Kelly's Ford, on the 17th of March, nothing of interest transpired during this period of inactivity.[47]

Under General Hooker, the Federal army crossed the Rappahannock to turn the position of Lee. Meade's, Howard's and Slocum's corps moved from the north to the south bank, at Kelly's Ford. On the 27th and 28th of April, they crossed west from Fredericksburg, and afterwards they passed the Rapidan. On the 30th, the army had marched to Chancellorsville. On May 1st and 2nd, having been joined by Sickles and Howard with 70,000 or 80,000 men, Hooker advanced towards Lee, but afterwards ordered his troops to take a position at Chancellorsville.[48] Meantime, General Lee had moved the main body of his army through broken and wooded grounds, so as to confront the Federals. While Lee presented some hostile demonstrations in front, he directed General Jackson, with his corps of 26,000 troops to make a rapid flanking march round by the left. However, this was observed by General Sickles, who attacked suddenly a portion of the rear-guard; but, he could not obtain sufficent reinforcements to prevent Jackson from falling with the main body upon Howard's corps. This was taken by surprise about 6 o'clock in the evening of the 2nd. His regiments formed the right wing of the Federal army, but they were too distantly scattered and in no defensive position. All at once, Jackson's troops, emerging from the covert of woods, drove them back upon the centre with great slaughter and panic, while effecting a capture of guns and small arms. At that time, General Alfred Pleasonton[49] of the cavalry ordered a successful charge of the 8th Pennsylvania regiment, and this checked Jackson's advance. However, Major Peter Keenan, who saved the entire army from destruction, was instantly killed with other officers, and their regiment was soon overwhelmed.[50] Twenty-two guns stationed at Hazel Grove were then brought into position; when these maintained a fire so intense and destructive, that Jackson's lines made no great progress until nightfall.[51]

The Federal centre had now changed front, and driving back the Confederates also stopped the fugitives.[52] To replace Howard's troops,

[47] See Jefferson Davis' "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii. Part iv., chap. xxxvii., p. 357.

[48] This was a large brick building which was so called, and it had been used as a tavern. See the "Annual Register for the Year 1863," Part i., Foreign History, chap. vi., p. 217.

[49] Born in Washington 1824.

[50] He was born of poor Irish parents in Livingston co., N.Y., November 9th 1834, and the summer of 1861, he aided in recruiting the 8th Pennsylvanian Cavalry Regiment, in which he became captain, August 19th. On the 2nd of May, he had command of his regiment, which numbered fewer than 500 men. See "Reports of the Committee on the Conduct of the War," Part i., pp. 26, *et seq.* 1865.

[51] See "Battles and Leaders," Vol. iii., pp. 178 to 188.

[52] See Samuel Penniman Bates's "Battle of Chancellorsville," 1882,

Sickles' and Berry's were extemporised. Meanwhile, Reynold's corps had come from Fredericksburg, and it joined Hooker during the night. As General Jackson with his staff was returning late in the evening to quarters, the party had been mistaken for a body of the enemy, and by some of the Confederates he was fired upon and mortally wounded.[53] Afterwards, General A. P Hill renewed the attack, but in turn, he was wounded and repulsed. General Stuart was then temporarily appointed to the command of General Jackson's troops. While the flank attack had thus been made on Howard, General Lee was engaging Hooker in front, with Anderson's and M'Lawes' divisions. A fire broke out in the woods near the battlefield, and it spread rapidly through the dry leaves The flames unfortunately enveloped the dead and dying, who could not then be removed from where they lay.[54]

During that night, an attack was made on Stuart's quarter by Birney, who recovered some of the guns taken from Howard's corps. While this occurred, Hooker had been engaged in re-arranging and converging his lines in a position covering the United States Ford on the Rappahannock River. Intrenchments were thrown up on the front, while the flanks were protected by the high grounds over two small creeks, running towards the larger stream. Early on Sunday the 3rd, placing thirty of his guns in Hazel grove, Stuart advanced to storm Sickles' lines in front. His position was then captured, but in turn it was re-taken. It so happened, that General Hooker was stunned by the fall of a pillar on the verandah of Chancellorsville House, and which had been struck by a cannon ball. For a long time he was left senseless, and at this critical moment, Couch who ought to have assumed command did nothing.[55] Meanwhile, Sickles was pressing reinforcements. His ammunition being then exhausted, he was obliged to withdraw his troops. About 10 o'clock, a.m., with Anderson's and M'Lawes' and Stuart's divisions, Chancellorsville was attacked and taken, while a great number of the Federals were killed, wounded and made prisoners. The main body was then obliged to retire to its defensive position, resting on the Rapidan and Rappahannock.

Early on that morning, General Sedgwick attacked at Fredericksburg with about 30,000 troops, and had even stormed the central position at Marye's Heights. Just about to make a final attack on Hooker's new position, Lee learned that the works in his rear had been carried; he then despatched four brigades of Anderson and M'Lawes to reinforce Brigadier-General Barksdale,[56] and to check the advance of Sedgwick.

8vo. Also, General Abner Doubleday's "Chancellorsville and Gettysburg," New York, 1882, 12mo.

[53] After this accident, on the 10th of May, he died in hospital. See Joseph Irving's "Annals of our Time," p. 491.

[54] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xv., chap. lxix., pp. 107 to 116.

[55] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. iv., p. 104.

[56] He was born in Rutherford Co., Tenn. in 1821, and when secession took place he became colonel of the 13th regiment of Mississippi volunteers, and took part in the Virginia campaign. He rose to the rank of Brigadier in the Confederate service.

They encountered him near Salem Church, and a brisk engagement ensued; but, night now coming on put an end to that conflict, both parties holding their respective positions. While that attack took place, Lee kept up a furious cannonade in front of Hooker's lines,[57] and, after a long day's battle, he compelled the Federals to keep within their entrenchments. On Monday morning May 4th, Sedgwick informed Hooker, that large masses of the enemy were bearing down on him from the right to his left, and asked if reinforcements could be sent to his aid. The reply was, that no support must be expected, as it was feared Lee was about to renew the attack in force. However, this intention was prevented by a rainstorm that occurred, and which delayed the movement of artillery.

On that day, the heights on the south side of the Rappahannock were re-taken by the Confederates; and, General Sedgwick's forces retired to Banks's Ford, when about 6 p.m. an attack was made on them, but it was successfully resisted. During the night, however, and while the enemy shelled the bridges, the Federals re-crossed the river, with the loss of about 5,000 men. Protected by entrenchments which Hooker had made, and taking counsel with his subordinate generals, under concealment of night it was deemed best to retire, as the river was rising, and the bridges were in danger of being broken. Accordingly, the Federal General withdrew his army across the Rappahannock. In the battles about Chancellorsville, the Confederate loss had then been approximately stated at 10,000, and that of the Federals at 18,000.[58] However, they have now been more accurately ascertained and stated. The Union loss was 1,606 killed, 9,762 wounded, and 5,919 missing, a total of 17,287. The rebel losses were 1,649 killed, 9,106 wounded, and 1,708 captured. The withdrawal of Hooker's lines however was a subject of great mortification to his own troops and of triumph to the enemy.[59]

While those battles were being waged, on the 27th of April with a large and well-equipped body of cavalry, General Stoneman had been sent round to move on Lee's line of communication, in the rere of the Confederates. He divided his force into several detached parties, to break up the railroad, and to cut off the anticipated retreat of the enemy on Richmond. However, Stoneman failed to accomplish any effective service, and his movement only resulted in a raid, during which he broke two or three bridges and cut some telegraph wires. Instead of destroying the Confederate cavalry, he was obliged to flee before it, and with much difficulty he retreated across the Rappahannock, while some of his troopers escaped eastward to Gloucester.[60]

[57] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xv., chap. lxix., pp. 116 to 122.

[58] See Captain Chesney's "Review of the Campaign in Virginia and Maryland."

[59] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii. chap. iv., pp. 110, 111.

[60] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. xv., chap. lxix., pp. 123, 124.

Meanwhile, General Banks had brought a force of nearly 20,000 men to New Orleans, and with these he had instructions to co-operate with General Grant, by seeking to advance up the Mississippi. When he arrived at New Orleans about the middle of December 1862, he despatched General Cuvier Grover[61] with 10,000 men to take possession of Baton Rouge, La. Entreated by General Andrew J. Hamilton the Military Governor of Texas, a small detachment of troops had been sent to take possession of Galveston. These however were captured by Magruder. Admiral Farragut had also asked General Banks to make a demonstration by land in the rear of Fort Hudson, so that his ships might be enabled to advance against Vicksburg. That move Banks effected, and he occupied the garrison for a time with slight skirmishing; but not having force to make a serious attack on the Confederate works, he brought his men back to Baton Rouge. He thence returned to New Orleans.[62]

In pursuit of his own project, Admiral Farragut had drawn to Providence Island his fleet, consisting of the Hartford—the flag-ship—Richmond, Mississippi, Monongahela, Genesee, Albatross, Kineo, the Essex—iron-clad—the gun-boat Sachem, and a mortar flotilla of six schooners. These lay about four miles below Fort Hudson, the garrison of which had prepared batteries for their reception. The Hartford, with her consort the Albatross, was to lead the attack; the other vessels were to follow in that order assigned to them. Accordingly, on the unusually dark nights of March 14th and 15th, the steamers moved up the river. Soon the Confederate guns opened, when the vessels threw shot and shell against the fort. Nevertheless these did little damage, and generally fell wide of the mark, as the position of the land batteries could not well be known in the darkness. However, the Hartford and Albatross took an onward course, without receiving much damage.[63] Great confusion occurred among the other vessels. The night air was so humid, that the smoke hung round these guns aimed at the land batteries, and the ships were in danger of getting foul, or of firing into each other; while the Mississippi ran aground, but the greater portion of the crew was taken off, and the ship was then set on fire. Having thus passed the batteries of Fort Hudson, Admiral Farragut was enabled to co-operate with Admiral Porter. The rest of the fleet failed to follow him; and it was obliged to steer back towards Providence Island. Nevertheless, between the two fortified places of Fort Hudson and Vicksburg, Admiral Farragut was afterwards enabled to cruise, as also to blockade the mouth of Red River, and to maintain his supremacy on the Mississippi.[64]

In April 1863, General Banks sent an expedition along the Bayou Têche, which encountered the enemy at many points. During that and

[61] He was born in Bethel, Me., July 24th 1892. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iii., p. 6.

[62] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. xi., pp. 311–314.

[63] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. ii., p. 417.

[64] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War," Vol. ii., chap. xii., pp. 314 to 318.

the previous month, an effort to effect a junction—desired by Halleck—between Grant and Banks was found to be impracticable. However, the latter general acted with good judgment, promptness and vigour, in the enterprise he had then undertaken.[65] Two brigades under Generals William Hemsley Emory[66] and Godfrey Weitzel[67] had rendezvoused in the neighbourhood of Berwick, a small town on the right bank of the Atchafalaya River. A third brigade under General Grover had embarked on Grand Lake, and had prepared to turn any position taken by the enemy, in trying to bar the road up the Bayou Têche River to Opelousas. Their troops retreated thither, destroying the steamers and other vessels, which had hitherto navigated those inland waters.[68] On the 20th of April, the Federal forces entered the latter town, and there Banks was within a short march of Port Hudson. While preparing for its investment, he had thus secured New Orleans and Brashear City from the risk of a surprise during the absence of his main army. On that advance, the Confederates were defeated in every engagement. The Federal troops reached Alexandria, on the 8th of May. Then the enemy retreated towards Shreveport, and into Texas. The results of this expedition was the capture of 2,000 prisoners, 22 guns, with a large amount of public and private property. Three gunboats and eight transports were destroyed. In this expedition, Banks only lost about 600 men.[69] All Western Louisiana south of Red River, and Red River from its mouth to Shreveport, were now in possession of the Federals.[70]

In the Summer of 1861, the people of West Virginia in convention assembled had constituted a Legislature, and had elected Francis H. Peirpoint as their Governor. The Legislature chose United States Senators, whom Congress admitted to seats. The Federal Government and President also promised them protection. After some further proceedings, a Constitution was framed for the forty counties of which West Virginia had been composed, and at an election held on the 3rd of April 1862, it was adopted by an overwhelming majority of votes.[71] However, considerable discussion had been raised in Congress relative to its legality and provisions. Towards the close of that year, the bill for admission passed through both Houses. Conflicting opinions were held in the Cabinet regarding that measure. The President wisely decided, to disregard the abstract constitutional arguments and legal

[65] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ii., chap. xi., p. 315.

[66] He was born in Queen Anne Co., Md., September 9th 1811. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. ii., p. 252.

[67] He was born in Cincinnati, Ohio, November 1st 1835. See *ibid.*, Vol. vi., p. 423.

[68] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War, from 1861 to 1865," Vol. ii., chap. xiv., pp. 347, 348.

[69] See "Report on the Conduct of the War," Vol. xxvi., Part i., pp. 10, 11.

[70] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xvii., chap. lxxvii., pp. 248, 249.

[71] The votes for were 18,862, and against only 514

quibbles interposed; and accordingly, on the 31st of December 1862,[72] he signed an Act for the Admission of the State of West Virginia into the Union.[73] Thereupon it became law, with the condition precedent which Congress required, that a provision for gradual emancipation of slaves be adopted. In March 1863, the amended Constitution was accepted in convention. On the 20th June following, the new State Government having been elected, it was formerly inaugurated, and West Virginia became one of the United States.[74]

CHAPTER XXXII.

Diplomatic Relations of France and England with the United States—Preparations for the Siege of Vicksburg—Battle at Champion Hill—Opening of the Siege at Vicksburg—Efforts of the Confederates West of the Mississippi River—Their Defeat at Helena—Surrender of Vicksburg—Siege and Reduction of Port Hudson—The French in Mexico—Confederate Privateers built in English Ports.

THE efforts of the Confederate agents both in England and France had been unavailing to embroil either power in a war with the United States. Yet Mr. Slidell in Paris had elicited knowledge, that the interest and sympathies of the French Emperor were on the side of the South[1]; while Lord Lyons laboured under the delusion, as English Ambassador

[72] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iv., p. 664.

[73] See Joseph Irving's "Annals of our Time," p. 479.

[74] Then the number of its counties had been increased to forty-eight. It embraced an area of 23,000 square miles of territory. According to the Census of 1860, it contained a white population of 333,000, and about 12,000 slaves. See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., chap. xiv., pp. 297 to 312.

[1] The Govennor of Pennsylvania, the Hon. Andrew Curtin, whose father Roland when a young man was informed by the British Government that he was allowed only twenty-four hours to leave Ireland, had been most energetic in organising that State for the Union, while he was a devoted adherent and friend of Abraham Lincoln. Some time after the war he went to St. Petersburg as Minister Plenipotentiary where he gained the respect and esteem of Alexander II. While there, Prince Gortschakoff took the ex-Governor into the archives of the Foreign Office, and showed him the correspondence which took place between the Emperor Napoleon III. and Alexander II. of Russia concerning the recognition of independence of the Confederate States. The Emperor Napoleon addressed an autograph letter to Alexander II., stating that the Government of Her Britannic Majesty and his Government were ready to acknowledge the independence of the Confederate States of America, and invited him to join with them. To this the Emperor of Russia answered, also in an autograph letter, that the people of the United States had a government of their own choice, and that they were using their best blood and treasure to defend it, and not only would he not do anything to oppose them, but he would reserve freedom of action to proceed as he deemed necessary under the circumstances. Soon afterwards, the Russian fleets appeared in New York and San Francisco.

at Washington, that some peace compromise might be arrived at in the way of dissolving partnership between North and South. A policy of expectation and duplicity regulated their correspondence with the Secretary of State, whose mastery of their designs, and of the diplomatic relations which should guide him, are very clearly revealed in the published documents. The factious pronouncements of Peace Democrats, and of newspapers in their interests, had been thought a very general sentiment in favour of ceasing hostilities, even at the sacrifice of setting up a Northern and Southern Federation. With such a belief, M. Drouyn de l'Huys addressed a despatch to M. Mercier, in Washington, on the 9th of January 1863, to re-open negociations. Notwithstanding the dark aspect of Union affairs at the time, Mr. Seward met the proposal in an able and argumentative manner, exhibiting his inflexible resolve to decline such mediation.[2]

After the fall of Memphis, it was arranged that communication between the fleets of Commodores Davis and Farragut should be established to operate against Vicksburg on the Mississippi, where the Confederates had hastily constructed works for its defence. While the former descended the river with four gun-boats and six mortar boats, the latter ascended with nine gun-boats and the mortar flotilla, under Commodore Porter. In addition to the naval force, four regiments of infantry and two batteries of artillery commanded by General Williams had been brought from Baton Rouge, Louisiana. On the passage upwards, artillery and riflemen had been employed to arrest their progress; and for these, the thickly wooded banks afforded convenient cover. After the troops were obliged to land in order to clear the woods from the enemy, they had been usually marched across the bluffs and peninsulas, so frequently met in the lower winding stream of the Mississipi.[3] When approaching Vicksburg, the town of Grand Gulf was burned. On the 25th of June, the combined force arrived near the former place, which the Confederates determined to defend. Its position was a strong one. Built on the slopes of hills rising to the back ground, the river before it takes a sharp bend, and the defences were high over the up and down stream, while capable of raking with artillery the forefront of the low-lying peninsula. A few miles above the town, the Yazoo a large navigable river enters the Mississippi, after a north to south course of great length through the State. Numerous ravines and bayous, running into the Yazoo and Mississippi, afforded positions which were easily defensible on the land side. A railroad extending eastwards connected Vicksburg with Jackson, the capital of Mississippi State.

In order to afford safe passage for vessels up and down the river, and to effect the capture of Vicksburg, an artificial channel had been cut by General Thomas Williams,[4] who ascended the Mississippi with

[2] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vi., pp. 68 to 89.

[3] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War," Vol. ii., chap. iii., pp. 43, 44

[4] He was born in N.Y. State in

Admiral Farragut, in the summer of 1862. This was dug with great labour across that remarkable peninsula opposite to the town, and formed by a sudden bend of the river. However, the current had not been diverted from its course, and the plan of making the canal a water passage for ships and boats proved to be unsuccessful.

The mortar-boats below the town were then anchored close to the eastern bank, concealed by a forest, and protected on the land side, by a strong detachment of infantry, so that they were out of reach from the Confederate guns; while they covered a body of 1,200 negroes, engaged under the direction of General Williams, in cutting that canal across the peninsula. The fleet of Commodore Davis now held a position. On the 28th of June, the mortar-boats, above and below the town, commenced a bombardment.[5] This continued with little intermission for a whole month, but without inflicting any serious damage on the defenders. The inhabitants had excavated recesses in the sides of the hills on which the town had been built, and to these they frequently resorted for shelter. Meantime, five of Commodore Farragut's gun-boats ran past the Confederate batteries. Without suffering any material injury, those vessels formed a junction with the upper fleet.

During these events, the Confederates had converted a river-steamer on the Yazoo into an iron-covered vessel, having three guns mounted on each side, with one at the bows, and another at the stern. This vessel was called the Arkansas, and being commanded by Captain Brown, at 5 a.m., on the 15th of July she left her moorings and sailed down the Yazoo River. About 6 o'clock she attacked three of the Federal gun-boats, and before preparations had been made to receive her, she came within gunshot of the Federal fleet, and passed through pouring her broadsides right and left from the middle channel. She then wheeled round, and returned in like manner, but disabled;[6] nevertheless, she anchored quietly under the guns of the town batteries. Afterwards, the combined fleets attacked those with the object of capturing or sinking the Arkansas, but nothing favourable resulted from that engagement. Next morning Commodore Porter, commanding the Essex and running the gauntlet of the upper batteries, approached the Arkansas. Delivering his fire at a distance of only five feet, he then attempted to sink her by ramming; but missing the blow, his vessel ran aground directly under the Confederate batteries, while he was exposed to the fire of riflemen on the shore. Notwithstanding, having got his vessel once more afloat, Porter put her head down stream, and passing the lower batteries, he anchored below the town.[7]

1815, and he had served bravely in the Mexican War. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. vi., pp. 533, 534.

[5] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. x., chap. lii. p. 342.

[6] The Arkansas had five killed and nine wounded; while the Federals sustained a loss of twenty-two killed and sixty wounded.

[7] See Lieut.-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War," Vol. ii. chap. iii., pp. 46 to 49.

At this time, General Grant[8] had command of the army in western Tennessee, while the naval squadron on the Upper Mississippi was under the command of Admiral Porter. A united effort was then planned for the reduction of Vicksburg. On the 22nd of January 1863, finding the Mississippi rising very fast, General Grant endeavoured to prosecute the work begun by General Williams; but labouring long and with a great force of hands, on the 8th of March the pressure of water broke a dam formed at the head of the works, and inundated all the interior swamps.[9] Another futile attempt was made to open a water passage through the bayous, from Milliken's Bend on the north, to New Carthage on the south. Again, on the east banks of the Mississippi a pass to the Yazoo River was sought, but the experiment afterwards tried was not successful.

Combined naval and military operations were then conceived on another basis. These were carried out with successful perseverance. A fleet of gunboats and steamers for transport was soon in requisition.[10] The scheme for cutting the canal having failed—as was thought because of not giving it a right direction—and it having been considered useless to continue the bombardment of Vicksburg any longer; on the 24th of July, Admiral Farragut embarked the military force under General Williams and steamed down the Mississippi to Baton Rouge. Then, the upper fleet took its position opposite to the mouth of the Yazoo River. Whereupon, Grant now resolved to assail Vicksburg from the south, and for that purpose, he proceeded at once to concentrate his army at Milliken's Bend, Louisiana, on the western bank of the Mississippi.[11]

Meantime, the Confederates had taken possession of Grand Gulf, which was strongly fortified and garrisoned. A land force was then marched down the west bank of the river, on the 29th March 1863, and under McClernand its destination was for New Carthage.[12] With some loss, gun-boats and steam transports soon ran past the batteries of Vicksburg and Grand Gulf, on the 16th and 22nd of April. With his fleet of gunboats, Admiral Porter attacked the batteries of Grand Gulf, on the 29th of April. However, this did not succeed at first, but after dark it was renewed, and under such cover the transports passed down the river. A bombardment of several hours took place; the gunboats followed, and General Grant then resolved on crossing at Bruinsburg

[8] See "Military History of General Ulysses S. Grant," illustrative of the late Civil War, by Adam Badeau, Col. and Aide-de-Camp. Vol. i., chap. vi., pp. 156 to 166. New York, 1868, and London, 1881.

[9] See M. Le Comte de Paris, "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amerique," Tome v., Liv. ii., chap. i., pp. 321 to 332.

[10] Colonel John McLeod Murphy, Irish-American, of the New York Engineers, took part in the campaigns of the Potomac, until the close of 1862, when he returned to the navy as Acting-Lieutenant, and he was in command of the Carondelet during the Vicksburg campaign. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iv., pp. 466, 467.

[11] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xiv., chap. lxvi., pp. 27 to 31.

[12] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iv., pp. 86, 87.

some distance below. His troops were carried across the river in the transports, with the utmost celerity; and, so soon as it could be formed, the Thirteenth Army Corps was on the road to Port Gibson, the Seventeenth Corps following it as speedily as possible.[13] Grant had likewise communicated to Sherman a desire, that he should make a feint on the Yazoo River, north of Vicksburg. Accordingly this diversion took place, on the 29th of April.[14] It caused General Pemberton to withdraw troops he had sent to reinforce General John S. Bowen[15] at Grand Gulf, and to direct them to Haines's Bluff. This countermarch greatly aided the operations of Grant. Having accomplished his object, Sherman hurried back to the Mississippi, which he crossed, and leading his corps down the west bank, he thus formed a junction with the main army.

That same day, Grant ordered an advance along the two roads leading to Raymond; McPherson[16] moving on that next to the Big Black River, McClernand marching on the right, and General Sherman, with his corps divided, followed both divisions. On the way, McPherson encountered two brigades of the enemy, under Gregg and Walker. In a sharp engagement, these were defeated, after losing 103 killed, and 720 wounded and prisoners. The Federals lost 69 killed, 341 wounded, and 32 missing[17] in that encounter. Meantime, General Grant had ordered General Benjamin Henry Grierson[18] to move round Vicksburg with three cavalry regiments, 1,700 strong, and a battery of artillery from La Grange Tennessee, to Baton Rouge Louisiana, and to destroy all the railroads, depots, cars, bridges, arms and supplies of the Confederates eastwards from that town. On the 17th of April Grierson set out, and effectually executed the task assigned to him.[19] Riding 600 miles in sixteen days, having fought two skirmishes, destroyed a Confederate camp, and captured several prisoners, his cavalry arrived at Baton Rouge early in May, but after great fatigue and suffering from want of food.[20]

With less than 6,000 men, General Bowen had taken a position on

[13] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xiv., chap. lxvi., p. 36, 37.

[14] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. vi., pp. 161, 162.

[15] He was born in Georgia in 1829, and was active in the rebellion in Missouri, at the opening of the war. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. i., p. 336.

[16] General James McPhearson was born in Sandusky County, Ohio, November 14th 1828. See "Encyclopædia Americana." Vol. iii., p. 656.

[17] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xiv., chap. lxvi., pp. 38, 39.

[18] He was born in Pittsburg, Pa., July 8th 1826, and he became commander of a cavalry force in 1862. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. ii., p. 766.

[19] See General Badeau's "Military History of General Ulysses S. Grant," Vol. i, chap. vi., pp. 188, 189.

[20] The route taken by General Grierson, and also the movements of General Grant, are shown on a Map of the Vicksburg Campaign, in Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xiv., chap. lxvi., p. 26.

two roads which branched from Fort Gibson. One of these led to Grand Gulf, and the other parted in the direction of Jackson, Mississippi. There he was attacked by Grant, on the 1st of May. After a stubborn resistance, Bowen was driven back with a loss of 3 guns and 580 prisoners.[21] Having spiked the guns and blown up the magazine, Grand Gulf was abandoned that night by the Confederates. Having burnt the bridges across the forks of the bayou, General Bowen fell back to the north side of big Black River, thus covering Vicksburg on the south side. Grant took possession of Grand Gulf as a base for his supplies, and Sherman crossed over there on the 7th of May.

The Confederate General Joseph E. Johnston, whose head-quarters were with General Bragg at Tullahoma and who had command of military operations in the south-west, collected all his disposable forces to form a junction with Pemberton. Nevertheless, having a knowledge of such intention Grant resolved to sever their connection. Accordingly, McPherson reached the railroad between Vicksburg and Jackson on the 13th of May, when he destroyed a part of it, to prevent supplies reaching the former place. Sherman had moved on the Raymond Road. Within two miles of Jackson, both columns met Johnston's army and drove it through the town; then it retreated northwards to Canton. The Governor of Mississippi and the officials took to flight, before the Federal army entered Jackson. There, Sherman was left to destroy everything of value for the Confederates, and to guard the prisoners taken.[22] Soon General Grant faced round, having ordered McPherson and McClernand to march against Vicksburg. Already moving eastwards and hoping to intercept the communications of the Federal army, Pemberton then found it necessary to march northwards and join Johnston, as he had been directed. However, on the 16th of May, Grant's forces now moving on his flank and in front of him, Pemberton took position on a narrow ridge called Champion Hill to risk a battle. He had from 23,000 to 26,000 men under his command. The engagement was opened about 11 o'clock, a.m., by Hovey's division. McClernand's division had not yet come up; but, before it arrived, the enemy was driven from the field, after a stubborn resistance and with a heavy loss. In that battle, General Tilgman was slain. Their killed, wounded and prisoners were estimated at 3,624, while no less than 2,441 men were lost to the Union army.[23]

On his march to Vicksburg, General Grant had thus successfully opposed Pemberton, and on the 17th McClernand's corps led the pursuit to Bridgeport, where the enemy again took up a strong position, on both sides of the Big Black River. There, Brigadier-General Eugene

[21] The losses of men on both sides was nearly equal, amounting to between eight and nine hundred. See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. vii., p. 171.

[22] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War, from 1861 to 1865," Vol. ii., chap. xiv., pp. 357, 358.

[23] See "Reports on the Conduct of War," Vol. xxiv., Part i., p. 320, and Part ii., p. 157.

A. Carr's division[24] was checked for some time, until Brigadier-General Michael K. Lawler,[25] who commanded the right brigade, advanced. Soon that position was forced at the point of the bayonet. A number of prisoners and seventeen pieces of artillery were captured; while the routed troops fell back that night to the fortifications of Vicksburg. Next day, Grant and Sherman had crossed the Yazoo River; and on the morning of the 19th, the three army corps completed an investment of Vicksburg, with its extensive ambit of defensive works. The lines on Haine's Bluff had now been turned, and they were abandoned by the Confederates. Communications being opened with Admiral Porter, his gun-boats went up the Yazoo River. On the 20th of May, they reached Yazoo City, where some iron-plated ships were then lying; these with the machine shops and other establishments were destroyed. Having thus captured the batteries at the mouth of the Yazoo River, Admiral Porter was enabled to supply Grant's army with provisions.

At the time of opening that siege, the Federal General's army was about 30,000 strong; and while Sherman's corps was on the right or north of Vicksburg, McPherson's occupied the centre, and McClernand's the left; both of the latter lying east of the town. As the siege went on Grant's force increased to nearly 70,000, in sixteen divisions.[26] On the Confederate side, Stevenson occupied five miles from the Warrenton Road to the rail-road, Forney two miles from the rail-road to the Graveyard road, while Smith held one and a-half mile from the Graveyard to the river front on the north.[27] Relying on the demoralization of the enemy, as a consequence of their repeated defeats on the first day of the investment, General Grant ordered General Eugene A. Carr to lead a general assault on their works, at 2 o'clock P.M.; but, these were found to be well manned, and the attempt proved unsuccessful. The next two days were spent in obtaining and distributing supplies for the troops. The Federal commander was induced to repeat the assault at 10 o'clock on the morning of the 22nd,[28] thus to anticipate an expected approach of General Johnston from the rear to succour the besieged. From the river Admiral Porter kept up a bombardment on the water and hill batteries, while McPherson, McClernand and Sherman advanced with their columns on the other side of the city. The division of General Eugene

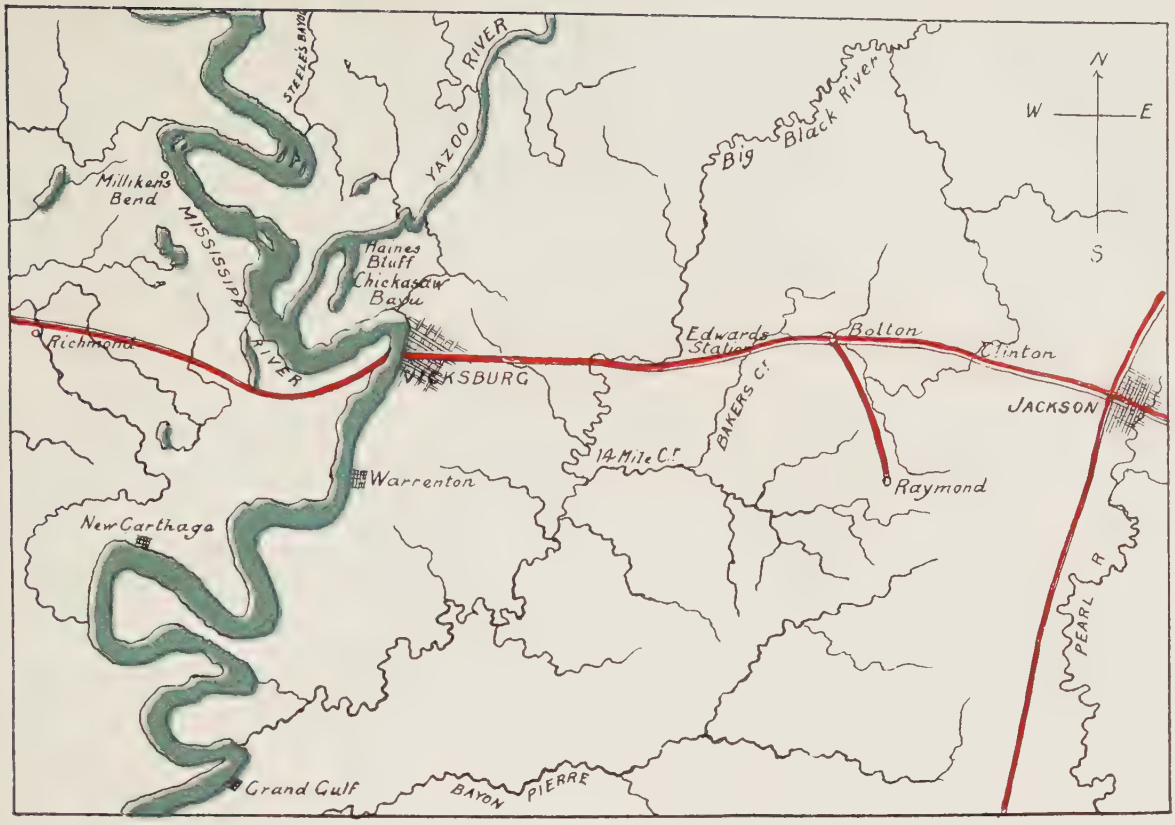
[24] Its Commander was born in Erie Co., N.Y., in 1830, of Irish parents, and he graduated at the U.S. Military Academy in 1850. He served chiefly in the remote Western territories previous to the breaking out of the Rebellion in 1861, and in 1862, he had command of the fourth division of the army in the south-west.

[25] He was born in Illinois, about 1820, of Irish parents, and he already served as Captain in the Mexican War of 1847. From being Colonel of 18th Illinois infantry, on the 14th of April 1863 he was promoted to be Brigadier-General. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iii., p. 636.

[26] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xiv., chap. lxvi., p. 45.

[27] These various positions are well shown in a Map of the Siege of Vicksburg, in "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. x. pp. 284, 285.

[28] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War," Vol. ii., chap. xiv., pp. 364, 365.



FEDERAL OPERATIONS AROUND VICKSBURG.



SIEGE OPERATIONS AT VICKSBURG.

A. Carr effected a lodgment on the enemy's works. Sergeant Joseph E. Griffith, and a few privates of the 21st Iowa Volunteers, entered one of the forts, but those were all killed;[29] while the defence was so obstinately maintained by the Confederates, that Grant lost 3,000 men. The besieged must have sustained a loss of more than 1,000. Accordingly, this determined assault on Vicksburg was again foiled. It was found, therefore, that the town must be carried through a regular siege,[30] and now Grant resolved to open trenches before the defences.

At this time, General Kirby Smith had chief command of the Confederate army beyond the Mississippi. As General Grant had been obliged to concentrate nearly all his forces at Vicksburg, it happened that Milliken's Bend in charge of General Dennis was greatly weakened, and some of Kirby Smith's Louisiana troops, to create a diversion, made an attack on that post the 7th of June.[31] Newly raised negro troops, with some of the Iowa regiments, were there encamped. These forces should have been overwhelmed, but for the opportune arrival of two gun-boats. The Confederates advanced to the assualt, with cries of no quarter to the negro troops, or to their officers.[32] At first, the defenders were driven from their outer line of entrenchments to the river bank. However, the negro troops and Iowa regiments rallied, and repulsed the assailants,[33] while the gun-boats greatly assisted in their discomfiture. Soon after this action at Richmond, a small town about nine miles from Milliken's Bend, some of Kirby Smith's advanced brigades were driven without much difficulty, and their leader retired further into Louisiana to attempt other enterprises:[34] consequently, all hopes of relief from the Trans-Mississippi army were closed for the garrison at Vicksburg.[35]

To relieve the besieged at that place, if possible, or to repair the loss should it fall into Federal possession, Kirby Smith resolved on a double enterprise. One attempt he intended to make against Helena Arkansas, on the right bank of the Mississippi River, and then held by General Prentiss, with a force of about 4,000 men.[36] The other expedition was designed to recover those portions of Louisiana that had been held by General Banks in the month of April, and while most of his troops had been withdrawn for the siege of Port Hudson.[37]

[29] The Sergeant himself came out safely, and brought some prisoners with him. See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. x., p. 287.

[30] See "Rebellion Record," Vol. iv.

[31] See M. Le Comte de Paris, "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome v., Liv. ii., chap. iv., p. 658.

[32] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xiv., chap. lxvi., p. 54.

[33] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. ii., chap. xiv., p. 369.

[34] See Le Comte de Paris, "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome v., Liv. ii., chap. iv., p. 664.

[35] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. ii., chap. xiv., p. 370.

[36] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. xi., p. 323.

[37] See M. Le Comte de Paris, "His-

In the beginning of that year, the Confederate General Holmes held under his immediate command 55,000 troops, to cover an immense extent of territory. A great number of these had been detached to oppose Banks, when he began the campaign in Louisiana. To commence operations there, General Taylor was now obliged to borrow a part of that force with which he held Arkansas. On the 16th of June, Holmes received orders to furnish detachments from different posts, and which were to unite at Clarendon on the 26th of June. However, heavy rains had swelled the rivers and cut up the roads in such a manner, that his forces did not arrive there, until the 30th of that month. These comprised the infantry division of General Price, having the two brigades of Parsons and MacRae over 3,000, Fagan's Brigade counting about 1,800, Marmaduke's cavalry having 1,750 horses, and 1,000 more of Walker's cavalry brigade, nearly 5,000 infantry, with two or three batteries of artillery. The roads were so bad, that the latter arm could not be brought to a surprise attack on the town of Helena;[38] while so slow were the Confederate marches, that the garrison had notice of their movements, and some time to prepare for their arrival two days in advance. Efforts were made to strengthen a line of hills behind the town; more especially to fortify the woods and ravines looking towards the west.[39]

Already, when General Curtis occupied Helena in July 1862, he had erected a strong and solid Fort called after himself, and which was designed to cover all approaches to the town; in addition, General Prentiss had since established redoubts, on the three principal mamelons situated beyond that work. One in the centre was near a road, leading to the cemetery; that on the north was called the Fort of Reiter's Hill; and that on the south was known as Fort Hindman. On the right of Reiter's Hill, in the plain and near the Mississippi River, a fourth work barred the road to Sterling, while epaulements connected the various posts and defended all approaches. On the 3rd of July, the Confederates arrived in the vicinity of Helena,[40] with a view to take possession of that town.

A council of war being called, Price was of opinion that it was inadvisable to occupy a place which could not be kept, owing to its exposure from the riverside to the Federal cannoneers. Nevertheless, this wise advice was disregarded by Holmes the general commanding; and accordingly, he arranged the order for attack early on the following morning. The redoubt on the Cemetery Road, in the centre, was to be assaulted by Price; Fagan was directed against Fort Hindman; the greater part of the cavalry under Marmaduke, on the left, was to dis-

toire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome v., Liv. ii., chap. iv., p. 664.

[39] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sec. xiv., chap. lxvi., p. 54.

[38] See M. Le Comte de Paris, "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome v., Liv. ii., chap. iv., pp. 665, 666.

[40] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xiv., chap. lxvi., p 54.

mount, and to attempt on foot Reiter's Hill; while Walker's brigade should endeavour to penetrate between the latter work and that situated on the banks of the river.[41] At four o'clock a.m. on the 4th of July, Fagan commenced by attacking the Fort on Hindman Hill. His advance had been signalled two hours previously, and the Unionists were now ready to receive him. With great impetuosity, Fagan's troops rushed forward against the ravines and breast works. The first lines of these they carried. However, arriving out of breath before the redoubt, a discharge of cannon and musketry drove them back. They were then obliged to retire behind some of the entrenchments already passed. Under shelter of these, they continued to fire on the defenders of the Fort. Meanwhile, having detached the brigades of McRae and Parsons to attack on either flank of the central redoubt. General Price advanced in front. The Confederates succeeded in getting possession of some batteries and many guns; however, other batteries had now opened fire on those columns, so that soon they became disorganized. In like manner, Marmaduke endeavoured to carry that Fort on the north side; but he was driven back by a direct and flanking fire of artillery and musketry.[42]

During these attempts, Fort Curtis and three redoubts concentrated their fire on the position gained by Price. Then General Holmes resolved on a supreme effort, by lancing Parsons' brigade against the Fort, while MacRae's was to attack in reverse the redoubt of Hindman Hill, before which Fagan was still engaged. The heat of the day had now become oppressive; the troops of Price were in disorder; and their double movement was attended with disastrous results. Rushing over the reverse of the hill, Parsons' brigade was met by a murderous artillery fire from Fort Curtis, and from the Tyler, a gun-boat moored near the river bank. The assailants were soon dispersed. Nor was MacRae's brigade more fortunate. For being able to muster only a few hundred men, these were enfiladed by the fire of Fort Curtis, in that ravine through which they were obliged to pass. Afterwards, they were arrested, and covered by the guns of Fort Hindman. Having encountered several losses, the remnant retreated to Fagan's position. No reserves remained for the Confederate general. He was obliged to give the signal for retreat at 10 a.m., having already lost more than one-fifth of his entire attacking force. The division of Price abandoned those works, that had been gained in the centre. His troops retired under a heavy concentrated fire, which caused great ravages in their ranks. Eleven hundred Confederate prisoners fell into the hands of the Federals, and of these many were wounded. Altogether, the losses of Holmes were estimated at 1,636 men.[43] The Federals greatly rejoiced

[41] See M. Le Comte de Paris, "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome v., Liv. ii., chap. iv., p. 667.

[42] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xiv., chap. lxvi., pp. 54, 55.

[43] See M. Le Comte de Paris, "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome v., Liv. ii., chap. iv., pp. 668 to 670.

over this victory, which was won on the 4th of July. On that evening, the discomfited Confederates took the route backwards to Clarendon. Having only 3,000 men to defend Helena and the surrounding Forts, it was not possible to pursue the vanquished army with advantage.[44]

While Grant held the enemy's force in front of Vicksburg, his reinforcements began to arrive from different quarters;[45] so that soon he felt strong enough to release Sherman from the heights above the town, and to place him over a large army of about 30,000 men to observe Johnston. Wherefore, occupying a space of eight miles from Haines's Bluff on the left, to a bridge over the Big Black River on the right, Sherman constantly sent out foraging expeditions, intercepting convoys, and gathering supplies for the Union army.[46] Meantime, General Johnston had an army of 26,000 men, and with this force he endeavoured to assist the besieged. Nevertheless, Sherman's army of observation was still larger, with lines of epaulements in front, and capable of being reinforced from the rear.[47] Thus, General Grant could afford sufficient troops to repel any attack. This uninterrupted communication with the north-west, his numerous forces increasing each week, and his powerful artillery, strengthening his works on the Big Black River, enabled the Union General to carry on the siege with increased determination. Parallels and approaches were now constructed and mines were formed, while his artillery played on the opposing batteries. In some instances, these were only three hundred yards apart. During the month of June, the siege works were pressed on with industry and vigour; the Federals gradually progressing and successively advancing their lines.[48] On the 25th, a mine was exploded under the parapet of Forney's works; and through that breach, a charge was made by the Union troops. However, it was repulsed by the besieged. On the morning of July the 1st, another mine was sprung on the right of the Jackson road, and this resulted in the demolition of a redan, leaving an immense chasm where it had stood. The interior Confederate works were already much injured. For forty-seven days the besieged troops had been in the trenches and unrelieved; they were constantly exposed to shot and shell; if their heads were seen for a moment over the parapets, riflemen were ready to take a deadly aim; the sick and wounded daily increased in the hospitals, until at last they reached 6,000; provisions likewise began to fail, so that the meat rations were reduced one-half, and when their stores of bacon were exhausted mule-flesh was issued.[49]

[44] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. xi., p. 323.

[45] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xvi., chap. lxvi., p. 47.

[46] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. x., p. 292,

[47] See M. Le Comte de Paris, "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome v., Liv. ii., chap. iv., pp. 659, 660.

[48] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War," Vol. ii., chap. xiii., pp. 377, 378.

[49] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xiv., chap. lxvi., pp. 50, 51.

Having known that a final assault was now determined on, Pemberton held a consultation with his division commanders, and they were unanimously of opinion, that capitulation was then imperatively necessary. Accordingly on the morning of July 3rd, General Bowen was sent with a flag of truce to General Grant proposing to appoint commissioners for arranging terms of capitulation. To that embassy Grant replied, that the only terms he would admit were those of unconditional surrender.[50] However, he agreed to meet Pemberton that day at 3 o'clock, and in front of the lines. Accompanied by General Bowen and Colonel L. M. Montgomery, Pemberton met Grant, who was accompanied by Generals Ord, McPherson, Logan, and A. J. Smith; but, when the Federal General repeated his conditions, Pemberton haughtily replied that the conference might as well break up, as he would not accept them, and accordingly both parties separated. Notwithstanding, in his ultimatum sent late on that evening, Grant somewhat modified the terms of surrender, and these were then accepted.[51] Whereupon, General Pemberton yielded the fortress, with its large garrison and fine war material.[52]

At 10 o'clock on the morning of the 4th of July, the Union soldiers witnessed with deep emotion the Confederate soldiers issuing from their sally-ports, stacking their arms in front of those works they had so valiantly defended, and retiring again within the lines as prisoners of war. During the siege, Grant supposed that only from 15,000 to 20,000 troops had been within the Confederate works; but on entering the city, when he asked Pemberton what number of prisoners required rations, he was told 32,000.[53] Then the Federal General rode down to the wharf and exchanged congratulations with Porter on the important victory thus achieved. The results of this campaign were the capture of 29,491 men, 172 cannon, and 60,000 muskets, generally new arms that had recently run the blockade. These were at once adopted by the Federal troops to replace their inferior pieces.[54]

While the siege of Vicksburg progressed, the Confederate General Gardner held Port Hudson with a considerable force. Far down in the

[50] A detailed account of the Siege of Vicksburg by James Hunter of Lynchburg, Va., will be found in the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iv., pp. 737, 738.

[51] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. x., pp. 302 to 305.

[52] See Jefferson Davis' "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., Part iv., chap. xxxix., p. 416.

[53] See M. Le Comte de Paris, "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome v., Liv. ii., chap. iv., p. 685.

[54] "General Pemberton's returns for March (1863) showed 61,495 actually present, and of these all that remained, saved from death, wounds or capture on the 4th of July, were those who had escaped with Loring from Champion's Hill, and 11,000 or 12,000 more who were in the force which Sherman was chasing before him towards Jackson. The Confederacy cause had lost not much less than 50,000 supporters in this destructive campaign, and with them the control of that great artery of the West, the Mississippi River. The Confederacy was cut in two, at a cost to the Union of 9,262 men."—"Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. x., p. 309.

depths of earth, the garrison had dug deep recesses, and in these their magazines were safely placed, while similar caves were prepared for the defenders to screen them from shot and shell, as also from the intolerable rays of the southern summer sun.[55] Their guns, however, were of inferior calibre to those of the Federals. General Banks had been operating with an army [56] in the Bayou Têche district. He then effected a junction with General T. Sherman, who ascended the river from New Orleans. On the 25th of May, the enemy was driven from the outer defences. When General Weitzel's division arrived,[57] the formidable fleet of gun-boats which commanded the river kept up an almost continual bombardment in conjunction with the land army. General Banks made an attempt to carry the hastily constructed works by assault, on the 27th of May. Some black regiments—and especially the Second Louisiana—led the attack, and these stormed the rebel parapets. Rushing through the guns, in the interior of the Fort, the whites and blacks maintained a ferocious struggle, for some time; however, being overpowered by numbers, and badly supported, the Federals were at length repulsed, with a loss of six hundred killed, for no quarter was given to the wounded negroes.

When this assault failed, General Banks commenced the siege in regular form by erecting fresh batteries and by opening parallels, while sharp-shooters kept up a continuous fire on the enemy's breastworks. Bad rations, exposure and sickness, soon began to tell upon the Confederates. On the 13th of June, General Banks sent a flag of truce, and a summons to surrender, but couched in courteous terms. To this Gardner returned for answer, that duty obliged him to defend the post. Then Banks ordered an assault to take place, on Sunday June 14th. Shortly before day-break, the bombardment opened, and the storming parties assembled under General Paine, who was to lead the first column, composed of Emery's old division supported by Weitzel. Although suffering much from a heavy musketry fire, the leading regiments pushed forward to the enemy's foremost works, and a few men even climbed over them. With great difficulty, the garrison resisted this attack, which again was but feebly supported. Those brave men who had entered the line were killed; while others advancing lost many of their best officers,[58] and were again repulsed.

The siege operations were resumed once more, and the trenches were again steadily pushed forward. The sharp shooters kept up an almost incessant fire,[59] from the lines of entrenchment. The besiegers still

[55] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xiv., chap. lxvi., pp. 55, 56.

[56] It comprised five divisions, respectively commanded by Generals Weitzel, Emery, Grover, Augur, and T. Sherman, with the artillery under General Arnold.

[57] General Godfrey Weitzel was born in Cincinnati, Ohio, Nov. 1st 1835. He became brigadier general of volunteers Aug. 22nd 1862. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. vi., p. 423.

[58] Among those were General Paine and Colonel Currie of the 133rd New York regiment; both were severely wounded.

[59] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's



GEORGE HENRY THOMAS,
Major-General of U.S. Army



DAVID GLASGOW FARRAGUT,
Admiral of the U.S. Navy



DANIEL BUTTERFIELD,
Major-General of U.S. Army.



ANDREW JOHNSON,
Seventeenth President of the U.S.

held out, in hopes of some relief; but, their provisions and ammunition began to fail; mules were killed for food, and the distresses of the garrison became insupportable However, soon as it was ascertained by General Gardner, that Vicksburg had been captured, he agreed to terms of capitulation; and accordingly Port Hudson [60] was surrendered, on the 8th of July. The prisoners here amounted to between 6,000 and 7,000 men. No sooner had Vicksburg been taken, than General Grant prepared to send reinforcements to Banks; yet, hardly had the troops been embarked when news arrived, which rendered their presence unnecessary in that quarter intended. Wherefore, they were placed on lighter vessels, and despatched up the Yazoo River on the 12th of July, to destroy a large number of Confederate vessels, that had taken refuge in that position. With those troops were sent the iron-clad De Kalb and two tin-boats; but when near Yazoo city the enemy's fleet was blown up by torpedoes. One Confederate steamboat was captured, notwithstanding, while twenty-two steamers were burned or sunk. However, the garrison withdrew, when the expedition approached. This exploit cleared the Mississippi from its sources to its embouchures on the Gulf. Thenceforward, merchant vessels were enabled freely to navigate its waters.[61]

During the spring and summer of 1863, the French had taken possession of Puebla, and on the 10th of June General Forey entered Mexico. There a triumvirate government was established under two reactionary Generals, Almonte and Salas, together with the Archbishop of that city. By direction of the French Generals a junta was formed, and having a certain number of notables attached, it was named a Constituent Assembly. On the 10th of July this body decided on the establishment of an empire, and it designated Maximilian Archduke of Austria for the ruler. However, all real authority was in the hands of the French general, and he exercised it with such vigour against armed malefactors—as the guerrillas were designated—that he was soon afterwards recalled to France by Napoleon III., with an order to give command of the army to General Bazaine.[62]

Soon the English dock-yards became the naval base of the Confederacy, especially when the Messrs. Laird and Co. had been engaged in the construction of a war-ship mysteriously called the "No. 290," while building during the summer of 1862. In good time, Mr. Adams called the attention of government to the object for which it was notoriously designed. However, that vessel was allowed to leave the port. Afterwards, she hoisted the Confederate flag, and took the name

"History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. ii., chap. xiv., pp. 371 to 376.

[60] For a plan of this fortress and situation on the Mississippi, the reader is referred to Jefferson Davis' "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., Part iv., chap. xxxix., p. 421.

[61] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xiv., chap. lxvi., p. 56.

[62] See Henri Martin's "Histoire de France depuis 1789 jusqu' a nos Jours," Tome vi., chap. viii., pp. 293 to 296.

of the Alabama.[63] Captain Semmes formerly of the Sumter became her commander, taking on board English guns and gunners, many of the latter belonging to the Royal Naval Reserve. Throughout the year 1863, Messrs. Seward and Adams kept up a vigorous and persistent reclamation against the English government, and holding it responsible for all damages consequent upon what was regarded as their neglecting to prevent the violation of neutrality.[64] The American statesmen argued the subject at great length, and Lord John Russell wrote some elaborate despatches in reply, but all tending to deny such responsibility. However, in a despatch dated October 6th, Mr. Seward informed Mr. Adams, that he must continue to give notice of such claims as they arise, and to furnish Earl Russell with evidence upon which they rest, in order to guard against ultimate failure of justice.[65]

In the month of April 1863, the United States frigate Niagara captured the Confederate cruiser Georgia, which had been called the Japan before she left the Clyde to prey upon American commerce. In the spring of that same year, a new gun-boat to which the name of Alexandra had been given was launched at Liverpool. To the least attentive observer its destination was apparent, and the evidence was overwhelming, that it had been intended as a war vessel for the insurgents within the Southern States. However, in this case, the British government acted promptly, and on behalf of the Queen an information was filed by the Attorney-General against the ship and its builders. The trial came on in June, when the Queen's advocate stated the case clearly, having also furnished conclusive evidence that the vessel was no other than a ship of war built for the Confederate States, while contracted for and supervised by her agents. Nevertheless, the Lord Chief Baron instructed the jury, that in his opinion the Foreign Enlistment Act had not been broken; and accordingly, a verdict was returned for the defendants. The case was at once appealed,[66] and other interesting legal proceedings followed. However, the Alexandra never passed into the Confederate service. During the year 1861, no blockade of the Southern ports existed to any great extent; while

[63] See Le Comte de Paris, "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome iv., Liv. iv., chap. i., pp. 612 to 522.

[64] See an account of the Confederate States cruisers and their respective naval exploits in J. Thomas Scharf's "History of the Confederate States Navy," etc., chap. xxvi., pp. 782 to 820.

[65] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. viii., chap. x., pp. 254 to 256.

[66] As a result of the Lord Chief Baron's ruling, and pending the appeal, Mr. Seward wrote: "The President is not prepared to believe that the judiciary of Great Britain will, with well considered judgment, render nugatory and void a statute of the realm, which, with its counterpart in our own legislation, has hitherto been regarded by both nations as a guarantee of that mutual forbearance which is so essential to the preservation of peace and friendship. If the ruling of the Lord Chief Baron was to stand, the inference would be, that there was no law in England to prevent the unlimited employment of British capital, industry and skill, to make war from British ports against the United States."

throughout the year 1862, 1863, and even 1864, blockade runners entered the ports of Wilmington and Charleston, with almost unbroken regularity.[67] These vessels usually carried arms and war stores for the Confederates.

Meanwhile, the building of vessels in England to form a Confederate navy went on with redoubled activity.[68] Two most formidable iron rams were being constructed, and about to be launched in 1863, for the purpose of forcibly opening the Southern ports and of destroying the blockading vessels. The American Ambassador, fully alive to the active hostility in government circles, steadily protested and with inflexible determination that such a breach of the neutrality laws must cease. Mr. Adams kept urging on Lord John Russell, that the departure of those vessels should be stopped; but he replied, that the government could not interfere.[69] Nevertheless, a turning point had been reached before this time, in the fortunes of the American contest; and on the 5th of September, Mr. Adams openly and defiantly intimated, that such non-interference was a violation of neutrality, which must inevitably lead to war between England and the United States.[70] The Cabinet had then wisely decided, to prevent the two iron-clad vessels from leaving Liverpool, and on the 8th notice to that effect was sent to the American Ambassador. On the 9th of October, the ships were seized by orders from the Foreign Office. On the 27th, a body of marines was put in charge of the war-vessels on the stocks, and two gun-boats were stationed to watch them.[71] Finally, to accommodate matters, the two rams were valued, and about the 20th of May 1864, they were purchased for the Royal Navy.[72]

[67] The very considerable amount of injury done to the shipping and commerce of the United States by these vessels may be gathered from J. Thomas Scharf's "History of the Confederate States Navy," etc., chap. xvi., pp. 428 to 493.

[68] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xvi., chap. lxxiii., pp. 199 to 203.

[69] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. i., p. 34.

[70] Speaking of the Ministry, with which he had been connected, Lord John Russell writes: "We, therefore, proclaimed neutrality as the policy we ought to pursue. In a single instance, that of the escape of the Alabama, we fell into error. I thought it my duty to wait for the Report of the Law Officers of the Crown; but, I ought to have been satisfied with the opinion of Sir Robert Collier, and to have given orders to detain the Alabama at Birkenhead."—"Recollections and Suggestions, 1813-1873," chap. vii., p. 286. London, 1875, 8vo.

[71] In a letter, dated Liverpool, February 17th 1864, the able and sagacious agent of the Confederates, James D. Bulloch thus writes to the Navy department at Richmond: "Through Lord John Russell the entire machinery of the British Government which can in any way be used for such a purpose has been set in motion and put at Mr. Adams' disposal, not to be worked in accordance with British custom and English law, but in such a manner as may be dictated by the Cabinet at Washington."—"The Secret Service of the Confederate States in Europe," Vol i., chap. vii., p. 425.

[72] See *ibid.*, p. 440.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

Invasion of Maryland and of Pennsylvania by General Lee—Resignation of General Hooker—Succeeded by General Meade—Battles at Gettysburg—Retreat of the Confederates—Embassy of Alexander H. Stephens—Conscription Riots—Closing of the Eastern Campaign.

AFTER the battle of Chancellorsville, the opposing armies occupied respectively the north and south sides of the Rappahannock. Notwithstanding a great reduction of his force,[1] General Hooker's position opposite Fredericksburg was one, in which he could not be attacked with advantage. He had about 80,000 men immediately under his command. On the opposite bank, Lee's army, having been reinforced by the conscription to about 105,000 men, consisted of three corps, viz:—Longstreet's, having the divisions of Pickett, McLawes and Hood; A. P. Hill's corps, comprising the divisions of Anderson, Heth[2] and Pender;[3] Ewell's, consisting of those led by Rodes,[4] Early and Johnston.[5] The cavalry was commanded by Stuart, and the artillery of 280 guns was controlled by Pendleton.[6] The Southern forces had been thoroughly well equipped and supplied at this time.[7]

It was then decided to initiate a bold movement on the part of the Confederates, to transfer hostilities north of the Potomac by crossing that river, and afterwards to march upon Maryland and Pennsylvania, while simultaneously driving the Federals out of the Shenandoah Valley. Thus it was hoped to foil an advance on Richmond, and to free Virginia from the presence of a hostile army. Accordingly, this new campaign was commenced June 3rd by the Confederate advance to Culpepper Court-house, while A. P. Hill's force was left as a screen to occupy the deserted lines in front of Fredericksburg.[8] Sending some

[1] About 20,000 men, whose term of service expired, had been discharged from his army when the summer came.

[2] William Heth was born in Virginia, 1825, and he was appointed Major-General in the Confederate army, May 1863. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iii., p. 190.

[3] William Dorsey Pender was born in Edgecombe County, N. C., Feb. 6th 1834. He became Major-General in the Confederate service, May 1863. See *ibid.*, Vol. iv., p. 708.

[4] Robert Emmett Rodes was born in Lynchburg, Va., March 29th 1829, and he became Major-General, May 1863. See *ibid.*, Vol. v., p. 296.

[5] Edward Johnston was born in Chesterfield County, Va., in 1816, and he served in the Florida and Mexican wars. He became Major-General in the Confederate service, 1863. See *ibid.*, Vol. iii., p. 442.

[6] William Nelson Pendleton was born in Richmond, Va., in 1809, and he was commissioned Brigadier-General in the Confederate army, March 1862. See *ibid.*, Vol. vi., p. 709.

[7] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xv., chap. lxx., p. 126.

[8] See Jefferson Davis' "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., Part iv., chap. xli., pp. 437, 438.

cavalry brigades before him on the 13th, the Confederate General Ewell, with two divisions that had moved down the Shenandoah Valley, appeared suddenly before Winchester, then guarded by about 7,000 troops. He completely surprised the Federals, who were driven into their works around the town. Next day he stormed their defences, and captured nearly 4,000 of General Milroy's command.[9] On the 15th Milroy attempted a retreat; and while a part of his troops escaped to Harper's Ferry, a part fled into Pennsylvania. The whole army of General Hooker had then been withdrawn from the line of the Rappahannock. It moved northwards in a position to cover the capital, and having the cavalry on the left flank. This arm of the service was very ably directed by General Pleasonton and by his subordinates. Gregg,[10] Buford[11] and Hugh Judson Kilpatrick.[12] Frequently in skirmishes, it attacked Stuart's squadrons with success.[13] The latter general relinquished all hope of effecting anything against Hooker's retiring host, so judiciously conducted; and resorting to his favourite movement, he took a long detour around the Union army. Moving eastward, he crossed the Potomac at Seneca Creek, and captured a train at Rockville. However, after six days of desperate marauding with frequent unsuccessful skirmishes, while his troops and their horses were dreadfully harassed, Stuart failed to join Lee for any real service during this invasion.[14] The States of Pennsylvania and of Maryland were now in the greatest alarm. On the 15th of June, the President issued a Proclamation calling for 120,000 militia; Pennsylvania was to furnish 50,000; Ohio, 30 000; New York, 20,000; Maryland, 10,000; and West Virginia, 10,000.[15] These were thought to have been the States then most exposed to the Confederate inroads.

On the 26th General Ewell had crossed the Potomac at Williamsport and Shepardstown, while the other divisions followed in succession. They advanced towards Chambersburg, in Pennsylvania. On the 27th the main body of the Confederate army was partly in Maryland and partly in Pennsylvania. There the troops obtained large quantities of

[9] For an account of General Robert Houston Milroy who was born in Washington County, Ind., June 11th 1816, and was made Major-General of Volunteers, March 1863, see Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iv., p. 334.

[10] Brigadier-General David M'Murtrie Gregg was born in Huntingdon, Pa., April 10th 1833. He early embraced a military career, and he served with distinction in the Army of the Potomac. See *ibid.*, Vol. ii., p. 759.

[11] Brigadier-General John Buford was born in Kentucky, 1824, and he had early entered the United States military service. See *ibid.*, Vol. i., p. 443.

[12] Hugh Judson Kilpatrick was born near Deckerstown, N.J., January 4th 1836. After distinguished cavalry service, he became a Brigadier-General, June 13th 1863. See *ibid.*, Vol. iii., p. 535.

[13] See M. Le Comte de Paris, "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome vi., Liv. i., chap. iii., p. 174.

[14] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. viii., pp. 215 to 217.

[15] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American War," Vol. iii., sect. xv., chap. xxi., p. 129.

stores, horses, cattle and other supplies of which they were in need. While preparing to march upon Harrisburg, General Lee received information next day, that having crossed the Potomac the Federal army was closer to him than he had supposed. He immediately gave orders for the return of his advanced divisions, and for the concentration of his whole army at Gettysburg.

For some time previous, Hooker had been pressing for reinforcements, and having had exaggerated reports regarding the superior strength of Lee's army, his mind was somewhat disturbed by apprehension, that he did not enjoy the confidence over General Halleck, the commander-in-chief. An instinctive dislike had long existed between them. The President had been trying to heal their differences, as he solely had placed Hooker in command over the army of the Potomac. This appointment however was contrary to the advice and wishes of Halleck. Now Hooker asked for some of the troops unnecessarily left to cover Washington; but, the commander-in-chief would not consent to such a proposal. Whereupon, Hooker declared that with the means at his disposal, he was unable to cover Harper's Ferry and Washington, as also to fight an enemy in his front, and superior in numbers to his army. He then requested to be at once relieved from the position he occupied. Accordingly, his resignation was accepted, although the occasion was an exceedingly critical one in which to accomplish such an important change.[16]

Meantime, Ewell's corps had taken possession of the city of Carlisle, and a division under Early was sent to York which it occupied, on the 28th of June. The bridge over the Susquehanna at Columbia was then destroyed to prevent the Confederate approach on Harrisburg. There too, fortifications were hastily constructed. However, a message soon arrived for a retrograde movement. From the morning of July 1st, the Southern army was converging for concentration on the town of Gettysburg, where Lee intended to select a defensive position.[17] On June 28th, General George Gordon Meade[18] was appointed to succeed Hooker, while the army was on its march towards that town. He then briefly announced, that it was his general intention to move for the Susquehanna, to keep Washington and Baltimore well covered, and if the enemy were checked in his attempt to cross that river, or if he turned towards Baltimore, that the Federal commander-in-chief should give battle.[19] He made no change in the administration of the army, retaining for the time being General Hooker's staff. On the 29th, his

[16] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. viii., p. 225.

[17] See M. Le Comte de Paris, "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome vi., Liv. i., chap. iii., pp. 239, 240.

[18] See Joseph Irving's "Annals of our Time," p. 496. He was of Irish descent on the father' side, having been grandson of George Meade, the Irish Catholic merchant of Philadelphia, and who contributed £2,000 to support the troops of Washington, when camped at Valley Forge.

[19] General Meade was born in Cadiz, Spain, on the 31st December 1815, and he served in the Mexican War. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iv., pp. 279 to 281.

different corps moved northwards, spread out like a fan on the converging roads, so that the troops might rapidly concentrate when required. His cavalry guarded the flanks and rear.[20] In a position he had selected at Pipe Creek, about fifteen miles south-east from Gettysburg, General Meade intended to fight a defensive battle.[21] On the 30th of June, the right wing of his army was at Manchester, and the left wing at Emmetsburg, close upon the boundary line separating Maryland from Pennsylvania.[22]

Both hostile armies had been moving northwards, and in nearly parallel lines. For the present, the Blue Ridge and South Mountain ranges separated them.[23] The First, Third, and the Eleventh divisions, under General Reynolds, formed an advance corps of the Federal army. While these troops marched hastily along they were greatly fatigued. Moreover, they were sent forward as a mask towards Gettysburg, to screen the Pipe Creek movement, and so they formed the left grand wing of Meade's army.[24] That division of it was then ordered to hold the town, which had been occupied by the Federal General Buford, with his cavalry, the day before. Already the Confederates were coming in great force from Chambersburg.[25]

On the morning of Wednesday the 1st of July, Buford pressed onward, and encountered Hill's leading division. Both hostile armies came into collision, at a place called Oak Hill, about four miles west from Gettysburg. For a long time, Buford gallantly resisted.[26] Then the Confederates were found arriving in full force. Already Major-General Reynolds had advanced from Gettysburg with his leading divisions, under the command of General James Samuel Wadsworth.[27] Moreover Generals Cutler,[28] Meredith[29] and Doubleday,[30] were present.

[20] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ii., chap. ix., p. 232.

[21] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xv., chap. lxx., p. 136.

[22] The relative positions of the Federal and Confederate armies on June 29th and 30th are shown on Maps to be found in "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. ix., pp. 230, 231

[23] An excellent and a detailed account of the battles fought at and near Gettysburg has been written by Major-General Oliver O. Howard, U.S.A., and it is published in the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., Art. Gettysburg (Campaign and Battle of), pp. 208 to 213.

[24] See the accounts of these various movements in Captain C. Chesney's "Campaign of Virginia and Maryland."

[25] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. ix. pp. 238, 239.

[26] See Le Comte de Paris, "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome vi., Liv. i., chap. ii. pp. 252 to 256.

[27] He was born in Genessee, N.Y., October 30th 1807, and he became Brigadier-General of Volunteers, Aug. 9th 1861. He rendered distinguished services in the field, until he fell in battle, May 6th 1864. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. vi., pp. 312, 313.

[28] Lysander Cutler was born in Maine about 1806, and he commanded the "Iron Brigade," originally Meredith's, in the Army of the Potomac. See *ibid.*, Vol. ii., p. 47.

[29] Solomon Meredith was born in Guilford County, N.C., May 29th 1810. He became Brigadier-General of Volunteers, October 6th 1862, and he commanded in the war what was known as the "Iron Brigade" He served bravely to the end of the rebellion. See *ibid.*, Vol. iv., p. 303.

[30] General Abner Doubleday was

When in face of the enemy, Reynolds sent a request for Howard's Eleventh corps to march forward as speedy as possible. At first, the Confederate troops had been driven back, while General Archer and 1,000 prisoners were taken.[31] Soon, however, reinforcements arrived on their side. The advanced Union regiments were then vastly outnumbered. Their gallant leader was killed in directing a charge, while many of his braveofficers and men dropped beside him.[32] The first corps, under Doubleday, resisted with great heroism for a long time.[33] At length, falling back to Gettysburg, the Union troops were enabled to meet the approaching columns of their main army. These were advancing rapidly, under the personal command of General Meade, who during the afternoon had received a despatch with an account of that reverse.

Meanwhile, General Early's whole division had come up on the Harrisburg Road; extending along Howard's entire front and beyond his flanks, the Eleventh corps began to break at 3.30 P.M. At this time, Howard neglected to order a withdrawal of the First Corps. Much disorder consequently ensued. Several prisoners were taken, especially when both corps retreated on Gettysburg,[34] while the Confederates pressed forward with greatly superior forces. Meanwhile, acting on the advice of General Butterfield, chief of his staff, General Meade had sent General Hancock on to Gettysburg. He was directed to replace Reynolds as general over the left wing.[35]

After that severe struggle, lasting for some hours, the Federal troops retreated with a heavy loss of nearly 10,000 men in killed and wounded with several pieces of artillery captured. However, in an excellent position south of the town and known as Cemetery Hill, Howard had already posted his Third Division with three batteries of artillery.[36] Ewell's whole corps and two-thirds of Hill's division, nearly 50,000 men, were thrown on Reynold's and Howard's corps. Only 23,000 troops were there to resist them.[37] Gettysburg was soon taken by the Confederates, headed by the regiments of General McGowan's Brigade.[38] The Union troops then retreated to a ridge of heights, called Cemetery and Culp's Hills, with a range extending

born in 1819, at Ballaston Spa, N.Y., and he served in the Mexican War. In 1862 he was made Brigadier-General of Volunteers, and towards the close of the Civil War, he was brevetted Major-General in the regular army. He retired from active service in 1873. See *ibid.*, Vol. ii., p. 210.

[31] See "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 209

[32] See Samuel Penniman Bates, "The Battle of Gettysburg," pp. 87, 88. Published in 1878, 8vo.

[33] See Le Comte de Paris, "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique.," Tome vi., Liv. i., chap. iii., pp. 262 to 296.

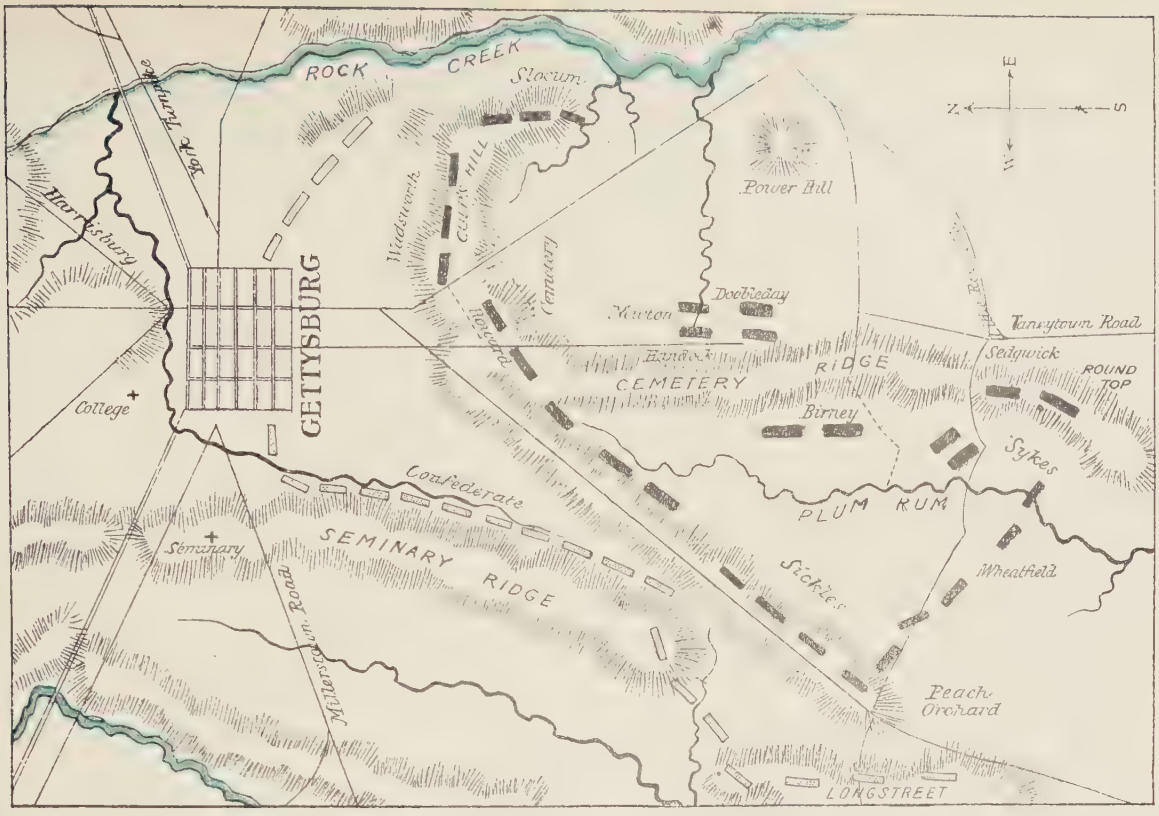
[34] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 210.

[35] See Le Comte de Paris, "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome vi., Liv. i., chap. iii., pp. 292, 300.

[36] In Samuel Penniman Bates' "History of the Pennsylvania Volunteers," their deeds in arms are fully related, not alone in the battles around Gettysburg, but in others which took place during the war. Published in Five Volumes, 1866-72, 8vo.

[37] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 211.

[38] Largely composed of Irishmen recruited in Charleston. Their leader was of Irish descent.



BATTLE-FIELD OF GETTYSBURG.



BATTLE AT CHATTANOOGA.

southwards to rocky eminences, known as Round Top and Little Round Top. When General Hancock arrived in support, his survey of the ground led him to judge it most favourable for military occupation, in the face of an opposing force. He at once sent a despatch to General Meade urging this view on his consideration. The latter arrived after dark, and carefully examining the relative positions, he approved Hancock's choice, and sent orders to all his marching columns to hasten thither for concentration.[39] When the troops of General Lee had arrived in force, and the Union stragglers had been ranged in lines along the crests of Culp's Hill, an effort was made to turn Hancock's right flank, but a prompt and severe fire from the batteries was maintained. Then the Confederates were effectually checked, nor were further offensive movements attempted that day.[40]

Had Lee pressed an attack during the afternoon of his arrival, it seems likely that the Federals should have been totally defeated, at least in that quarter.[41] However, the Generals on both sides had over-estimated the number of opposing forces, while ignorant regarding their exact positions and manœuvres. Nevertheless, Lee resolved on collecting his troops, now flushed with their recent victory, and desired to bring on a decisive engagement. On either quarter the armies came into collision; but the preparations for another advance were not completed by the Confederates, until the following day. At the earliest light on the 2nd of July, and accompanied by Howard, General Meade hastily examined the positions he had chosen, and then planned the posting of the various commands.[42] While troops were moving to his support during the previous night and early morning, the Federal General was eagerly engaged in rectifying and strengthening his lines.[43]

In the Confederate dispositions for battle, General Ewell occupied the left of the line, near Gettysburg; General Hill, in the centre, was posted on a chain of hills, known as Seminary Ridge; while General Longstreet was on the right,[44] and his lines faced the Federal positions of Round Top and Little Round Top. The latter was but poorly furnished with troops by the Federals, until General Sykes with his division had been placed there; the artillery was posted in front and on the heights along the lines, while a large reserve was parked in the rear; the most of Pleasonton's cavalry was well out on the right; the

[39] See Le Comte de Paris, "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome vi., Liv. i., chap. iii., pp. 212, 213.

[40] See "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., pp. 210, 211.

[41] See Le Comte de Paris, "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome vi., Liv. i., chap. iii., pp. 301 to 304.

[42] See "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 211.

[43] See Le Comte de Paris, "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome vi., Liv. i., chap. iii., pp. 306 to 336.

[44] See Jefferson Davis' "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., Part iv., chap xli., p. 443.

left had no cavalry cover, and only on the 3rd did Merritt's brigade[45] arrive to occupy that quarter.[46]

The chief defensive Federal position was then selected near the Cemetery and opposite to Gettysburg,[47] the Federal centre being placed on the heights; the Second and Third Corps, under General Sickles, forming the left wing; while the First and Eleventh Corps were stationed on the right. When the other troops arrived from the rear they were posted as reserves. Meantime, the defenders had been engaged in strengthening their lines by earthworks. They also occupied some advanced posts on the western slopes, and below the crests of their hilly range. Behind this line their reserves were massed in great force; and soon as the several marching columns arrived on the field, they were stationed in the most approved positions. An early attack was anticipated by the Federal Generals on the 2nd, and indeed General Lee seems to have designed one. He sent Ewell's corps against Culp's Hill, on the Federal right; but finding this to be of great natural strength, and held in force, he resolved on directing his main assault against the left, with Longstreet's corps, Hill being sent in support. Meanwhile, a demonstration was to be made against Culp's Hill by Ewell. This movement was to be converted into a real attack should opportunity offer.[48] The preparations for those manœuvres were not completed until the afternoon, and this delay was of great advantage to the Union army,[49] as the Sixth Corps did not arrive on the field until about 2 p.m. Then it was massed in the rear, and on the left wing of General Meade's army.[50] This quarter was most exposed to danger.[51]

The Federal regiments were then formed for an advance. The rebel forces and their batteries were masked with woods and corn fields.[52] Soon their cannon began to open on the columns with most

[45] Wesley Merritt was born in New York city, June 16th 1836. He embraced a military career, served in the early stages of the war, and in June 1863, he was commissioned Brigadier-General of Volunteers. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iv., p. 308.

[46] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 211.

[47] A very clear, general conception of the positions occupied by both armies may be found on a Map of the Battle of Gettysburg, postfixed to Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xv., chap. lxx., p. 140.

[48] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 211.

[49] See Le Comte de Paris, "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome vi., Liv. i., chap. iii., pp. 337 to 352.

[50] It had previously marched 35 miles without rest, and the men were almost exhausted with fatigue when they reached that ground. See "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 211.

[51] See Le Comte de Paris, "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome vi., Liv. i., chap. iii., pp. 352 to 360.

[52] Before the battle commenced on this day, the Irish Brigade and the other Catholic soldiers in the Second Division were assembled by the Chaplain Rev. Father William Corby. He addressed them under arms and preparing for the conflict then impending. He urged them to do their duty well, reminding them of the high and sacred nature of their trust as soldiers, and the noble object for which they fought. He also desired all then present to make an act of per-



IRISH BRIGADE RECEIVING ABSOLUTION UNDER FIRE—BATTLE OF GETTYSBURG.
JULY 2nd 1863.

destructive effect, from all the batteries within range; while the Federal guns answered them. This cannonading lasted fully two hours; but the Confederate batteries concentrated against Sickles' advanced divisions, made the most rapid and fearful discharges. Longstreet's corps was there in front.[53] During that time, Hood's column with skirmishers in front commenced to move against the Union left.[54] It was soon followed by that of McLawes' directed against Sickles, who held with great pertinacity some stone walls before the slopes of Little Round Top. There especially a desperate and bloody struggle took place. As the battle was more engaged at that spot, General Meade ordered Geary[55] and Williams[56] with their divisions from his right to reinforce Sykes. During this engagement, both Sickles[57] and Hood[58] were badly wounded, and accordingly they were taken from the field.

A space of several hundred yards then separating the left of the Third division of the Second corps and the right of the corps in advance with them, the Confederates seized that opportunity and moved into the gap through a ravine, and with a large reinforcement of infantry. That body opened a destructive flank fire on the troops, now somewhat disordered. There General Samuel K. Zook[59] of New York was killed, while many other brave officers and men were slain. Several regiments

fect contrition, resolving firmly to embrace the earliest possible opportunity of confessing their sins. When he had closed this address, every man fell on his knees with head bowed down, and while in this posture, stretching forth his right hand, Father Corby pronounced the words of absolution. General Hancock, surrounded by a throng of officers, was a witness of that impressive scene; and soon afterwards, the battle opened on the left, while he arranged his lines to defend the position then occupied.

[53] At this time, Pickett's division had not arrived to take part in that attack. See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. ix., p. 251.

[54] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 211.

[55] John White Geary, of Scotch-Irish descent, was born near Mount Pleasant, Westmoreland County, Pa., December 30th 1819. Early distinguished as an able civil engineer in Kentucky, he became Lieutenant-Colonel of the Second Regiment of Pennsylvanian Volunteer Infantry during the Mexican War, in which he served bravely, and afterwards he was made first commander in the city of Mexico. He filled many other high appointments in a civic capacity. At the beginning of the civil war, he raised the Twenty-eighth Pennsylvanian Volunteers, and he had commanded it in various previous battles. In those of Chancellorsville and Gettysburg, he led the Second Division of the Twelfth corps. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. ii., pp. 620, 621.

[56] Seth Williams born in Augusta Me., March 22nd 1822, served in the Mexican War, and became Brigadier-General September 23rd 1861. See *ibid.*, Vol. vi., p. 530.

[57] His leg had been shot away shortly after six o'clock, when Birney succeeded temporarily to the command of his corps. See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. ix., p. 251.

[58] During the course of this attack, Hood had lost an arm. See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii. sect. xv., chap. lxx., p. 144.

[59] Samuel Kosciuzko Zook was born in Pennsylvania about 1823, and he made various discoveries in electric science before the war. He recruited the Fifty-seventh Regiment of New York Volunteers, and on the 29th of November 1862, he became Brigadier General of Volunteers. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. vi., p. 662.

lost all their field officers, and were brought to the rear only by captains.[60] The Federals fell back for a short distance. Then they were relieved by fresh troops sent to restore the battle. General Meade superintended all these movements, acting with great judgment and decision, during the many vicissitudes of this obstinate engagement. The position of Little Round Top had been almost denuded of troops, when General Warren[61] with great presence of mind detached the 104th New York regiment to hold it; and soon afterwards, Colonel Strong Vincent, commanding a detachment of Brigadier-General James Barnes' division[62] of the Sixth corps, was hurried forward to the summit of the hill.[63] The battery of Charles E. Hazlitt was then dragged with all haste to the front.[64] Reinforcements were rapidly arriving on either side, and then a most deadly encounter took place between the opposing columns.

The rebels rushed forward with loud shouts, to attack that extreme left of the Federal line; but Sickles' troops—then commanded by Birney—gallantly resisted their attack. A large number of guns being placed in position, these made terrible havoc in their ranks. The pressure on their front becoming too great, however, the cannoneers and troops were obliged to gain Little Round Top. There supports had been brought up by Hancock, just in time to drive back portions of McLawes' division, and vigorously to strike the flank of Hood's column.[65] The brave Colonel Patrick Henry O'Rorke[66] of the 140th New York Regiment saved Little Round Top from being taken; but with the loss of his own life, and that of many others of his officers and men, who were there killed and wounded.[67] The Federal centre and left centre next moved forward with loud cheers, and drove the enemy before them through the valley. Still the Confederates retired slowly,

[60] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. ix., pp. 254, 255.

[61] Gouvenneur Kemble Warren was born in Cold Spring, N.Y., January 8th 1830. He embraced a military career in the beginning of the Civil War, and soon he became distinguished. He was chief of engineers during the battles at Gettysburg. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. vi., pp. 362, 363.

[62] General Barnes was of Irish extraction, and born about 1809 in Springfield New England. He was promoted to be Brigadier-General of Volunteers, November 29th 1862. He served in several of the great battles during this war, and in the battle of Gettysburg he was severely wounded. See *ibid.*, Vol. i., pp. 170, 171.

[63] At that very moment Colonel Vincent was killed. He was born in Waterford, Erie County Pa., June 17th 1837, and he enlisted as a private in the beginning of the war. See *ibid.*, Vol. vi., p. 299.

[64] There General Stephen H. Weed at the head of his brigade was killed; and Hazlitt, stooping to receive his last words, fell dead across his body. General Weed was born in New York City, in 1834. He had served bravely in many previous engagements. See *ibid.*, Vol. vi., p. 419.

[65] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., pp. 211, 212.

[66] He was born in the County of Cavan Ireland, and became Colonel of the New York Volunteers in September 1862. He was a remarkably brave officer, and he gave promise of great distinction. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iv., pp. 591, 592.

[67] See Le Comte de Paris, "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome vi., Liv. i., chap. iv, p. 379.

while obstinately fighting. At length, they were driven up to the heights in their rear. Many were bayoneted, and numbers of Confederate prisoners were taken, while hiding behind trees and hedges. The last charge on the left was made by General Samuel W. Crawford,[68] who securely held the ground on the right of Little Round Top. Then both hills, which crowned the southern extremity of the ridge and which secured the Federal left position, were strongly garrisoned. Meantime, while the Federal ranks were pressed backwards on the left, suddenly the Fifth corps came to their assistance from the Baltimore turnpike-road. These troops now rushed forward at a most opportune moment. They charged upon the Confederate lines, with a dash that caused their foes to waver and finally to retire, hopeless of making any further impression, as the night was fast approaching. The advantage of that day was undoubtedly on the Federal side.

The Third corps was in front, and one of its brigades with a battery of artillery had been posted on an eminence. The rebels advanced against that important position, with a large body of troops. The Second corps was ordered to its support. In the first division was the Irish brigade, commanded by Colonel Patrick Kelly.[69] The enemy, sheltered by rocks and a belt of wood, was charged by the brigade, and their lines were forced back after a desperate struggle.[70] Towards twilight, the troops of Humphreys retook the guns lost during their previous retreat from the most advanced position.[71] Meanwhile, the attack of Early's corps conducted by Ewell had been directed by General Lee against Culp's Hill, the right flank of the Federals, where Howard, Wadsworth and Slocum had been posted. These plied their artillery with great vigour to sustain that part of the line, which had been

[68] Samuel Wylie Crawford was born in Franklin Co. Pa., November 8th 1829. In 1862, he was commissioned Subsequently he became Major-General. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. ii., pp. 4, 5.

a Brigadier-General of Volunteers.

[69] See Captain D. P. Cunningham's "Irish Brigade and its Campaigns," chap. xix., p. 208.

[70] The fatalities during the previous campaigns, and especially in the battle of Fredericksburg, had then reduced their force to a battalion of a few hundred men. They had already fought bravely in these general engagements, not enumerating several minor actions and skirmishes: viz., the Siege of Yorktown, the battles of Fair Oaks, Gaines' Mill, Savage Station, Allen's Farm and Peach Orchard, White Oak Swamp, Malvern Hill, Antietam, Fredericksburg, and Chancellorsville. After the Battle of Gettysburg, and when their ranks had been partially recruited, they also participated in the following engagements, viz., Auburn and Bristow Station, the Wilderness, Tod's Tavern, Po River, Spottsylvania (No. 1), Spottsylvania (No. 2), North Anna River, Tolapotomy Creek, Coal Harbour, Petersburg (No. 1), Yellow Tavern, Strawberry Plains, Petersburg (No. 2), and Skinner's Farm. The names of the officers of the Irish Brigade who served under General Thomas Francis Meagher, with the regiments to which they belonged, are given in the Appendix No. II., sect. 13, to John O'Hart's "Irish Pedigrees; or the Origin and Stem of the Irish Nation," Vol. ii., pp. 812 to 816. Fourth edition, Dublin, 1888. 8vo.

[71] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. ix., p. 255.

weakened considerably, owing to the withdrawal of reinforcements. Four successive charges were made upon it; nevertheless, the foe was met each time steadily, and repulsed with great slaughter. However, General Green was obliged to desert the advanced barricades and trenches; when the Confederate General Johnston,[72] commanding the old Stonewall division, approached his front. Four brigades, those of Jones,[73] Stewart, Nicholls,[74] and Walker attacked him. Then Green was reinforced by Howard and Wadsworth. Immediately a desperate and bloody battle took place; General Jones was slain, and many of the Confederate dead were piled up before Green's stalwart brigade.[75] However, the trenches in front were occupied all that night by General Johnston. About nine o'clock in the evening, General Hancock sent two regiments of the Second corps with General Carroll's brigade to repel a determined attack of Early at Cemetery Hill; and Carroll re-took the position already occupied by Hoke and Avery. The latter was killed, and Early was obliged to fall back.[76] About 10 o'clock at night all was quiet, and having called a council of war, General Meade asked the opinion of his generals regarding the probability of their maintaining the present position, or whether the taking of another should be preferable. All were unanimous in declaring the contest ought to be decided on that spot. At such a crisis, nevertheless, the situation was not encouraging; the Peach Orchard held by Sickles in the morning was now in Lee's hands, with many of the Federal dead and wounded, while Slocum had lost half of his command, owing to the withdrawal of so many troops as reinforcements for the left. However, General Meade adopted the judgment of his generals, and resolved to await the issue of another battle on that ground he then occupied.[77]

On Friday the 3rd, fresh dispositions had been made by General Lee for an attempt to drive the Federals from their heights. For such anticipated attack those were preparing, as they thought Lee was not likely to retreat, so long as he had a chance of success.[78] Besides, he was encouraged to hope for it, having held possession of the Federal advanced lines on his right, with their entrenchments occupied on Culp's Hill, while Pickett's strong division had then arrived from Chambersburg. Moreover, Stuart's cavalry had joined him. As the position occupied by the enemy in the entrenchments at Culp's Hill was exceed-

[72] Confederate General Bradley Tyler Johnson was born in Frederick City, Md., September 29th 1829. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iii., 440.

[73] Brigadier-General Samuel Jones was born in Virginia, 1820. See *ibid.*, p. 470.

[74] Brigadier-General Francis Tillon Nicholls was born in Donaldsonville, La., August 20th, 1834. See *ibid.*, Vol. iv., p. 512.

[75] The Confederate Brigadier-General Barksdale was killed in this battle. See the "Encyclopædia American," Vol. iii., p. 212.

[76] See Le Comte de Paris, "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome vi., Liv. i., chap. iv., p. 415.

[77] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. ix., p. 258.

[78] See Le Comte de Paris, "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome vi., Liv. i., chap. iv., pp. 424 to 430.

ingly disquieting, General Meade's dispositions were now taken to recover it. These movements were executed by night, with great silence and secrecy. Geary's division of the Twelfth corps, and other troops sent from the Sixth corps, were marched to the support of Slocum. So soon as the alarm had been given, Johnston's lines were reinforced, and he too resolved on taking the initiative.[79] Accordingly at daylight, the Confederate batteries on the right of their line opened on the Federal left, while their sharpshooters and infantry were directed to attack the right. This advance was made with such impetuosity, that the skirmishers and the front line opposed to them were driven from their entrenchments. However the batteries were splendidly served, and well supported. From 5.30 a.m. until 10.30 a.m. that determined struggle continued. At length, Geary's division with Ruger's[80] having come on the ground poured a destructive fire against the intruders, who were forced to give way while sustaining great loss. The former position of barricades and breastworks thus retaken was afterwards firmly maintained.[81]

The battle had been intermitted for some hours. It recommenced about one o'clock in the afternoon, when two signal shots fired by the Confederates announced its renewal.[82] Then over 140 of their guns opened with a tremendous fire. This was replied to by the Federal batteries. For more than an hour, that storm of shot and shell rained incessantly from each opposing force. At that time, Lee had chosen for his main attack the low ridge just north of the Little Round Top, where Hancock commanded. To Longstreet was entrusted the direction of that charge ; while the division of Pickett composed of the best Virginia troops[83] was directed to lead the assault. Their right was supported by Wilcox's division, and on their left were Pettigrew's and Trimble's divisions.[84] Only about 70 guns could be brought into position on the Union side ; but after an hour's firing the batteries gradually ceased, so that the guns might cool, the smoke-clouds disappear, and ammunition might be reserved, to meet the formidable infantry attack then evidently impending.[85]

While Longstreet had advised a flank movement on the right to assail the Union left, thinking he had silenced the opposing fire, General Lee preferred to risk the more direct attack which he ordered. Fully 17,000 infantry in columns were prepared for the assault. Then Pickett drew

[79] General Abner Doubleday has published a work, "Gettysburg made Plain: a Succinct Account of the Campaign and Battles," with diagram and maps. This was issued in New York, 1888, 12mo.

[80] Thomas Howard Ruger was born in Lima, Livingston Co. N.Y., April 2nd 1833. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. v., p. 343.

[81] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., pp. 212, 213.

[82] The account of this battle is minutely given in "General Taylor's Four Years with General Lee."

[83] See W. Harrison's "Pickett and his Men." New York, 1870, 8vo.

[84] These three latter divisions belonged to the command of General A. P. Hill. See "Abraham Lincoln, a

forward his own division of 5,000 fresh troops, who had not engaged on either of the previous days. About 3 o'clock p.m., that formidable body was in motion. For a time, they seemed to bear in the direction of Little Round Top and Cemetery Hill; but when they had advanced about half way across the valley, the columns began to move towards the left, and directly in Hancock's front.[86] There Doubleday's troops were posted, somewhat in advance; and especially, George J. Stannard's Vermont brigade[87] held a good position in Zeigler's Grove, on an advanced spur of the ridge. The artillery now opened on front and flank. Each successive attempt of the enemy was repulsed, and with great loss to their ranks. For a moment, the attacking column burst on two small regiments of Webb's brigade in advance of the main line. These were soon obliged to retreat. They were followed to the crest, where a desperate struggle took place; but having received there the fire of Hayes' and Gibbon's divisions, the Confederates were effectively checked.[88] Still, several broken detachments rushed forward, led by General Lewis A. Armistead,[89] who fell mortally wounded before Lieutenant Alonzo H. Cushing's battery.[90] Soon afterwards, the assailants were literally torn into fragments. Hundreds of the rebels then threw down their arms and asked for quarter.[91] General Garnett[92] was mortally wounded, but for the time made his escape, when nearly all the men of his brigade had surrendered making about 3,000 prisoners. General Kemper[93] was carried away to die, while the wreck of the mass fled back to Seminary Ridge, diminished each instant by the grape and canister showered upon it.[94] Meantime, the supporting column of Wilcox made an isolated attack, between the main battle-field and Little Round Top; but Stannard's artillery, that had wrought such havoc on the right flank of Pickett's division, now turned its destructive fire against the left flank of Wilcox. The Federal batteries on the spur of Little Round Top opened on him at the same time, while the troops in his front received him with a sharp musketry fire. His column then retreated in confusion.[95] The division of Pettigrew

History," Vol. vii., chap. ix., pp. 360, 361.

[85] See General Hunt's Testimony, in the "Report of the Committee on the Conduct of the War," Vol. i., p. 451.

[86] For a very intelligible account of this day's battle see the Map of Positions and text, in "Abraham Lincoln, a History, Vol. vii., chap. ix., pp. 263 to 663.

[87] See an account of the leader in Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. v., p. 647.

[88] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xv., chap. lxx., p. 149.

[89] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. i., p. 90.

[90] He was brother to Commander Cushing, who destroyed the Albemarle. Mortally wounded, he fired a last shot, then gaily saluting his general he expired on that spot. See *ibid.*, Vol. ii., pp. 40, 41.

[91] See Le Comte de Paris, "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome vi., Liv. i., chap. iv., pp. 459 to 491.

[92] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. ii., p. 607.

[93] See *ibid.*, Vol. iii., p 512.

[94] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xv., chap. lxx., p. 150.

[95] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. ix., pp. 267, 268.

had been prepared to advance in supporting distances, but too far apart from Pickett, and the brigades were badly arranged in echelons. Soon as the Federal artillery had been directed against them, and when nearer, they halted to reply with musketry.[96] Composed for the most part of raw recruits, when they saw their enemy moving strong flanking parties around them flight ensued. Rushing panic-stricken to the rear, numbers were taken prisoners. All but one of their field officers had been killed or wounded.[97]

While attacks were made by M'Lawes on the right and Ewell on the left, these were only feints to cover the main one in the centre. Then Sykes forced back Hood's division for a mile, taking 300 prisoners and many small arms. During that day, the cavalry of J. E. B. Stuart had been stationed on Lee's extreme left, taking up a position to intercept Meade's possible line of retreat on the Baltimore road. There they were attacked by the Federal cavalry under David M'Murtrie Gregg and George A. Custer, who after a sharp contest obliged them to give way. On the other extremity of the battle-field, General Kilpatrick moved to the right and rear of Longstreet, but in directing a charge about half-past five o'clock, he lost many of his men.[98] Nevertheless, the cavalry fighting on foot prevented a turning movement by Hood on the Federal left wing; and there too the brigade of M'Candless and the Eleventh Pennsylvania regiment regained that ground lost on the previous day. The wounded men who lay uncared for, and mingled with the rebels, were likewise recovered.[99] The battle raged with great violence until sunset. After the loss of several prominent officers, the enemy at length withdrew his troops from the battle-field, and fell back to his original positions.[100] On the Federal side, in this great series of battles, Major-General Reynolds, Brigadiers Zook and Weed,[101] Colonels Cross,[102] Willard, Sherrill, O'Neill, and Vincent were killed; while Major-Generals Sickles and Hancock, Brigadiers Butterfield, Paul,[103] Meredith, Gibbon, Graham,[104] Barlow,[105] Tyler,[106] and Warren,[107] Colonels Stone,

[96] See Le Comte de Paris, "Histoire de la Guerre Civile en Amérique," Tome vi., Liv. i., chap iv., pp. 455, 456.

[97] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xv., chap. lxx., p. 150.

[98] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. ix., p. 268.

[99] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 213.

[100] See Jefferson Davis' "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., Part iv., chap. xli., p. 444.

[101] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. vi., p. 419.

[102] Edward Ephram Cross was born in Lancaster, N.H., April 22nd 1832. He was a man of eminent literary abilities as a journalist, and as a volunteer of conspicuous gallantry. See *ibid.*, Vol. ii., pp. 19, 20.

[103] Gabriel René Paul was born in St. Louis, Mo., March 22nd 1813. See *ibid.*, Vol. iv., p. 678.

[104] Charles Kinnaird Graham was born in New York city, June 3rd 1824. See *ibid.*, Vol. ii., pp. 700, 701.

[105] Francis Channing Barlow was born in Brooklyn, N.Y., October 19th 1845. See *ibid.*, Vol. i., p. 116.

[106] See *ibid.*, Vol. vi., pp. 200, 201.

[107] See *ibid.*, pp. 362, 363.

Wistar,[108] and Smyth were wounded. Among the Confederates, Major-General Pender, Brigadiers Garnett, Armistead and Jones were killed; while Majors-Generals Hood and Heth, Brigadiers Semmes, Barksdale, Kemper, Anderson,[109] Pettigrew[110] and Scales[111] were wounded.[112]

The loss of the Federals in these battles according to the revised tables was 3,072 killed, 14,497 wounded, 5,434 captured or missing, in all 23,033. Their greatest relative loss was experienced on the first day's engagement, and before General Meade arrived with supports. That of the Confederates was 2,592 killed, 12,709 wounded, and 5,150 missing, in all 20,451 men.[113] While General Lee acknowledged, that he lost the battle of Gettysburg owing to faulty evolutions,[114] and while the Confederates expected to be attacked in turn, and forced to a disastrous retreat; nevertheless, General Meade and most of his officers were of opinion, that they might jeopardize too much by advancing against their adversaries, who still held a defensive cover and a strong position that night on the Oak or Seminary Ridge.[115] They were not in a condition, moreover, to attempt any further attack. The enemy remained at Gettysburg during the 4th; and although it was a day of triumph for the Union army, the care of the wounded and the last offices to the dead sorrowfully engaged their attention. At night the Confederates began to retire in the direction of the Rappahannock River, and by way of the Fairfield and Cashtown roads. A severe rain-storm came on, and Lee knew that should it continue, his communications across the Potomac might be seriously endangered. However, the rear of his column did not leave Seminary Ridge, until after daylight on the 5th.[116] Their retreating army was pursued by order of General Meade; and the cavalry, under General Sedgwick, advanced in considerable force. Nevertheless, they found Lee's rear-guard so strongly in position at Fairfield Pass, that it was deemed inadvisable to attack. Meanwhile, the Union army marched on the enemy's flank, by way of Middleton and the South Mountain passes.[117]

Congratulations on his victory arrived from the President and from General Halleck to General Meade; however, he was strongly urged to

[108] See *ibid*, p. 583.

[109] The wound he received in the foot afterwards proved fatal. See *ibid.*, Vol. i., p. 68.

[110] James Johnston Pettigrew was born in Tyrrel County, N.C., July 4th 1828. See *ibid.*, Vol. iv., p. 747.

[111] Alfred Moore Scales was born in Reedsville, Rockingham County N.C., November 26th 1827. See *ibid.*, Vol. v., p 412.

[112] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 213.

[113] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xv., chap. lxx., p. 152.

[114] See Longstreet's Article in "Battles and Leaders," Vol. iii., p. 374.

[115] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 213.

[116] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xv., chap. lxxi., p. 154.

[117] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. ix., pp. 273, 274.

press Lee, and to follow up the success already achieved, before the rebel army could reach the Potomac. Meantime, General Lee had arrived there, when he found the pontoon bridge partly destroyed by General French, and the river so swollen by the rains as to be impassible. Wherefore Lee began to entrench himself against attack until the waters should subside, while he endeavoured to reconstruct his bridges. On the 10th, General Meade arrived in front of his lines; but having called a council of war, he was dissuaded by the majority of his generals from attacking that position.[118] His hesitation to do so gave great dissatisfaction, notwithstanding, when it was communicated at Washington. The failure of General Lee in the invasion of Pennsylvania had greatly depressed him, and directions were now given for a retreat south of the Rapidan.[119] This was accomplished by night on the 13th at Williamsport, and in a manner so secret as to elude the vigilance of the Union forces. By the 14th of July, the whole Confederate army, with all its trains of stores and batteries of artillery had recrossed the Potomac.

While this formidable invasion progressed, on the 2nd of July the Richmond Government had despatched its Vice-President Alexander H. Stephens on an embassy to President Lincoln and to treat about a peace,[120] but this was on the condition of separation between North and South. However when on his way, news arrived of the disastrous Confederate defeat at Gettysburg. At the same time President Lincoln issued an order, that Mr. Stephens should not proceed to Washington or pass the Federal lines, while it stated his request was inadmissible. The President also added, that the customary agents and channels were adequate for all needful communication and conference, between the United States forces and the insurgents. This embassy thus proved abortive.[121]

When the unpopular measure of conscription was about to be put in force, the Copperheads had industriously spread a report in all the great cities and towns, where the Irish population was most numerous, that the government intended to send them southwards, where destruction must surely be their fate, and that their places were to be filled by the liberated negroes in the labour market, as these should be satisfied to work for smaller wages.[122] Lee had even hoped in Pennsylvania, that his invasion should be promoted by the discontent he knew to have been thus excited, and he was prepared to take advantage of it, when the threatened riots broke out; but these had only occurred in New

[118] See Warren's testimony, in the "Report of the Committee on the Conduct of the War," Vol. i., p. 381.

[119] See John Esten Cook's "Life of General Lee," p. 359.

[120] See Stephens' "War between the States," Vol. ii., pp. 557 to 780.

[121] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. xiii., pp. 369 to 374.

[122] An account of the disorders which ensued may be found in General James B. Fry's admirable historical statement, appended to the Report of the Secretary of War to the Thirty-ninth Congress, intituled "New York and the Conscription of 1863."

York, Boston and a few other places, while he was on retreat after the battle of Gettysburg.

The more violent Democratic politicians and newspapers in New York had begun to denounce the Administration; while their speeches and articles fanned the flame of popular distrust and suspicion to a high degree. A provision, which had been intended to mitigate the rigours of the enrolment law, exempted drafted men from service upon payment of three hundred dollars. This enactment enabled demagogues to raise the cry, "The rich man's money against the poor man's blood." It contributed most powerfully to rouse the unreflecting masses against the draft. The Governor of New York State Horatio Seymour, with several abettors, had pronounced the Conscription Bill to be illegal and unconstitutional. Colonel Robert Nugent,[123] Major Frederick Townsend[124] and Major A. S. Diven[125] had been appointed provost-marshal generals for the city, to superintend the work of enrolment. Saturday July 11th was the opening day. Although great dissatisfaction was then manifested, yet order was fairly preserved. However, the agents of disturbance were busily at work, and handbills were industriously circulated, especially among the mechanics and labouring classes. On Sunday July 12th meetings of excited mobs assembled in all parts of the city; and early on Monday, an attack was made on the enrolling officers. Several coloured people were murdered or maimed by the infuriated and prejudiced rabble; the Coloured Orphan Asylum was pillaged and then set on fire; the residences of various Government officers were burned; an attack was made upon the *New York Tribune* office,[126] as the proprietor Horace Greeley[127] was a firm supporter of Administration; Colonel H. T. O'Brien,[128] who attempted to resist the mob, was beaten to unconsciousness, while his body was dragged up and down the streets to his own door.[129] When the riots broke out, and when it became necessary to act, Governor Seymour came to New York. There he addressed the crowd assembled at the City Hall, while stating with unauthorised duplicity, that he had sent his adju-

[123] He was born an Irishman, but he was known in political circles as a "War Democrat."

[124] Born in Albany, N.Y., September 21st 1825. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. vi., p. 148.

[125] See *ibid.*, Vol. ii., p. 183.

[126] This tumult was led by a lame secessionist barber, who had been heard to express the hope that he "might soon shave Jeff. Davis in New York." The rioters raised loud cheers for General McClellan. After dismantling the counting room, they were attacked and driven away by the police.

[127] This able journalist and politician has written his own memoirs, entitled "Recollections of a busy Life," New York, 1868. Since his death, on the 29th of November 1872, a later edition has appeared.

[128] He was born an Irishman, as the name imports.

[129] "Then a courageous priest sought to subdue their savagery by reading the last offices for the dying over the unfortunate colonel; the climax of horror was reached by the brutal ruffians jostling the priest aside, and closing the ceremonies by dancing upon the corpse."—"Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii, chap. i., p. 22.

tant to Washington, where he should confer with the authorities, so as to have the draft suspended. On the next day he issued a proclamation, declaring the City and County of New York to be in a state of insurrection, and warning all who might resist the State authorities of their liability to those penalties prescribed by law. There being few troops then in the city, a detachment of marines was employed to quell that outbreak. Those fired blank cartridges to over-awe the crowd in the first instance; but the rioters rushed on them; some were killed, while the remainder were beaten or dispersed.

For four days the rioters had kept the city in terror, and it was estimated that two millions worth of property had been destroyed. At length, the civic authorities, the trusty and courageous police force and the troops that had arrived came into harmonious action. On Thursday night a small detachment of the Twelfth Regulars commanded by H. R. Putman met the principal body of the mob in Third Avenue and Twenty-first Street. The soldiers fired, killing thirteen of the rioters, and wounding eighteen more, while they captured some dozens of prisoners. During that night and on the next day, the militia were returning from Pennsylvania, while several regiments of veterans arrived from the army of the Potomac. Then the peace of the city was once more restored.

During those disorders, Most Rev. John Hughes,[130] Catholic Archbishop of New York, used all his influence to appease the excited feeling of his co-religionists; but at first without avail.[131] On the 16th he issued an address, inviting all Catholics to come on the next day to his house, where he desired to address them; and accordingly, on the 17th, at two o'clock, he delivered a speech to several thousands there assembled. This was an address, half earnest and half jocular, such as he thought must prove most persuasive for an angry multitude, alternately pleading, cajoling and warning them. He implored such of them as were Irishmen and Catholics, to be quiet in the name of Ireland, that had never committed a single act of cruelty until she was oppressed, and that had been the mother of heroes and of poets, but never of cowards. The crowd greeted his speech with rapturous applause, and then quietly dispersed. While the number of killed and wounded in these riots has been reckoned at 1,000 by Governor Seymour, others have placed it at a still higher figure.[132] On the 15th a similar riot was excited in Boston, where the mob made an assault on the arsenal to obtain weapons. However, the police—and later the military—acted with promptness and decision. Accordingly, that disturbance came to an end.

[130] See John Rose Greene Hassard's "Life of the Most Rev. John Hughes, D.D., First Archbishop of New York: with Extracts from his Private Correspondence." New York, 1866, 8vo. His complete works have been compiled and edited by Laurence Kehoe, in two vols. New York, 1864, 1865, 8vo.

[131] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xv., chap. lxx., p. 134.

[132] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. i., pp. 22 to 25.

The Governor of the State of New York still continued to protest against and to evade the action of the general Government, in reference to the draft.[133] Moreover, the ferment of opposition to the conscription was so great and general throughout the country, that several leading Unionists besought the President to stop the enrolments. Especially from Philadelphia and Chicago, where riots were feared, came such requests. The money paid for exemption from the draft amounted, however, to twenty-six millions of dollars. This was used by the Provost Marshal-General to pay the necessary expenses, and to raise recruits. After all payments were made, a surplus of nine millions was left to the credit of that special Bureau in the Treasury of the United States.[134]

Anticipating a triumphant march to Pennsylvania, the disaster of Gettysburg was finally reported at Richmond, and the fall of Vicksburg, occurring nearly about the same time, created dismay in the Confederate capital. That campaign had thus ended, by reducing Lee's army of 100,000 men to 40,000, and with these left he effected a retreat up the Shenandoah Valley. Nevertheless, no decisive victory had been obtained by the National forces; but the supreme effort of the Confederates had resulted in a signal defeat, and the advantage gained rested with General Meade. For some days after the battles at Gettysburg, and in a very critical position, the Confederate leaders continued their retreat. They escaped however through a want of enterprise, on the part of their opponents.[135] While Meade's army lay entrenched before them and hesitated to attack, when the order for an advance was given on the morning of July 14th, it was found that the enemy had crossed the Potomac. The Federals continued a languid pursuit by Harper's Ferry and Martinsburg on to Warrenton; while several cavalry skirmishes took place between both armies, but without serious result on either side. By moving rapidly, Lee gained his old position at Orange Court-House, south of the Rapidan River. The army of General Meade continued a march southwards, but rested in cantonments on its northern banks, until a fresh plan of operations could be devised by the Government and Commander-in-chief. To repair his loss, Davis put forth an urgent appeal to the Southern people; and by aid of conscription at the end of August, Lee's force had again reached 56,000.[136] However, that campaign came to a close, and the armies on both sides once more confronted each other, while arranging for their future movements.

[133] See Jefferson Davis' "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., Part iv., chap. xliv., pp. 488 to 490.

[134] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. i., pp. 26, 27.

[135] See Pollard's "History of the War." Third Year.

[136] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War." Vol. iii., sect. xv., chap. lxxi., pp. 156 to 159.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

Siege of Charleston—General Taylor in the South—General Rosecrans' Advance on Chattanooga—The Battle of Chickamauga—General Grant appointed to take Charge of the new Military Division of the Mississippi—The Battle of Missionary Ridge—The Siege of Knoxville raised—General Bragg removed from Command, and General Johnston appointed to succeed him—Movement of General Lee on Mannassas—Suspension of the Eastern Campaign at the Close of the Year—The President's Annual Message and Re-construction of the Revolted States.

It had been resolved to organise a conjoint effort by land and sea forces, in order to reduce Fort Sumter at the mouth of Charleston Harbour, thus to effect a more complete blockade of that port, or in any case, to detain a large Confederate contingent for defence of that city. Accordingly, General Hunter who had been in command of the land forces was replaced by General Quincy Adams Gillmore,[1] on the 12th of June. He had 11,500 troops, with 66 guns and 30 mortars, to carry on a siege of the defended forts by land. Admiral John Adolf Dahlgren,[2] an officer of distinguished ability, was appointed to succeed Admiral Dupont.[3] To him was assigned the frigate Ironsides and six armour-plated vessels for effective operations—the other ships being in no way able to avail against forts. General Gillmore held chief command during this expedition. At that time, the Federal forces were in possession of Folly Island, north of the Stono; of Seabrook Island, on the North Edisto; of St. Helena Island, Port Royal Island, Hilton Head Island, Tybee Islands, Fort Pulaski, Ossabaw Island, Fort Clinch, Amelia Island and the City of St. Augustine.[4]

Much against his protest, troops had been withdrawn from General Beauregard to reinforce other commands. A number of low-lying islands were north and south of the entrance to Charleston Harbour. These were little better than swamps. Forts Gregg and Wagner were north of Morris Island, on the south entrance to the channel, and opposite to Fort Sumter. The Federals had occupied Folly Island, still more to the south, and James' Island, more to the west and south of Charleston city. On the 10th July, the batteries at the north end of Folly Island, together with Dahlgren's fleet, opened on Fort Wagner.

[1] He was born at Black River, Lorain County Ohio, February 28th 1826. See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 216.

[2] Inventor of the gun called after him. He was born in Philadelphia, Pa., November 13th 1809. At an early age, he entered the American Navy, and in February 1863, he became rear-admiral. Mrs. M. V. Dahlgren, his widow, published his Memoirs, in 1882.

[3] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xvi., chap. lxxii., pp. 166, 167.

[4] See General Q. A. Gillmore's "Engineer and Artillery Preparations against Charleston," p. 18.

The following morning the land troops advanced to the assault, but this was repulsed with heavy loss to the Federals.

It was now determined to assail Fort Wagner by regular approaches; and accordingly, Gillmore's fire assisted by that of the fleet was resumed a little after mid-day on the 18th. This bombardment was kept up until after dark. Then George Crockett Strong's brigade[5] in advance supported by Putnam's, in all about 6,000 strong, approached. When within 200 yards, the storming column received the fire of the Fort, and it was torn to pieces. The Fifty-fourth Coloured Regiment with Colonel Shaw[6] led, and rushed through a trench of deep water up to the parapet, where Shaw was killed and Strong was mortally wounded. In like manner, Putnam's Brigade[7] advanced, and their general was killed. After a loss of about 1,200, the Federal troops were completely repulsed.[8] On the morning of the 24th, with a heavy bombardment,[9] General Gillmore began his siege-works and opened his first parallel about 1,300 yards from Fort Wagner. This was soon followed by a second, about 600 yards in advance. It ran diagonally across the Island north-west and south-east. The guns were trained, not alone on Fort Wagner, but also on Forts Gregg and Sumter, which stood out in the harbour.[10] Brigadier-General Taliaferro commanded the Confederates on Morris Island. On the 9th of August, a third parallel was commenced. This was less than 400 yards from Fort Wagner. General Gillmore had twelve batteries in readiness, mounting 28 heavy guns and 12 mortars. The Confederate Forts harassed the workers much with their guns, while the Federal Fleet threw shot and shell to protect them. From the 18th to the 23rd of that month, the bombardment was almost continuous. Shells were even thrown into Charleston. At length, on the night of the 16th of September, the guns in Fort Wagner and Gregg being spiked, their garrisons were withdrawn. The renowned Fort Sumter, subjected to a terrific bombardment, was also doomed to destruction; all its guns were dismounted, yet the Confederates left a small guard of men within the ruined works. However, during those months of July, August and September Charleston and several of its adjoining forts had successfully resisted all the furious efforts made by the Federal fleet and forces to capture them. Even although Fort Sumter had been reduced

[5] Its commander was born in Stockbridge, Vt., October 16th 1832. See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iv., p. 614.

[6] Robert Gould Shaw was born in Boston, October 10th 1837. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. v., p. 486.

[7] The commander Haldimand Sumner Putnam was born October 15th 1835, in Cornish, N.H. See *ibid.*, p. 139.

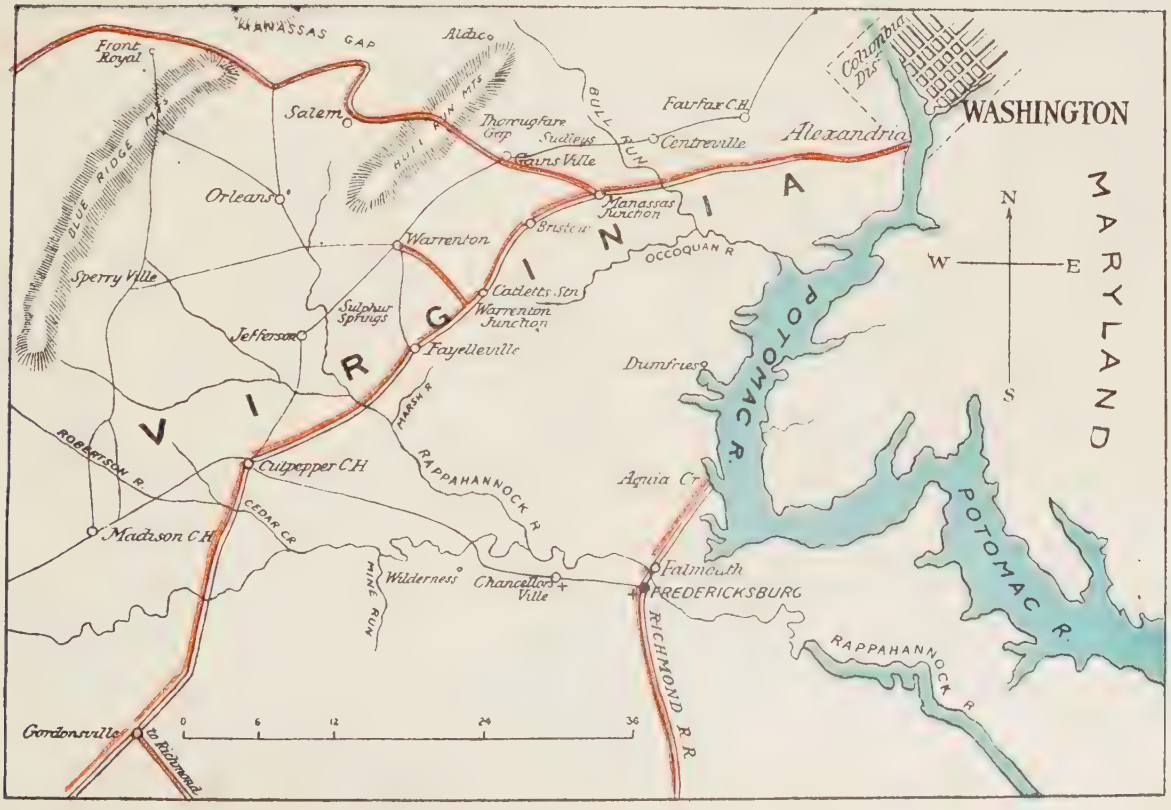
[8] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xvi., chap. lxxii., pp. 167, 168.

[9] See Alfred Roman's "Military Operations of General Beauregard," Vol. ii., chap. xxxii., p. 120.

[10] The relative positions as described are shown in a Map of the Defences of Charleston, in Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xvi., chap. lxxii., pp. 162, 168.



Siege of Charleston.



Battles of the Wilderness.

to a heap of ruins, the Confederate battle-flag was still kept floating there, in defiance of any further advance by the Union forces.[11]

After the unsuccessful attack upon Milliken's Bend, General Richard Taylor[12] had organised a force, variously estimated at from 3,000 to 5,000, and with this following, he moved in two detachments against Berwick Bay. He captured Alexandria and Opelousas. He sent Colonel J. P. Major by way of Plaquemines, to attack Brashear city in the rear. With Generals Alfred Mouton[13] and Thomas Green,[14] he then moved his main force down the Têche. Both detachments came together on the 24th of June. Taylor then captured that place, taking 1,000 invalid and convalescent prisoners. He also obtained 10 guns, and many small arms, besides a great quantity of valuable stores.[15]. Afterwards, sending General Green with Major's cavalry to Donaldsonville, midway between New Orleans and Port Hudson, he pushed another party to within twenty-five miles of the former city. This advance gave much inquietude to the Federal troops in possession, and joy to the disaffected inhabitants, who were in hope of their being able to capture or expel the garrison. Donaldsonville was held only by 225 men of the Twenty-eighth Maine regiment under Major J. D. Bullen, and it was protected only by a slight earthwork. On the 28th, that small garrison was attacked by Green a little after midnight, and with over 2,000 men. These were gallantly repulsed, some gunboats on the Mississippi giving valuable aid. Then, the Confederates withdrew several miles down the river, and there they erected batteries.[16]

Notwithstanding his temporary successes, Taylor failed in drawing off Banks's forces from Port Hudson. When that place was taken, Generals Weitzel and Grover were sent down to meet Taylor at Donaldsonville, where a sharp engagement took place; but neither side could claim a victory. The Confederates then withdrew to Brashear city, whither they were not vigorously pursued. Nevertheless, on the 22nd of July, that place was re-occupied by the troops of General Banks; it having been evacuated, on his approach, by General Taylor. The latter then moved northwardly, along the line of the Têche, with his prisoners and spoils, which he carried towards the frontiers of Texas.[17]

After more than six months of apparent inaction, General Roscrans

[11] See Alfred Roman's "Military Operations of General Beauregard," Vol. ii., chap. xxxii., pp. 102 to 143.

[12] He was the only son of President Zachary Taylor, and he was born in New Orleans, La., January 27th 1826. He served with his father, the Commander-in-Chief, during the Mexican war. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. vi., p. 55.

[13] Jean Jaques Alexandre Alfred Mouton was born in Opelousas, La., February 18th 1829. See *ibid.*, Vol. iv., p. 449.

[14] He was born in Virginia, in 1816. See *ibid.*, Vol. ii., p. 746.

[15] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xvii., chap. lxxvii., p. 250.

[16] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. xi., p. 321.

[17] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War," Vol. iii., chap. iii., pp. 34, 35.

was engaged in reinforcing his army, while collecting war material and stores. He had been urged to advance by General Halleck, and to seize Chattanooga, on the south bank of the Tennessee River. Accordingly, he commenced a movement on the 25th of June. This was directed against General Bragg. The latter had been guarding the line of the Duck River, and the railroad from Nashville to Chattanooga, with about 46,000 men, beside 10,000 under the immediate command of Buckner, in East Tennessee.[18] Moving from Nashville—his base for operations—Rosecrans advanced in the direction of Elk River; but a continuous rain, very unusual at that period of the year and in that particular country, greatly impeded his progress. However, his object was to turn the enemy's right. General Bragg was then compelled to make a counter-movement, by falling back to Tullahoma, and afterwards to Bridgeport. During this retreat he lost 6,000 men. Burning the railroad-bridge at the latter place, he then made his way to Chattanooga.[19] General Rosecrans followed, but for more than a month he kept on the north bank of the Tennessee River, repairing the railroads in his rear, and concentrating his supplies, with a view of preparing for an anticipated siege of that place.

Meanwhile, on the 27th of June, the daring John H. Morgan,[20] with 2,000 cavalry and 4 guns, crossed the Cumberland River, passing through Columbia, Lebanon and Bardstown, having increased his force while moving through Kentucky to 4,000 men and 10 guns. He next crossed the Ohio River, and made a foray through the State of Indiana, and even he rode around the City of Cincinnati. Afterwards, he reached the Ohio River near Parkersburg breaking up railroads and throwing off trains, besides levying ransoms on the owners of mills and factories. There, however, his force was obliged to surrender, and on the 26th of July, Morgan himself was captured.[21]

The Confederate Government was especially anxious, that the position of Chattanooga and Knoxville in Eastern Tennessee should be held: and accordingly, while Buckner was ordered to Bragg's support, Longstreet was sent by Lee from Virginia,[22] and Polk from Alabama, to reinforce him. Whereupon, Bragg posted Polk's corps around Chattanooga, while Hardee's[23] was stationed along the railroad connecting it with Knoxville. Not being strong enough to attack the Confederate general in Chattanooga, Rosecrans determined to turn the

[18] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xiv., chap. lxvii., p. 60.

[19] A very correct idea may be formed of the movements here described, by an inspection of a ground-plan to illustrate the Chattanooga and Atlanta campaigns, in Lieut.-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War," Vol. iii., chap. iv., p. 46.

[20] He was born at Huntsville, Ala., June 1st 1826. See "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 765.

[21] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xiv., chap. lxvii., p 63.

[22] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. viii., chap. ix., p. 238.

[23] William J. Hardee was born at Savannah, Ga., October 10th 1815. See "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 295.

left of his position, thus to gain the rear between Dalton and Atlanta. He reached the Tennessee River on the 20th of August, and shelled the town from the heights on the north bank on the 21st. Having moved Crittenden with the left wing, Thomas with the centre, and McCook with the right wing, in the early days of September, the Federal General crossed the Tennessee some miles below the town. His various divisions had occupied positions, at passes of Lookout Mountain and of Missionary Ridge towards the south. Meantime, during the months of August and September, large drafts had been taken from General Meade's army to serve in this Western campaign. Bragg evacuated his strong entrenchments at Chattanooga on the 8th of September. It was entered by a portion of General Rosecrans' army, and on the 10th of September, Crittenden's corps took possession, the main body remaining three or four miles lower down; and now thinking that Chattanooga was secured, Rosecrans was preparing to pursue, without any attempt to fortify that place.[24]

Nevertheless, as Bragg was expecting the arrival of considerable reinforcements, his troops were concentrated at Lafayette. It was now found necessary for the scattered corps of the Union army to draw their lines together; and accordingly, on the 18th of September, both armies were confronting each other on opposite banks of the Chickamauga, a small stream flowing northwardly, and joining the Tennessee River above Chattanooga.[25] Having been reinforced by the arrival of Longstreet's division, on the morning of the 19th General Bragg attacked the army of General Rosecrans, having crossed more than 30,000 men over the creek during the previous night. His intention was to interpose between Rosecrans' left wing and Chattanooga; and while Polk was to execute this movement on his right, Hood was directed to attack the Federals on the left. Falling at first upon the left Federal wing under General Thomas, a vigorous attack was made. This caused the reserves of the centre and right to be sent to his support. After a desperate struggle with General Patrick Roynane Cleburne's division[26] of Hill's corps, the enemy was driven back. The Confedrates then suddenly attacked the Federal centre, and pressed it severely; but having been reinforced, its lost ground was recovered. Night then came. All attempts to turn Rosecrans' left, and to occupy the road to Chattanooga, had proved abortive. The loss was very great on both sides, but this battle thus far was indecisive.[27]

On the 20th, the attack was renewed, yet not so early as Bragg

[24] An excellent account of the military operations preceding the battle of Chickamauga, and the engagement itself, has been written by Professor Henry Coppée, LL.D., and may be found in the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. ii., pp. 64 to 66.

[25] An excellent Map of the Battlefield of Chickamauga, with the various positions occupied by the hostile commands, may be found in "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. viii., chap. iv., pp. 86, 87.

[26] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. i., pp. 647, 648.

[27] See John R. G. Hassard's "History of the United States," chap. liv., p 349.

desired, and he still had the intention of flanking the Federal left. Again, his army was divided into two wings; the right wing commanded by Polk comprised four divisions, viz., Cleburne and Breckinridge of Hill's corps; Cheatham[28] of Polk's; and Walker's division[29] of the Army of the Mississippi; while the left wing had six divisions, viz., Stuart, Preston,[30] and Johnston,[31] of Buckner's corps; Hindman of Polk's; Hood and McLaws' of the Army of Virginia—the last being without artillery. The cavalry of Pegram[32] was on the extreme left. In Rosecrans' army, McCook held the right; Crittenden had his two divisions in reserve, and in the rear of his centre; Thomas was on the left, reinforced by the two divisions of Johnston[33] and Palmer[34] with abatis and breastworks before his lines, while John Milton Brannan, and James Scott Negley,[35] were in the reserve. On the extreme right, the cavalry was stationed, while Granger formed the principal reserve.[36] About 10 o'clock, the battle was opened by Breckinridge and Cleburne advancing against the breastworks of Thomas, and attacking with great vigour. Reinforcements arrived, and they were driven back with considerable loss; but the battle was frequently renewed with reserves directed on that quarter. Soon Rosecrans' centre and right were greatly weakened, as division after division had been sent to support Thomas. An opening having been made in the Federal lines, by the withdrawal of General Thomas John Wood,[37] Hindman of Longstreet's corps rushed on, and striking the Federals in flank and rear, the centre and right divisions were defeated.[38] They fled in disorder towards Rossville and Chattanooga. Nevertheless, General Sheridan succeeded in rallying a considerable portion of his division, and he managed with these men to support General Thomas, who still resisted with resolute bravery until dusk. General Brannan's division held its ground firmly. The Federal line now assumed the form of a crescent, with its flanks supported on the lower spurs of Missionary Ridge.[39]

[28] Benjamin Franklin Cheatham was born in Nashville, Tenn., October 20th 1820. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. i., p. 596.

[29] William H. T. Walker was born in Georgia, in 1816. See *ibid.*, Vol. vi., p. 332.

[30] William Preston was born near Louisville, Ky., October 16th 1806. See *ibid.*, Vol. v., pp. 115, 116.

[31] Josiah Stoddard Johnston was born in Rapides Parish, La., February 10th 1833. See *ibid.*, Vol. iii., p. 455.

[32] See *ibid.*, Vol. iv., pp. 700, 701.

[33] Richard W. Johnston was born near Smithland, Livingston County Ky., February 7th 1827. See *ibid.*, Vol. iii., p. 445.

[34] John M'Cauley Palmer was born at Eagle Creek, Scott County Ky., September 13th 1817. See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iv., p. 128.

[35] He was born in East Liberty, Allegany County Pa., December 26th 1826. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iv., p. 487.

[36] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xiv., chap. lxvii., pp. 65 to 70.

[37] He was born in Mumfordville, Ky., September 25th 1823. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. vi., p. 597.

[38] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. ii., Art. Chickamauga, pp. 65, 66.

[39] See "Abraham Lincoln, a His-

In the flight of the right and centre, Rosecrans, McCook and Crittenden were enveloped and carried away, while the General-in-Chief retiring to Chattanooga thence telegraphed to Washington, that the army had been routed. Nevertheless, while Polk had been furiously assailing the centre and left and Longstreet the right, Thomas still heroically held his position, and inflicted heavy losses on the enemy. About sunset their last charge was made, and it was repelled. Afterwards, on learning the disaster elsewhere experienced, Thomas deliberately fell back to Rossville in good order, while leaving his dead and wounded in the hands of the enemy. In the rear he also captured 500 men, and while holding the position, he offered battle again, but Bragg declined that challenge. Then his force was withdrawn, and during the night he joined the rest of the defeated army at Chattanooga.[40] In this battle the loss on the side of the Federals has been estimated at about 16,000 men, and that of the Confederates at 12,000. It lasted two days.[41] However victorious the latter were, yet they lost Chattanooga through Bragg's movements; while, according to this general's report two-fifths of his entire force were killed and wounded.[42] As a result of the engagement, however, he reported that 7,000 prisoners, 36 pieces of artillery, and 15,000 small arms had been captured. This battle of Chickamauga was so called, from the name of that stream, near which it was fought.[43]

The retreat to Chattanooga was not immediately followed up by Bragg, while Rosecrans began to fortify that place; but on the 24th having advanced to Missionary Ridge, Bragg encountered a stern resistance. He was then obliged to prepare for a methodical investment.[44] He had already occupied the passes of Lookout Mountain, and had severed railway communications with Nashville, the base of Rosecrans' supplies, while he held the Tennesse River above and below the town. The Confederate cavalry were active in intercepting the wagon trains from Nashville, and which were hardly able to move along the muddy and rugged country roads; for rain commenced early in October, and distress soon began to prevail within the Federal lines.

Fearing the fall of Chattanooga, the Government at Washington appointed General Grant, about the middle of October, to take command over the new military division of the Mississippi, including the three Departments and Armies of the Ohio, Cumberland and Tennessee. At Rosecrans' request, General Thomas supersceded him on the 19th of October, while general Sherman was set over the Tennessee Department.

tory," Vol. viii., chap. iv., pp. 90 to 100.

[40] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xiv., chap. lxvii., pp. 71 to 74.

[41] See Captain Chesney's "Campaigns in Virginia and Maryland." Vol. ii., p. 173.

[42] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. ii., Art. *Chickamauga*, p. 66.

[43] See Lieutenant Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War," Vol. iii., chap. iv., pp. 46 to 69.

[44] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xiv., chap. xlvii., p. 74.

Meanwhile, General Hooker, with the Eleventh and Twelfth Corps numbering 23,000 men, had been despatched by railroad from the Rapidan to Stevenson, Ala., in seven days. On the 20th of October Grant reached Nashville,[45] where he had an interview with Rosecrans and Hooker. Exposed to a drenching rain, the General-in-Chief arrived at Chattanooga on the night of the 23rd, and there he found General Thomas in a very precarious situation.[46] Next morning, Grant reconnoitered the Confederate position, and then determined on his plan of action. Hooker was directed to cross the river at Bridgeport, and Palmer at Whiteside, about ten miles distant, while W. F. Smith was to cross near Brown's Ferry, and to seize that range of hills at the opening of Lookout Valley.[47] These several places lay in a line due west from Chattanooga. The various movements were successfully executed on the 27th of October. On the night of the 29th, an attempt was made by Longstreet to surprise Geary's division, encamped in the valley near Wauhatchie; but after a conflict of three hours, the Confederates were repulsed with great loss. About the middle of October, Jefferson Davis had visited Bragg, and in their consultations it was determined, that Longstreet should be sent north to take Knoxville from Burnside. Afterwards, he was to descend by the Cumberland Mountains so as to operate on the national flank.

During the month of September, while Grant was at Vicksburg, he had ordered Sherman to move his troops to Memphis by steam-boats, and to co-operate with Rosecrans. However, Sherman encountered opposition on his march from Memphis, in October; and then, finding the Elk River to be impassible, he was obliged to ascend it to Fayetteville. This caused considerable delay, so that he did not arrive at Bridgeport until the 13th of November. Sherman reached Chattanooga on the 15th, when he held a conference with Grant. Next day, having surveyed the lines of Thomas, they rode to a point on the west bank of the Tennessee, whence they could examine more closely that part of the river, where the Army of the Tennessee should cross. While unobserved, they saw the enemy's camps stretching from Lookout Mountain across the valley of Chattanooga Creek, and along the west side of Missionary Ridge on to Chickamauga Creek. At this time, the investing army of Bragg was about 60,000 strong, nor was he aware of the large reinforcements Grant had received, bringing his army now to 80,000 men. However, the position held by the Confederates more than counterbalanced their disparity of numbers. Yet, in the disposition of his troops, Bragg's works were fully twelve miles in length, a line too extensive to be properly defended against an opposing army in such great force. In his arrangements for battle, General Grant directed

[45] See General Badeau's "Military History of Ulysses S. Grant," Vol. i., chap. xi., p. 441.

[46] See a detailed account of the military movements which led to the battle of Chattanooga, written by Professor Henry Coppée, LL.D., in the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. ii., pp. 41, 42.

[47] See "Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. v., pp. 595, 596.

Sherman's corps—his left wing—to cross the river above Chattanooga, and to attack in force the northern slopes of Missionary Ridge; Hooker's divisions were to form his right wing, and to seize Lookout Mountain; while Thomas in the centre was to cover Sherman's crossing, and afterwards to watch his opportunity for storming Missionary Ridge on the western side.[48]

During the night of the 23rd, Sherman's troops drifted down the river in boats, and before daylight the crossing began. In the afternoon, they were in possession of the whole northern extremity of Missionary Ridge. On this morning also, Thomas had seized a steep craggy knoll called Orchard Knob in front of his lines, and there his troops entrenched themselves. In like combination, Hooker had marched his troops against Lookout Mountain, which he assailed on the north and west sides; then the Confederates became disorganised, and were driven over the rocks and precipices into the valley. Hooker secured about 1,300 prisoners, and then established his lines on the eastern sides of that mountain; but as a misty rain had fallen all day, the clouds that lowered over the summits in the morning had gradually settled into the valley, and thus completely screened it from his view. Anticipating the withdrawal of the enemy from the crests during that night, he sent forward detachments to scale them. Meantime, deserting and burning their camps, the Confederate troops not only withdrew their right, but likewise their centre, to occupy a new position along the western slopes of Missionary Ridge. Therefore, on the night of the 24th, Grant's army was in one unbroken line from the north end of Lookout Mountain, through Chattanooga Valley, to the north end of Missionary Ridge. As chief of artillery, Brevet General John Milton Brannan[49] rendered efficient service in covering the movements of the troops.

On the morning of the 25th, Hooker moved down the east slopes of Lookout Mountain to cross Chattanooga Creek, in order to reach Rossville Gap, and thus to get in Bragg's rear; but, the bridge there had to be reconstructed, and this caused a delay of three hours. Nevertheless, when the stream was crossed, his enemy was forced through the gorge, and Hooker proceeded to clear the Ridge. For this purpose, his subordinates Osterhaus[50] moved on its east, crept on the Ridge itself, and Geary with the batteries assailed its west flank. When this disposition had been made, the Confederates fell back from their advanced lines, while numbers were taken prisoners; and about sunset, those who had not been killed or captured endeavoured to escape along the Ridge, and ran into Johnston's division of the Fourteenth Corps. These fugitives

[48] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. ii., pp. 41, 42.

[49] He was an Irish American, and had previously served in the Mexican war from 1846 to 1848, as also in the Florida war, 1852, 1853. After the Confederate war terminated, he was made Brevet Major-General. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. i., p. 181.

[50] Peter Joseph Osterhaus was born in Coblentz, Germany, about 1830. See *ibid.*, Vol. iv., p. 603.

surrendered, and thus on the right, Hooker had completely succeeded.[51]

During the progress of that battle, Grant took his station on Orchard Knob, from which he had an excellent view of all that occurred up and down the valley, as also along the western slopes of Missionary Ridge, then held by the Confederates. At an early hour, Sherman began his attack on their right and steadily advanced, thus threatening to cut off their stores and supplies at Chickamauga station on the eastward railroad. It had been arranged that Thomas should make an attack on the centre, when reinforcements were sufficiently withdrawn to weaken it; but, as column after column had been directed against Sherman, his troops were heavily pressed. At length, Grant gave the signal for Thomas to advance with the army of the Cumberland. The men had been ordered to carry the line of entrenchments at the base of the Ridge, and then to halt. However, when the Confederates deserted their outposts and ran up the hill, the Federal troops followed, carried away by their enthusiasm. On seeing this, Grant ordered those on the right and left to march forward. The fire of the enemy now became very deadly, while the centre brigades were broken into several groups, so that the lines were all in confusion. Nevertheless, when several gallant officers and privates had been struck down, the top crests were at last gained. At this juncture in the battle, General Sheridan was particularly distinguished for his bravery and conduct.[52]

At the time when that charge had been made, General Bragg and his staff were near, while a desperate hand-to-hand struggle was still maintained. Some Confederate guns were now seized, and even turned against their lines. Bragg had supposed that the chief movement was intended against his right, to sever communications with Longstreet and the east; but when he found Sherman on that quarter still tenaciously holding his ground, Hooker coming victoriously along Missionary Ridge in the rear of his left, while the centre of his lines was now pierced, he gave up all for lost. Having abandoned their positions near the railroad tunnel in front of Sherman, the Confederates were now in disorder all over the field. Then Bragg with his staff officers rode eastwards down the hill, and at midnight his troops were in full retreat.[53] The moonlight pursuit was still continued by Sheridan's corps for a considerable distance, although greatly fatigued owing to the desperate and prolonged struggle in which they had been engaged all that day. This victorious assault at Chattanooga cost the Union army the loss of 753 killed, 4,722 wounded, and 349 captured or missing; but owing to their strong defensive position, the Confederates had only 361 killed and 2,180 wounded, while 4,146 were captured or missing after their defeat.[54] The

[51] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. ii., pp. 41, 42.

[52] See "Personal Memoirs of P. H. Sheridan, General U. S. Army," Vol. i., chap. xvi., pp. 307 to 324.

[53] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xiv., chap. lxviii., pp. 79 to 97.

[54] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. viii., chap. v., p. 155.

utter route of a division constituting an army in itself, the loss of seventy pieces of artillery, of over seven thousand stand of arms, and many prisoners, seemed to be a final and an irrecoverable catastrophe. The Federal General Sherman, nevertheless, was so fiercely resisted next day, by the Confederate General Cleburne at White Oak Ridge, that he did not find himself in a position to follow up such a signal victory.[55]

In August, General Burnside had command of an army at Camp Nelson near Richmond, Ky., and which was about 20,000 strong. At that time, Buckner held possession of Knoxville in East Tennessee. On the 16th, Burnside moved in that direction; but his march was a difficult one, and delayed by obstructions on the way. However, on his approach Buckner abandoned that place, and thus leaving Frazier's command at Cumberland without support, he hastened to join Bragg. Burnside occupied Knoxville on the 3rd of September, and on the 9th of that month, he captured 2,000 prisoners and 14 guns at Cumberland Gap; thus restoring East Tennessee to the Union, and with scarcely any loss.[56]

In the beginning of November and according to a previous arrangement, with 12,000 infantry and a large body of cavalry Longstreet had set out for Knoxville, which movement considerably weakened Bragg's army. Grant immediately telegraphed to Burnside that he should stand firm, while anxiously expecting the arrival of Sherman. The rebel forces under General Longstreet were so reduced for want of food and clothing, that he was unable to move with any great degree of celerity. A large number of his men were barefooted, while the weather was extremely cold and the mountains were covered with snow. Supplies and reinforcements had been promised him, but these did not arrive. However, Burnside was obliged to retreat before him, until he reached Campbell's Station on the 16th of November. After a severe action in this position, the Federals were compelled to retire into the defences of Knoxville. Thither they were followed by Longstreet, and on the 17th he tried to carry the town by an assault which failed. The place contained provisions for about six weeks, and the fortifications had been greatly strengthened. The Confederates now attempted its reduction by famine, and they sat down before it. However, having heard of Bragg's defeat at Chattanooga, Longstreet determined to try another assault on the 29th; and accordingly, early on that morning his troops approached Fort Sanders—the chief key to the defences—and although received with a deadly fire they crossed the ditch, but were then repulsed. Another column advanced, and with a like result. The Confederates lost 500 men in killed and wounded. After the victory at Chattanooga, General Sherman was despatched with his troops to raise the siege. Having sent Burnside notice of his approach, on the 2nd of December he received a

[55] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. ii., Art. CHATTANOOGA, p. 42.

[56] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xiv., chap. lxviii., pp. 97, 98.

message on the night of the 5th, that Longstreet had retreated towards Virginia, followed by Burnside's cavalry.[57]

In this Chattanooga campaign, the Federal loss was 5,616, according to the returns. The Confederates lost about 10,000, and of these 6,142 were prisoners.[58] Such well-arranged combinations effectively pushed the Southern forces back on their centre of operations, towards the close of this year.[59] By the Confederate Government and popular opinion in the South, General Bragg was censured for his want of success; soon afterwards, at his own request, he was also removed from command.[60] General Johnston was then nominated to succeed him.

At the beginning of October, General Lee's army occupied the line of the Rapidan, and General Meade's head-quarters were at Culpepper Court House. A large portion of General Lee's army commenced secretly a march northwards by the sides of the Blue Ridge, and past the right flank of General Meade's army. This dangerous movement was discovered by General Meade, on the 10th of October.[61] The whole Federal army was then withdrawn from the line of the Rappahannock to Centreville and Fairfax. The Confederate forces seized and occupied the position of Manassas. Having taken 2,000 prisoners, and destroyed the Orange and Alexandria Railroad from Manassas to the Rapidan, Lee fell back to his former position near Orange Court House.[62] His troops were withdrawn on the 18th. Neither army was then in a position to risk a general engagement. However, at Kelly's Ford on the 7th of November a battle took place between the opposing forces. This resulted in a victory for the Federals.[63] On the 19th of November to demonstrate the public gratitude felt for their brave troops, a great concourse of people assembled at Gettysburg, to dedicate a portion of the battle-field as a cemetery for the remains of those national soldiers, who had there fallen in defence of the Union. President Lincoln was present on that occasion, and he delivered a remarkable oration.[64] Having advanced beyond the Rapidan, and ascertained about the close of November, that it should be inexpedient to attack the Confederates in their entrenched position, Meade recrossed that river on the 1st of December. Thus for the year 1863, the active campaigns of the Army of the Potomac were closed.[65]

[57] See General Badeau's "Military History of Ulyses S. Grant," Vol. i., chap. xiii., pp. 531 to 546.

[58] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xiv., chap. lxviii., p. 102.

[59] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletchers' "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. iii., chap. v., pp. 70 to 94.

[60] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. i., p. 594.

[61] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. viii., chap. ix., p. 238.

[62] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xv., chap. lxxi., p 159.

[63] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. viii., chap. xi., pp. 242 to 245.

[64] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xv., chap. lxx., p. 152.

[65] See the "Annual Register; for the year 1863." New Series. Part i., Foreign History, chap. vii., p. 332.

On the 23rd of December, the Rebel Congress passed a bill prohibiting any dealing in the currency of the United States, under penalty of forfeiting the amount so bought, sold, circulated or used, or a sum equal thereto; and, moreover, the offender was subject to a fine of not more than 20,000 dollars, nor less than 500 dollars, and to be imprisoned for not less than three months, nor for more than three years. Meantime the depreciation of the Confederate paper money was increasing each day; while various futile efforts were made to raise a revenue, through a grinding process of direct taxation, for the heavy war expenses.[66] On the 27th of December, having proceeded to Dalton, General Joseph E. Johnston had been recommended by suggestions from Richmond to assume the offensive; but on reviewing his forces there, he only found an effective force of less than 40,000, while Grant's army was considerably more numerous and also advantageously posted. His own position was quite insecure, and it had only been occupied, because the Federal pursuit of Bragg ceased at that point.[67] On assuming this chief command, General Polk then took his place as commander over the Department of Mississippi and East Louisiana.

On the 8th of December 1863, the President issued his annual message with a proclamation of amnesty and reconstruction, hoping for the return of the various revolted States to the Union, and which were held under military occupation. The time was then propitious, for besides the Unionist sentiment that largely prevailed in several of those States, many of the more reflective among the seceders were disposed to believe, that the tide of success was fast turning from them, and that peace should be desirable before further losses and privations must be endured, if the war were to continue. Moreover, numbers of persons in the South were greatly discontented with the arbitrary government by which they were controlled, and they were anxious to revolt from the despotism of Jefferson Davis. Although recommendations contained in the President's message met with very general approval, the extreme Radical Republican party were opposed, however, to the policy and plan it enunciated; and this opposition was manifested in Congress by several of its members in the succeeding session.[68]

The State of Arkansas had been hurried into the Confederacy by revolutionary terrorism; and in the spring of 1862, her Governor openly threatened to secede from secession. Despotic military rule had prevented Unionist manifestations until after the capitulation of Vicksburg.[69] When General Frederick Steele moved a column of about 13,000 troops from Helena to Little Rock, that place was surrendered to him on the evening of September 10th 1863.[70] Soon after the occupation of Little

[66] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. ii., Art. CONFEDERATE STATES, p. 352.

[67] See General Joseph E. Johnston's "Narrative of Military Operations," pp. 263 to 276.

[68] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix. chap. v., pp. 104 to 127.

[69] See *ibid.*, Vol. viii., chap. xvi., pp. 409, 410.

[70] See "War Records," Vol. xxii., Part i., p. 14.

Rock, a movement for the reconstruction of Arkansas commenced, when a formal and popular convention of delegates met there, on the 8th of January 1864. On the 22nd of that month, these delegates adopted an amended State Constitution, and declared the Act of Secession null and void. They also abolished slavery, and wholly repudiated the Confederate debt. They ordained a provisional State Government, appointed and inaugurated Isaac Murphy[71] provisional governor, and appointed an election to be held on the 14th of March to ratify their proceedings. On that day and on the two days succeeding, the votes of over forty of the fifty-two counties were cast in approval and with practical unanimity. On April 11th the new State Government was inaugurated at Little Rock with imposing ceremonies, when in due course, Senators and Representatives were elected and sent to Washington.[72] There, however, Congress had raised a question regarding the reconstruction of States occupied by the Federal forces, and for a time they were refused admission to seats.[73]

The question of retaining or of abolishing the old institution of slavery, together with the interruption caused by military operations had divided the opinions of Unionists in the State of Louisiana, during the years 1862 and 1863. However, when under the direction of General Banks an election took place on the 22nd of February 1864, Michael Hahn[74] was elected Governor, and he was inaugurated with imposing civic and military ceremonies on the 4th of March. Soon afterwards, the President invested him with the powers previously exercised by the military government.[75] On the 11th of May Governor Hahn was enabled to notify, that the ordinance of Emancipation without compensation had been adopted, and was then the law of Louisiana. In Convention, a perfected Constitution was adopted on July 22nd; and, in it, the Legislature had powers to grant the right of suffrage to negroes, and to place every negro upon an equal footing with whites before the law. On the 5th of September following, that Constitution was ratified by a large majority of the popular vote cast in its favour.[76]

Owing to the action of armies in the field and military complications, the State of Tennessee could not safely make arrangements for reconstruction, until the year 1863 had closed. On the 21st of January 1864, a large public meeting was held at Nashville, when Governor Johnson delivered a stirring speech, declaring slavery to be dead, and that treason should be made odious, while traitors must be punished and impoverished.[77] An election was ordered for the following March. How-

[71] He was of Irish descent.

[72] See McPherson's "History of the Rebellion," p. 527.

[73] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. viii., chap. xvi., pp. 411 to 418.

[74] Born in Bavaria, November 24th 1830, and when an infant, he was brought by his parents to New York. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iii., p. 27.

[75] See Raymond's "Life of Abraham Lincoln," p. 489.

[76] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. viii., chap. xvii., pp. 419 to 437.

[77] The President was in favour of Governor Johnson's plan for recon-

ever, the question of slavery-abolition in the State caused final action to be delayed until after the battle at Nashville, when Hood was driven out of the State. Then in January 1865, a Convention was held, and the old Constitution was so amended as to prohibit slavery. On the 22nd of February a popular vote was taken on that subject, and the amended Constitution was formally ratified. On the 4th of March, the election of William G. Brownlow[78] as Governor and of a Union Legislature followed.[79]

Although the power of the Union party had been effectually established in the State of Maryland in 1861, by the November elections; still, the question of emancipation formed the subject of contention for a long time, and rival conventions were held, while complaints were addressed to the President regarding the interference of soldiers to keep order at the polling places.[80] The emancipationist ticket finally triumped at the election held on the 4th of November 1863. After some delay and much debate, a Convention was formed at Annapolis on the 11th of April 1864, and by a decisive majority, it decreed the abolition of slavery on the 24th of June. At length, on the 12th and 13th of October, the new Constitution was put to the test of a popular vote. It was carried by 30,174 for, and 29,799 against, thus leaving the narrow majority of only 375 in favour of emancipation.[81]

The strife of factions in the State of Missouri was rife during the military occupation of General Schofield; but in November 1863, the question was raised in the Legislature to elect United States' Senators, and to call a State Convention which might deal with the subject of emancipation. The troubles there caused were greatly lessened, when the President created Schofield Major-General, but had recalled him, so that General Rosecrans, in January 1864, might succeed to the military administration of Missouri affairs. In fine, when the war of faction had been somewhat lulled, a Convention was ordered to be held towards the close of that year, and it assembled in St. Louis on the 6th of January 1865, when it also decreed the freedom of slaves.[82] This declaration was ratified by the new constitutional ordinance of immediate and unrecompensed emancipation, which had been voted for by two-thirds of the Missouri electorate, while that political revolution became complete and irrevocable.[83]

struction, as opposed to that of men holding more advanced views. See Raymond's "Life of Abraham Lincoln," p. 596.

[78] Born in Wythe County, Va., August 29th 1805. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. ii., pp. 415, 416.

[79] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. viii., chap. xviii., pp. 438 to 449.

[80] See Scharf's "History of Maryland," Vol. iii., pp. 560 to 566.

[81] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. viii., chap. xix., pp. 450 to 468.

[82] See the "Annual Cyclopædia" of 1864, p. 553.

[83] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. viii., chap. xx., pp. 469 to 484.

CHAPTER XXXV.

Movements of General William Tecumseh Sherman in the West—Reconniasance of Mobile by Admiral Farragut—General Ulysses S. Grant appointed Lieutenant-General over all the United States Army—Preparations for an Advance against Richmond—Condition of the Northern and Southern States at the Opening of this Campaign—Capture of Plymouth, North Carolina, by the Confederates—Movements of Grant's Army—Battles of the Wilderness—Battle at Spottsylvania Court House—General Sheridan's Cavalry Raid—Fighting on the North Anna River—Battle of Cold Harbour.

AFTER his great victory at Chattanooga, General Grant was occupied during that Autumn and Winter in strengthening his positions, in repairing the railroads necessary for communications, and in procuring subsistence for his troops. About the 20th of December, General Sherman returned to Nashville. As Commander of the Department of the Tennessee, he had asked and obtained Grant's permission to go down the Mississippi River, to strike a blow against the Confederates in the interior, and especially to move on Meridian, a railway centre which had been held by Polk. It was also expected that General Banks should make a feint on Mobile, to distract the enemy's attention from his own enterprise. Meanwhile, a simultaneous move was designed to be made by General W. Sooy Smith with a large cavalry force, to ride from Memphis through the interior of the country and to join Sherman at Meridian. The Confederate forces were known to be scattered in detachments over the State of Mississippi, while engaged in collecting taxes and impressing conscripts. Accordingly, having started from Vicksburg on the 3rd of February 1864, with two columns commanded respectively by Hurlbut and M'Pherson, all unnecessary luggage having been left behind, Sherman set out for Meridian 150 miles eastward. On the march, however, the Confederate cavalry had several skirmishes with his troops; but on the 5th he reached Jackson, from which the enemy fled. On the 9th, M'Pherson's advance column arrived at Morton, where he halted to break up railroads, while Hurlbut's then led on to Meridian[1] which Sherman entered on the 14th. There he destroyed the arsenals and storehouses, as also the railroads in every direction for miles around. However, the cavalry force under General Smith failed to start in sufficient time. Afterwards it was met by Forrest, who drove it back. Having waited in vain for Smith's arrival at Meridian during a whole week, Sherman then began to retrace his steps towards Vicksburg, which he entered on the 29th of February. Thence he went down to New Orleans, where he arranged with Banks to send a corps of some 10,000 men to assist his meditated operations west of the river.

[1] See Dr. John Abraham Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xvii., chap. lxxiv., pp. 208 to 211.

Immediately afterwards Sherman went up the Mississippi to report his proceedings to General Grant.[2]

The year 1864 opened, before any great or decisive blow could be struck; but with brightening prospects for the Northern States, the hopes of their people lying chiefly in the relative condition of the opposing armies. It had been in contemplation to capture Mobile, the entrance to its harbour being guarded by Forts Gaines and Morgan. In the harbour itself, the Confederates stationed the iron-clad ram Tennessee and the gun-boats Gaines, Morgan and Selma; besides, torpedoes and other obstructions had been placed in the channel. On the morning of the 20th January, Admiral Farragut made a reconnaissance of those forts at the entrance of that harbour,[3] in the sea-front of which a blockade of Federal vessels was maintained. But, with those ships then at his disposal, and knowing that strong fortifications, shoals and torpedoes obstructed the mouth of the opening channel, he deemed it prudent to wait for ironclad vessels to arrive.[4] That demonstration, however, caused the greatest alarm to the Confederate authorities.

A bill had been introduced to revive the grade of Lieutenant-General —a distinction which had not been conferred heretofore on any citizen of the Republic except Washington and General Scott—when after a good deal of discussion, it was passed through Congress on the 26th of February, and it was sanctioned by the President on the 29th. As if approving the public choice on signing the bill, Mr. Lincoln immediately nominated General Grant to the Senate for that office. This appointment was confirmed, and on the 3rd of March he was ordered to Washington from the West. Setting out next day, on the 9th he was formally installed by the President. Having now resolved that a movement should be made against Richmond and with the aid of sufficient force, Grant visited General Meade next day at his headquarters. The latter suggested that he might desire to bring with him such a general as Sherman to command the Army of the Potomac, and in that case not to hesitate about making a change, as he would willingly serve in any other position to the best of his ability. However Grant assured him, that no thought had been entertained for making any change, and that Sherman could not be spared from the West.[5] Accordingly, Major-General Meade was directed to hold immediate command in the army of the Potomac, where General Grant determined to exercise supervision over the movements of all the Northern armies. On the 11th, Grant returned to Washington, and on the day following, by orders of the War Department he was placed in command of all the United States armies.[6]

[2] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. viii., chap. xiii., pp. 330 to 332.

[3] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. lxvii., chap. lxxxv., pp. 220, 221.

[4] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. ii., p. 417.

[5] See "Personal Memoirs of U. S. Grant," Vol. ii., pp. 117 to 123.

[6] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. viii., chap. xiii., pp. 344 to 345.

When he had been assigned to this high position, a presage of success was entertained from the start, for his eminent military qualities had been already proved.[7] Without a moment's respite, the commander-in-chief returned to the West for a brief visit, and to take temporary leave of those officers and soldiers whom he led to so many splendid victories. Only to Major-General William Tecumseh Sherman he then communicated that plan of campaign on which he had resolved. Assigning to the latter his part in the enterprise, between them the greatest secrecy was preserved. Soon afterwards, Sherman was appointed to command the military Division of the Mississippi. This charge embraced all the armies and territories east of that river to the Alleghanies, and the department of Arkansas west of the Mississippi. He had likewise immediate command of those armies operating against Johnston. Then too, M'Pherson was appointed to command the Department of the Tennessee, as immediate successor to Sherman, while Logan was promoted to the command of M'Pherson's corps.[8]

Preparations were next made for a movement, combined with judgment and caution, in which an advance southwards was designed; while a vast army, with sufficient war material and on a scale of the greatest magnitude, was collected, to distract the attention and to engage the resources of the enemy, at their seat of government. Thus while General Grant as commander-in-chief was destined to move in front, and while in pursuance of the general plan, he directed operations to conduct and to support the meditated assault against Richmond; to General Sherman was assigned his field of action in the South-West, where he had been entrusted with a formidable army, embodied for an enterprise sufficiently hazardous and difficult; but destined to take the initiative in that campaign, and to carry the Confederate positions in reverse, by driving the defenders back on their centre, or by breaking their communications with the forces near Richmond. Then he was instructed to move against Johnston's army, to break it up, and to march into the enemy's country, so far as he could. He was directed likewise to inflict all possible damage upon their war resources. If the enemy in front showed signs of joining Lee, Sherman was to follow him up to the full extent of his ability, while Grant would try to prevent the concentration of Lee upon him.[9]

On the 15th of March, General Grant notified General N. P. Banks of the importance attached to the possession of Shreveport, at the earliest possible day. If he found the taking of that town should occupy from ten to fifteen days—more time than General Sherman had given his troops to be absent from their command—he was directed to send them back at that date specified by Sherman, even if it led to an abandonment of the Red River expedition, for the force under his command should be necessary to aid special movements east of the Mississippi.

[7] See "Personal Memoirs of P. H. Sheridan, General U. S. Army," Vol. ii., chap. viii., pp. 202, 203.

[8] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. iii., chap. xiii., p. 345.

[9] See Dr. John William Draper's

Were his expedition to prove successful, Banks was instructed to hold Shreveport and the Red River, with such force as he might deem necessary, and to direct the remainder of his troops to the neighbourhood of New Orleans. Other detailed instructions were transmitted to him. One of these was, to endeavour in co-operation with Admiral Farragut to make an attack on Mobile.

Separate instructions were issued to Major General Meade and to Major General Butler, as to how they were to operate against Lee's army, then strongly posted on the Rapidan. On the 19th of April, in order to secure full co-operation between their respective armies, the latter was notified that General Grant expected him to move from Fort Monroe, on the very same day that General Meade moved from Culpepper. Besides, it was intended to bring Gilmore's and W. F. Smith's corps north, to co-operate with General Butler against Richmond south of the James River.[10]

A very considerable force, under command of Major General Sigel, was held back as a reserve for the protection of West Virginia, and the frontiers of Maryland and Pennsylvania, from disturbing raids. Moreover General Sigel was directed to organize all his available force into two expeditions. These were to move from Beverley and Charleston, under command of Generals Ord and Crook. Directions were specially given to destroy the East Tennessee and Virginia railroad. Subsequently, General Ord having been relieved at his own request, General Sigel was instructed through his own suggestion, to give up the expedition by Beverly, and to form two columns. One of these, numbering about ten thousand men, was placed under General Crook on the Kanawha. Another was stationed on the Shenandoah numbering about seven thousand men. This division was to assemble between Cumberland and the Shenandoah, while the infantry and artillery were advanced to Cedar Creek, with such cavalry as could be made available at that moment. Thus, it was intended to threaten the enemy in the Shenandoah valley, and to advance so far as possible; while General Crook should take possession of Lewisburg, with part of his force, and move down the Tennessee railroad, to cripple the communications of the Southern army.

At that period, the Mississippi River was strongly garrisoned by Federal troops from St. Louis, to its mouth.[11] The line of the Arkansas was also held, thus giving armed possession to the Northern army of all west and north of the Mississippi. A few points in Southern Louisiana, near that river, were held by the Federals, together with a small garrison at and near the mouth of the Rio Grande. The vast territory of Arkansas, Louisiana and Texas was

"History of the American Civil War," Vol. viii., sect. xviii., chap. lxxviii., pp. 257 to 264.

[10] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. viii., chap. xiv., p. 349.

[11] Much of the following narrative has been gleaned from the Report of Lieutenant-General Ulysses S. Grant, dated Head Quarters, Armies of the Potomac, Washington, D.C., July 22nd 1865, and addressed to the President of the United States.

in the almost undisputed possession of the Confederates. Bands of guerillas were scattered through Missouri, Arkansas and along the Mississippi River, while the disloyal character of many among the population compelled the use of a large number of troops, to keep navigation open on the river and to protect loyal people living to the west of it. Eastwardly, the United States held a line running along the Tennessee and Holston Rivers, including nearly all the State of Tennessee. A small foothold had been obtained in Georgia, but only sufficient to protect East Tennessee from Confederate incursions. West Virginia was substantially within the United States lines. With the exception of its northern border, the Potomac river, and a small area about the mouth of James river, covered by the troops at Norfolk and Fort Monroe, as also the territory covered by the army of the Potomac lying along the Rapidan, the remainder of Virginia was in the possession of the Southerners. Along the sea-coast, positions had been obtained at Plymouth, Washington and Newbern, in North Carolina; at Beaufort, Folly and Morris Islands, Hilton Head, Fort Pulaski and Port Royal, in South Carolina; as likewise at Fernandina and St. Augustine, in Florida. Key West and Pensacola were also in possession of the North, while all the important ports of the country were blockaded by its navy.

The Confederates had then concentrated the bulk of their forces east of the Mississippi. They were organized into two armies, one of these commanded by General Robert E. Lee, and the other by General J. E. Johnston. These were their ablest and best military leaders. The army commanded by Lee occupied the south bank of the Rapidan, extending from Mine Run westward. It was strongly intrenched, covering and defending Richmond. The army under Johnston occupied a strongly intrenched position at Dalton, covering and defending Atlanta, an important post in Georgia. There, several railways converged in different directions. The Southerners had also a large cavalry force under Forrest in north-east Mississippi; besides a considerable armament in the Shenandoah valley, and in the western part of Virginia: as likewise in the extreme eastern part of Tennessee. Confronting the sea-coast garrisons were guerrilla forces, holding blockaded ports in check, and where the United States had no foothold upon the land. On the 17th of April, with a land force under General Hoke and an iron-clad ram, the enemy attacked Plymouth, N.C., commanded by Henry W. Wessells, and the Federal gun-boats there stationed. After severe fighting, that place was carried by assault, while the entire garrison 1,600, the forts and armament were captured. The gun-boat Smithfield was sunk, and the Miami was disabled. However, after the destruction of the Albemarle, the town fell into the hands of the National troops.[12]

Towards the end of March, the General-in-chief had established his

[12] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of National Biography," Vol. vi., pp. 438, 439.

headquarters at Culpepper Court-house. Making preliminary arrangements and observations, with occasional visits to Washington, occupied him fully a month. As second in command, to Meade was assigned the details of supervision and execution. The army of the Potomac was consolidated into three corps:—Hancock commanded the Second, Warren the Fifth, and Sedgwick the Sixth, the former First and Third being distributed. The Ninth corps, commanded by Burnside, acted for a time independently of Meade, while Sheridan commanded the cavalry consolidated into a corps. Altogether, the army of the Potomac numbered 122,146 men;[13] while the total of the Union forces enrolled and available for duty, on the 1st of May, amounted to 662,345.[14] The Confederates were scarcely able to muster one-fifth part of this strength to stay the final effort.

The headquarters of General Lee were at Orange Court house, south of the Rapidan river, and his army guarded its banks from eighteen to twenty miles: Ewell commanded the right corps, and Hill the left; while Longstreet, having returned from Tennessee with two divisions, was held in reserve at Gordonsville. Strong works at Mine Run, a rivulet running northwards into the Rappahannock river below its junction with the Rapidan, together with the tangled and gloomy thickets of the Wilderness about ten miles west from Fredericksburg, protected Lee's right wing. At the opening of this campaign, his army numbered not less than 61,953.[15]

The Wilderness in which the battle of Chancellorsville had been formerly fought was a region of worn-out tobacco fields, intersected with deep ravines and narrow roads, covered with scraggy oaks, sassafras, hazel and pine trees.[16] In these jungles, it was hardly possible to employ artillery, and for purposes of defence, their intricacies of position were exceptionally advantageous. With such an insufficient army, however, General Lee was enabled to resist for a long time the advance of General Grant.[17]

Owing to unfavourable weather and a bad condition of the roads, the Federal operations were delayed until the 1st of May. Everything being then in readiness and the roads more passable, orders were given for a general movement of all the eastern armies, and not later than the 4th of that month. However, an error of judgment was committed, and a south-westerly line for march could have been more judiciously selected, as the country was there more open for an advancing force.

Early on that morning, the cavalry under Sheridan leading, Hancock's

[13] See General A. A. Humphrey's account, "The Virginia Campaign of '64 and '65," pp. 14 to 17.

[14] According to the "Report of the Secretary of War," November 22nd 1865, Washington.

[15] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. viii., chap. xiv. p. 352.

[16] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xix., chap. lxxxii., p. 369.

[17] See Joseph Irving's "Annals of our Time," p. 517.

corps passed the Rapidan at Ely's Ford on the left of the Union army, while Warren's and Sedgwick's corps crossed at Germania Ford on the right. Having marched twelve miles on that day, Hancock's corps arrived eastwards from Wilderness Run, and reached Chancellorsville about ten o'clock; while Warren, who had much farther to march, arrived at Wilderness Tavern and joined him about two p.m. Meanwhile, as the Union troops there rested for that day after dark, the corps of Ewell and Hill had marched to positions on the Federal right, while Longstreet was hurrying onwards from Gordonsville to join them for an attack on the enemy, when moving forward the following morning. Lee was full of confidence, that his adversary had made a fatal mistake,[18] in taking this direction, while his own troops lay in wait to strike the Federals in flank on their march. Early on the 5th, Warren's corps began the advance, but met by Ewell's force it was driven back, until two of Sedgwick's divisions came up, when a series of detached and sanguinary skirmishes and attacks took place until about four o'clock, p.m., but without any decisive result. Meantime, the forward march of Hancock had been countermanded, and as Hill's corps had already engaged General Getty's advanced column, he took up a position and began to entrench. Between four and five o'clock in the afternoon, Meade brought up some of his divisions in support, and ordered an attack.[19] After a desperate conflict through the brushwood, Hill's troops gradually gave way before them, until night fell. The losses of Hancock, however, were specially severe;[20] still the encounter of this day was without advantage to either side.[21]

The battle of the Wilderness was renewed by General Grant on the 6th at five o'clock, a.m., and a simultaneous advance against the Confederate lines was ordered. General Wadsworth had been lying in wait all the previous night, and when Hancock moved forward with his divisions against Hill, thus attacked in front and flank, after a desperate struggle his soldiers gave way retreating a mile and a half. Hancock's troops then advanced, but in a confused fashion, through the dense woods, until arrested in turn by the approach of Longstreet's corps, now arriving in support of Hill.[22] Early on the morning of the 6th, General Burnside was leading his Ninth corps, consisting of 20,000 men, into action near the Wilderness Tavern. Some of his troops—largely composed of newly recruited men—had marched a distance of over thirty miles, crossing both the Rappahannock and Rapidan Rivers. This was

[18] See General A. L. Long's "Memoirs of Robert E. Lee," p. 327.

[19] The relative positions of the various corps and divisions are shown on a Map of the Wilderness, in "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. viii., chap. xiv., p. 359

[20] General Alexander Hayes, one of his best officers, was killed, while General George Washington Getty and Colonel Samuel S. Carroll, although grievously wounded, refused to leave the fight.

[21] See the "Annual Register for the year 1864," Part i., Foreign History, chap. vi., p. 263.

[22] See Jefferson Davis' "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii. Part iv., chap. xlvi., p. 519.

a timely reinforcement,[23] and halting his line of march, Grant then faced his troops westwards, placing Sedgwick's corps on the right, Warren in the centre, and Hancock on the left, while Burnside on coming up was to fill a space between the two latter.[24] From the extremity of Grant's right to that of his left, the distance was about five miles. Meantime, Lee had called Longstreet's corps and Anderson's division to make a determined onslaught on Hancock's corps, while Ewell began a demonstration or feint after daylight on Sedgwick's corps opposed to him. Endeavouring to check the enemy's advance, General Wadsworth was killed towards noon; while on the Confederate side, General Micah Jenkins was killed, and General Longstreet was seriously wounded.[25] The disordered troops of Hancock were then forced back to their entrenchments on the Brock Road.[26] The corps of Sedgwick and of Warren made a vain attempt to carry the entrenchments of Ewell opposed to them. Nevertheless, about three o'clock p.m., General Grant had ordered another advance on the Confederates to take place at six o'clock; but, he was anticipated by General Lee, who soon after four p.m. directed in person an assault on Hancock. This attack was gallantly repulsed. The woods in front of the Federal breast-works had caught fire, and the enemy advanced under cover of the flames. They retired, however, with very heavy loss.

This battle continued with unabated fury until the night came. The whole Federal army reinforced by Burnside had been brought into action, and surging among the woods and thickets, the conflict raged with varying success.[27] While the brigades of Generals Alexander Shaler[28] and Truman Seymour[29] were withdrawing from the front of some breastworks they had been guarding, the Confederates, after dark, made a feeble attempt to turn the right flank of the Federalists. These were thrown into great confusion at the time. Several hundred prisoners were then captured, together with Generals Shaler and Seymour. This attack created considerable alarm, as the right wing was thought to have been seriously threatened. But the promptness of General Wright, in withdrawing somewhat his lines, restored order; while General Sedgwick, who was present, and who commanded that

[23] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. iii., chap. xi., p. 210.

[24] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xix., chap. lxxxii., p. 372.

[25] These latter were mistaken by their own troops for some of the Federal cavalry, and fired upon, while owing to the same curious fatality, the right arm of General Lee fell shattered by his side. See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. viii., chap. xiv., p. 366

[26] He then sent a brigade under Colonel Daniel Leasure to sweep the woods along his whole front. He met only a few, who fell back without fighting. See Humphrey's work "The Virginia Campaign of '64 and '65," p. 45.

[27] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. iii., chap. xi., pp. 212, 213.

[28] Born in Haddam, Conn., March 19th 1827. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. v., p. 480.

[29] See *ibid.*, p. 479.

part of the line, soon reformed it. On the morning of the 7th, skirmishers were sent out along the front, and reconnaisances showed that the Confederates had fallen behind their entrenched lines. Pickets were placed in the front, and these covered a part of the battle-field. From that movement it was evident to General Grant, that the two days' fighting proved the Confederates unable further to maintain a contest in the open field, notwithstanding their advantages of position. They now waited an attack behind their works, which were undoubtedly formidable.

Intelligence received on that day announced that General Butler had reached City Point. A new manœuvre was then resolved on by General Grant, who determined to push forwards and to place his whole force on more open ground, between the enemy and Richmond. This was thought also to be an excellent means for securing the enterprise of General Butler.[30] Orders were at once issued for a movement by the right flank. About 3 o'clock, p.m., the trains were set in motion.[31] On the night of the 7th, this march was commenced towards Spotsylvania Court House. The fifth corps moved on the most direct road. Having become apprised of this movement, Lee ordered Longstreet's corps, now commanded by General Anderson, to operate against them; and having the shorter line, the Confederates were enabled to reach there before morning.[32] On the 8th, Warren met a force of the enemy, which had been sent out to oppose and delay his advance. General Lee desired to gain time, so that he might fortify the line taken up at Spotsylvania. That opposing force was steadily driven back on the main army, and within the recently constructed works. This was accomplished, notwithstanding, only after considerable fighting, which resulted in severe losses to both armies. During two days, General Grant was occupied bringing his army to a position in front of the Confederate works, which were soon rendered more formidable for attack, than even at that position held in the Wilderness.[33]

Early on the morning of the 9th, having been ordered to cut loose from the Army of the Potomac, and to draw after him the Confederate mounted force, General Sheridan started on a raid southwards and by the rebel right flank, against the enemy's lines of communication with Richmond. The brigade of Custer destroyed the depots on the Virginia Central Railroad at Beaver Dam and at Ashland Stations, besides four trains of cars, large supplies of rations, and many miles of railroad track. He also recaptured about four hundred of the Unionists on their way to Richmond as prisoners of war. On the 10th, Sheridan crossed the South Anna at Ground Squirrel Bridge. General J. E. B. Stuart had made a detour, and succeeded in concentrating his cavalry

[30] See "Personal Memoirs of U. S. Grant," Vol. ii., p. 211.

[31] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. viii., chap. xiv., p. 368.

[32] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. iii., chap. xi., p. 216.

[33] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. viii., chap. xiv., pp. 369, 370.

about six miles due north of Richmond. There Sheridan came up and promptly attacked him, Merritt, Wilson and Custer leading the assault. Stuart was killed in that engagement.[34] His second in command James B. Gordon likewise fell in an attack on Sheridan's rear, at Yellow Tavern. The Confederate horse, then under Fitz Hugh Lee, fled to Richmond, and Sheridan in pursuit forced the first line of works around that city. Finding the second line unlikely to be carried by assault, he recrossed to the north bank of the Chickahominy at Meadow's Bridge, and under a heavy fire. He then moved by a detour to Haxall's Landing on the James River, where he communicated with General Butler. There Sheridan's wants were supplied, and for three days he remained before he returned to rejoin General Grant. This raid had a decided effect in drawing off the whole cavalry force of the Confederates, and in making it comparatively easy to guard the Union lines of communication. On the 24th, General Sheridan reached the Army of the Potomac, having achieved a most brilliant success.[35]

Manœuvring and fighting continued from the 9th to the 11th, but no decisive results were obtained. The corps of Sedgwick and of Warren had been preparing for an attack on the enemy's lines; however, beyond entrenching and skirmishing on both sides, little more was done on the 9th, when that able and distinguished soldier Major-General John Sedgwick, commanding the sixth army corps, was struck by a rifle shot. Instantly he fell dead. Major Gerrard H. G. Wright succeeded him in command.[36]

The position held by Lee at Spotsylvania formed two sides of an irregular triangle; the apex being towards the north, and well supported by breast-works. As opposed to him, Grant's army stretched about six miles, nearly in the form of a crescent, the wings being thrown forward.[37] On the 10th after a heavy artillery fire, an attack was made on Lee's centre by the Fifth corps. In the afternoon, Warren's regiments were swept by a murderous fire, and repulsed; two divisions of Hancock's corps renewed the assault, but with no better success. In front of the Sixth corps, a weak point had been discovered, where a storming column, led by Colonel Emory Upton,[38] rushed forward about 5 o'clock, and broke the Confederate lines, capturing several guns and nearly 1,000 prisoners. That brave soldier also drove back the troops right and left along the entrenchments, but for want of support he was compelled to fall back.[39] It has been estimated, that the loss on either

[34] See Jefferson Davis' "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., part iv., chap. xlv., pp. 508 to 510.

[35] See "Personal Memoirs of P. H. Sheridan," Vol. i., chap. xix., pp. 372 to 393, with accompanying Map of the Richmond Raid.

[36] See General Badeau's "Military History of Ulysses S. Grant," Vol. ii., chap. xvii., pp. 149, 150.

[37] The relative positions of both armies are shown at Spotsylvania from May 8th to the 21st, in a Map of the locality in "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. viii., chap. xv., p. 373.

[38] Born in Batavia, Genesee County, N.Y., August 27th 1839. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. vi., pp. 214, 215.

[39] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War, Vol. iii., sect. xix., chap. lxxxii., pp. 376, 377.

side during the day must have been over 10,000 men, in killed and wounded.[40] The 11th was spent by both armies in a state of inactivity. However, during the afternoon of that day, General Grant made preparations for a renewed assault, at the apex of the Confederate salient.

On the morning of the 12th, at the early hour of 4.35, a general attack was directed against the enemy in position. The second corps, commanded by Major-General Hancock, advanced through a mist, and with loud cheers. The divisions of Barlow and Birney, bursting over the parapets, carried the salient of the Confederate line. Lieutenant-Colonel Denis F. Burke[41] and the re-organised Irish Brigade were among the first to cross the earth-work at the "bloody-angle." With the other troops engaged they advanced, and captured nearly all Johnston's division, consisting of 3,000 men belonging to Ewell's corps, besides himself and Brigadier-General Stewart,[42] as also from 30 to 40 pieces of artillery. The victorious troops then pushed on to carry an interior line of entrenchments. Behind these, Lee now concentrated all his divisions. The resistance was so obstinate, however, that the advantage previously gained did not prove decisive. From the 13th to the 18th of May were days consumed by the Federals in manœuvring, while awaiting the arrival of reinforcements from Washington. The

[40] Among these latter was General Samuel Sprigg Carroll, twice wounded, and afterwards disabled for service during the remainder of the war. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. i., p. 539.

[41] He was born in Cork, Ireland, on the 19th of April 1841 and he went to the United States in 1855. In 1861, he enlisted in Thomas F. Meagher's company of the Sixty-ninth regiment, in the very beginning of the war. At the end of ninety days' service, he was commissioned second-lieutenant in the eighty-eight regiment of the Irish Brigade, and served with distinguished bravery through the battles under General M'Clellan around Richmond. At the battle of Malvern Hill, he was promoted to be first lieutenant, and he was adjutant of his regiment at Harrison's Landing. For his conspicuous gallantry at the battle of Antietam, he obtained the rank of captain. At Fredericksburg he was severely wounded, the company he commanded being almost annihilated. At Chancellorsville he was again wounded, and at Gettysburg he received special commendation from General Hancock on the battle-field. He was distinguished also for his vigilance and good conduct during General Meade's retrograde movement from the Rapidan. When the Irish Brigade had been reorganised, he became Lieutenant-Colonel. He was actively engaged in the battles of the Wilderness. Afterwards, and during the rest of the war, he fought in most of the bloodiest battles, winning frequent distinctions and high commendations from his superior officers. With words of special praise, General Hancock recommended him for the brevet of Brigadier-General, and this rank he obtained after the surrender of Lee. In 1866, he visited Dublin, when he was arrested on a charge of Fenianism, and for some months he was confined in Mountjoy and Kilmainham prisons. In 1868, after his release, General Burke returned to the United States, and obtained an appointment in the Tax Office in New York. There he was a leading member of the Republican Party, while he was a distinguished orator, writer and literary man. He died in New York, on the 19th of October 1893.

[42] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. iii., chap. xi., pp. 218, 219.

number Grant then received almost made up for his precious losses. Meantime, rain had fallen heavily and the roads were rendered almost impassible. On the morning of the 18th, an attempt was made once more to carry Lee's position at the extremity of his left wing, by the Second and the Sixth Corps, while Burnside attacked in front. However, the works there had been so strengthened and well defended, that the Union forces lost 2,000 in killed and wounded; while little damage was inflicted on the Confederates.[43]

Deeming it impracticable to make any further attack upon the enemy at Spotsylvania Court house, orders were then issued on that very day for a movement towards the North Anna. This was to commence at 12 o'clock, and on the night of the 19th. Late on the afternoon of that day, Ewell's Corps came out of its works, on the extreme right of the Federal flank. This attack was promptly repulsed, and with heavy loss.[44] It delayed the movement to the North Anna, however, until the night of 21st, when it was again commenced. But, having the shortest line, and being in possession of the main road, the enemy was enabled to reach that river in advance of the United States' troops, and to take possession of a strong post behind it.[45]

The fifth corps reached the North Anna on the afternoon of the 23rd. It was closely followed by the sixth corps, which crossed the river at Jericho Bridge. The second and the ninth corps got up about the same time. The second held the railway bridge, while the ninth lay between that and Jericho Ford[46]. The corps of General Warren effected a crossing by plunging into the river—then breast high—that same afternoon; and he secured a position against Hill's corps, temporarily under Early's command. Soon afterwards he was violently attacked, but he repulsed the enemy with great slaughter.[47] Towards the close of this contest, 1,000 prisoners remained in the hands of Warren. Hancock reached the river at the county bridge, about a mile to the west, and notwithstanding a strong line of entrenchment that covered it, he succeeded in forcing a passage.[48]

[43] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. viii., chap. xv., pp. 384, 385.

[44] See Early's "Memoir of the last Year of the War," p. 27

[45] See the "Annual Register, for the year 1864," Part i., Foreign History, chap. vi., p. 265.

[46] See Jefferson Davis' "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., Part iv., chap xlvi, p. 523.

[47] In Swinton's "Army of the Potomac," the following incident is thus related: "One of Bartlett's regiments (the 83rd Pennsylvania, under Lieutenant-Colonel M'Coy), in marching by the flank, ran plump against Brown's column (Confederate), which was moving to follow up its first advantage against the right. It was one of the critical situations which a moment will decide—the decision, in fact, depending on gaining the advantage of the first volley. With quick self-possession, M'Coy wheeled his forward companies into line, and secured the first fire. One of M'Coy's men seized the Confederate commander by the collar, and dragged him in, and the 83rd poured into the flank and rear of the hostile brigade a volley which sent it back in disorder through the woods."

[48] These several points are shown on a Map illustrating this campaign of Grant in Dr. John William

With his usual strategic judgment, Lee then held a strong position, and had so posted his troops as to intervene by a salient resting on the river bank,[49] which served to divide the Federal corps, so as to prevent an easy junction. Grant attempted, but in vain, to dislodge him. Burnside had tried to cross the river in front, but he was beaten back; while a division sent by Warren was defeated and narrowly escaped a great disaster. Wherefore, finding the position of his antagonist to be impregnable, Grant withdrew his different army divisions to the north side of the river.[50] During the previous battles, since the opening of the campaign, the Federal losses have been set down as amounting to 37,335,[51] while the Confederates lost almost as many, which deprived them of nearly half their force. On the 24th of May, the ninth army corps, commanded by Major-General A. E. Burnside, was assigned to the Army of the Potomac. From this time forward, it constituted a portion of Major-General Meade's command.

Finding the enemy's position on the North Anna to be much stronger than either of his previous ones, Grant had now resolved to move by way of Hanovertown, still lower down the North Anna, to turn the enemy's position by his right. The night of the 26th was chosen for this diversion. General Torbert's and Merritt's divisions of cavalry under Sheridan and the sixth corps led the advance. These crossed the Pamunky river at Hanovertown after considerable fighting. On the 28th, the two divisions of cavalry had a severe but successful engagement with the enemy at Hawe's Shop. On the 29th and 30th, the Federals advanced with active skirmishing to Hanover Court-house and Cold Harbour road. Late on the evening of the latter day, the Southern army came out of its position north of the Chickahominy, and attacked the Federal left. It was repulsed, however, with very considerable loss. Immediately an attack was ordered by General Meade along his whole line. This resulted in driving the enemy from a part of his entrenchments. On the 31st, General Wilson's division of cavalry defeated that of the Southerners, and then he destroyed the railroad bridges over the South Anna river. On that same day, General Sheridan reached Cold Harbour, and held it until relieved by the sixth corps and General Smith's command, which had just arrived by way of White House from General Butler's army.[52]

Around the northern circuit of Richmond the ground had been thoroughly examined by the Confederates, and defences had been constructed with great engineering skill. Their lines formed a curve, convex

Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xix., chap. lxxxii., p. 380

[49] This is shown on the copy of a map drawn up in 1867 by Brevet Brigadier-General N. Michler in "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. viii., chap. xv., p. 388

[50] See General Badeau's "Military History of Ulysses S. Grant," Vol. ii., chap. xviii., pp. 227 to 237.

[51] See Humphreys' "The Virginia Campaign of '64 and '65," pp. 126, 127.

[52] See General Badeau's "Military History of Ulysses S. Grant," Vol. ii., chap. xix., pp. 274 to 276.

on the side by which Grant was advancing.[53] At Cold Harbour, Lee's army had then been concentrated, and the position was strongly fortified. On the 1st of June, an attack was made at 5 p.m. by the sixth corps and by the troops under General Smith. The other corps were held in readiness to advance on the receipt of orders. This attack resulted in carrying and holding the enemy's first line of works, in front of the right of the sixth corps, and in front of General Smith. Then a determined effort was made to carry the second line, but it proved to be fruitless. In the assault, 2,000 men were lost. During that engagement the enemy made repeated assaults on each of the corps not engaged in the main attack. They were repulsed, however, with heavy loss in every instance. That night, the Confederates made several unsuccessful efforts to regain what they had lost during the day. The 2nd was spent in getting the Federal troops into position, when the order from left to right was Hancock, Wright, Smith, Warren, Burnside. The first three leaders were to attempt simultaneously Lee's works at day-break. However, as a general rule throughout this war, the defending force was found to be securely intrenched, when the assailing troops were brought to close quarters.[54]

On the 3rd of June a drizzling rain fell, when a part of Hancock's corps advanced and forced the lines, capturing several hundred prisoners and three guns. However, they were repulsed. The Federals again under Wright and Smith assaulted the enemy, and lost very heavily, in the vain hope of driving him from his position. Towards noon, Burnside advanced on the enemy's left; but as the attack on the right failed, his movement was countermanded by General Meade. The losses on both sides were very great. While the Federals had not less than 7,000 *hors de combat*, Lee counted less than 3,000. When General Meade injudiciously proposed to renew the attack at a later period of the afternoon, his troops were thoroughly dispirited, and refused to answer his call.[55]

No signal advantages were gained on either side, but the Confederates were victorious, and again for ten days both armies lay confronting each other in their respective trenches. Expecting that Grant would cross the Chickahominy at Bottom's Bridge, Lee began to extend his right and to throw up entrenchments in that direction. However, considering the proximity of the enemy to his defences around Richmond, and owing to his numerous force, General Grant found it impossible by any flank movement to interpose between the defenders and their capital city.

[53] The relative positions are shown on a map in Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xix., chap. lxxxii., pp. 384, 385.

[54] See the "Annual Register, for the year 1864," Foreign History, Part i., p. 265.

[55] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American Civil War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. iii., chap. xii., p. 244.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

Military Engagements in the Kanawha and Shenandoah Valleys—Campaign of General Butler in Virginia—Cavalry Expedition of General Sheridan—A new Plan of Operations devised by General Grant—Crossing of the James River—Siege of Petersburg—Failure of the Assault—General Early's Advance upon Washington and his Retreat—Confederate Plots in the North-Western States.

WHILE such operations were in progress, a movement through the Kanawha and Shenandoah valleys, under General Sigel, had already commenced on the 1st of May. To oppose his march, the Confederate General Breckenridge mustered a force of 3,500, and marched to Staunton, while small bands of cavalry under Colonel Gilmor were engaged among the mountains, in watching all approaches from the Potomac. Those light horsemen were continuously employed in obstructing the Baltimore and Ohio railroad, besides harassing in many other ways the Federal forces. However, General Sigel moved up the Shenandoah valley with 6,000 men from Winchester. He met the enemy at New Market on the 13th, under command of General Breckinridge. The latter bodly advanced with an inferior force, as if to cut off Sigel's troops from re-crossing the north fork of the Shenandoah: then, in some confusion, the Federals fell back to cover the bridge and to defend their trains. There Sigel was defeated with the loss of nearly 700 men, 6 guns, and 1,000 small arms. The bridge had been held, however, by a large force before the surprise took place. He then retired behind Cedar Creek, but Breckinridge did not pursue.[1]

Meanwhile, General Crook with about 6,000 troops had immediate command of the Kanawha expedition.[2] Dividing his forces into two columns, he gave one column composed of 2,000 cavalry to General Averell. These columns crossed the mountains by separate routes. Averell struck the Tennessee and Virginia railroad at Wytheville, on the 10th of May. Proceeding to New River and Christiansburg, he destroyed the road, as also several important bridges and depots, including New River Bridge. He was attacked, nevertheless, by a cavalry force under Morgan, and defeated. Afterwards, he formed a junction with Crook at Union on the 15th; but reinforcements having been despatched by Morgan the Federals were forced to retreat.[3]

Not regarding the operations of General Sigel as satisfactory,

[1] See General Badeau's "Military History of Ulysses S. Grant," Vol. ii., chap. xxii., pp. 416, 417.

[2] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xix., chap. lxxxii., p. 392.

[3] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War, from 1861 to 1865," Vol. iii., chap. xi., pp. 234 to 236.

[4] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. vii., p. 159, and chap. xviii., p. 405.

General Grant asked his removal from command. Afterwards, Major-General David Hunter was appointed to supersede him. Hunter was required to interrupt the Confederate supplies, by moving on Staunton, Gordonsville, Charlottesville or Lynchburg, so as to destroy the railroads and canal. Then, he was instructed to return and to join the main army. Immediately Hunter took the offensive, with about 20,000 men, and he moved up the Shenandoah valley. Meeting the enemy on the 5th of June at Piedmont, after a battle lasting for ten hours, he routed and defeated the Confederates, capturing on the field of battle 1,500 men, three pieces of artillery, and 3,000 stand of small arms. On the 8th, he formed a junction with Crook and Averell at Staunton. From that place, he moved direct on Lynchburg by way of Lexington. That place, which was strongly fortified, he reached and invested on the 16th. He was so far very successful. But for the difficulty of taking with him sufficient ordnance stores over so long a march, and through a hostile country, he was likely to have captured that important point. Nevertheless, the destruction of the enemy's supplies and manufactories was very great. To meet Hunter's movement, General Lee sent a force under Early—perhaps equal to a corps—a part of which reached Lynchburg.[4] After some skirmishing, on the 17th and 18th, owing to want of ammunition to give battle General Hunter retired from before the place. Moreover, this left him no choice of route for his return, but by way of Kanawha. During that retreat, the sufferings of men and horses were very great, as the country was exhausted.[5] This failure lost the use of Hunter's troops to the Federals for several weeks.

In pursuance of instructions, General Butler also moved from Fortress Monroe with his main force up the James River. General Gilmore had joined him with the tenth corps. On the 5th of May, having a considerable force, Butler occupied without opposition both City Point and Bermuda Hundred.[6] This movement was a complete surprise to the Confederates. On the 6th, he was in a position with his main army, and he commenced intrenching. On the 7th, he forced the Blackwater. He made a reconnaissance, likewise, against the Petersburg and Richmond Railroad, destroying a portion of it at Stony Creek after some fighting. At that point, he cut in two Beauregard's division. On the 9th of May, Butler attacked that portion of his force, which reached Petersburg under Hill. The Federals succeeded in killing and wounding a great number, and in taking many prisoners, after a severe and well contested fight. At the same time, General Butler sent a body of 1,800 cavalry by way of West Point to create a diversion. A force of 3,000 cavalry under General Kautz was also despatched from Suffolk, to operate against those roads south of Petersburg and Richmond.

[5] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xix., chap. lxxxii., pp. 392, 393.

[6] See Jefferson Davis' "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii. Part iv. chap. xlv., p. 508.

On the 12th, General Kautz started on a raid against the Danville railroad. This he struck at Coalfield, Powhatan and Chola stations, destroying them, the railroad track, two freight trains and one locomotive, together with large quantities of commissary and other stores. Thence crossing to the South Side road he struck it at Wilson's, Wellsville and Black and White stations, destroying the road and station-houses. Afterwards he proceeded to City Point, which he reached on the 18th.[7]

With small loss on his side, on the evening of the 13th and morning of the 14th, General Butler carried a portion of the enemy's first line of defences at Drury's Bluff or Fort Darling. The time thus consumed from the 6th lost to the Federals the surprise and capture of Richmond and Petersburg. It enabled Beauregard to collect his forces in North and South Carolina, and to bring them up for the defence of those places.[8] On the 16th, the enemy attacked General Butler in his position at Drury's Bluff. He was forced back into his intrenchments, between the forks of the James and Appomattox rivers.[9] The Confederates intrenched strongly in his front, thus covering the railroads, the city and all that was valuable. Although in a position of great security, Butler's troops were completely shut off from further operations directly against Richmond.[10]

The army sent to operate against the Confederate capital being thus closed in at Bermuda Hundred, the enemy was enabled to bring most, if not all, of Beauregard's reinforcements against the army of the Potomac. In addition to those forces, probably not less than 15,000 men were obtained, by calling in the scattered troops under Breckinridge from the western part of Virginia. The position at Bermuda Hundred was as easy to defend as it was difficult to operate from against the enemy. Therefore, General Grant determined to bring from it all available forces, leaving only a sufficient number to secure what had been already gained. Accordingly, on the 22nd, he directed that contingents should be sent forward, under command of Major-General W. F. Smith, to join the Potomac army. About noon on the 30th of May those troops began to arrive at the White House.[11]

It had been resolved to direct the cavalry under General Sheridan's command to Charlottesville and Gordonsville, so as to break effectually the railroad connexion between Richmond, the Shenandoah Valley and Lynchburg. Meantime, General Grant resolved for the time to hold his position. When the cavalry got well off, he designed moving his

[7] See General Badeau's "Military History of Ulysses S. Grant," Vol. ii., chap. xviii., pp. 243 to 256.

[8] See Alfred Roman's "Military Operations of General Beauregard," Vol. ii., chap. xxxv., pp. 195 to 221.

[9] In the "Autobiography and Personal Reminiscences of Major-General F. Butler," the events of his Virginia campaign are very clearly set forth, in chap. xiv., xv., pp. 635 to 716. Maps of Bermuda Hundred and vicinity and of Petersburgh and vicinity are included.

[10] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War, from 1861 to 1865," Vol. iii., chap. xi., pp. 230, 231.

[11] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. viii., chap. xv., p. 399.

army to the south side of the James River, and by the enemy's right flank. There he hoped to interrupt all the Confederate sources of supply, except by way of the canal. On the 7th of June, two divisions of General Sheridan's cavalry left on their expedition against the Virginia Central railroad. Instructions were sent to Hunter, that he should join his forces to Sheridan's near Charlottesville. After the work laid out for them had been thoroughly done, that contingent was to join the army of the Potomac, by a route laid down in Sheridan's instructions. At Charlottesville, however, he failed to effect a junction with Hunter.[12]

Various detached and indecisive actions took place about this time, near the James River and in the Shenandoah Valleys. The result of General Sheridan's expedition was, that the enemy's cavalry had been met near Trevillian Station on the morning of the 11th of June. These troops he attacked, and after an obstinate contest, he drove them from the field in complete rout. The Confederate dead and nearly all the wounded were left in the hands of the Federals, as also four hundred prisoners and several hundred horses. On the 12th, Sheridan destroyed the railroad from Trevillian Station to Louisa Court House. This occupied until 3 o'clock P.M. Then he advanced in the direction of Gordonsville. He found the enemy reinforced by infantry behind well-constructed rifle-pits, about five miles from the latter place. Their defences were too strong for an assault. On the extreme right, however, his reserve brigade carried the enemy's works twice; but he was twice driven therefrom by infantry. Night closed that contest. Not having sufficient ammunition to continue the engagement, and his animals being without forage—the country furnishing but inferior grazing—and hearing nothing from General Hunter who had passed on to Lynchburg, Sheridan withdrew his command—heavily encumbered with wounded and prisoners—to the north side of the North Anna. He then commenced the return march, and reached White House on the 21st of June, and just as the enemy's cavalry was preparing to attack that position. Having supplied his troops there, and breaking up the depot at that place, he moved with an immense train to the James River, on his way to join the army of the Potomac. This he reached only after heavy fighting.[13]

On the 10th of June, General Butler sent a force of infantry under General Gilmore, and cavalry under General Kautz, if possible to capture Petersburg, as also to destroy the railroad and common bridges across the Appomattox. The cavalry carried the works on the south side.[14] They even penetrated well in towards the town; but afterwards, they were forced to retire, not having been supported by the infantry. Finding the works which he approached very strong, and

[12] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. v., p. 499.

[13] See "Personal Memoirs of P. H. Sheridan," Vol. i., chap. xxi., pp. 413 to 436, including Map of the Trevillian Raid.

[14] See Dr. John William Draper's

deeming an assault impracticable, General Gilmore then returned to Bermuda Hundred without attempting anything. After various failures to dislodge the enemy from his position, General Grant next resolved to try the manœuvre of outflanking General Lee's army. The latter had thrown up breastworks to defend the passes over the Chickahominy River, and all the near approaches to Richmond. In several attempts to force their way, the Federals lost heavily. Such was the situation in the beginning of June. Attaching great importance to the possession of Petersburg, General Grant sent back General W. A. Smith's command to Bermuda Hundred and to City Point. It was intended he should reach there in advance of the army of the Potomac. This was planned as a surprise, and it was intended for the express purpose of securing Petersburg before the enemy could reinforce that place.

The new movement from Cold Harbor commenced after dark on the evening of the 12th of June. One division of cavalry under General Wilson, and the fifth corps under General Warren, crossed the Chickahominy before daylight on the 13th at Long Bridge. These moved out to White Oak Swamp, to cover the crossings of the other corps. On the night of the 13th, the advanced corps reached the James River at Wilcox's landing and Charles' City Court house. On the 15th, the entire army arrived. A pontoon bridge had been constructed with great engineering skill at Windmill Point, and three whole days were required to transport 130,000 men over the James. Ferry-boats were also used.[15] Nor did Lee offer any further obstruction to that long moving train; but kept to his defences around Richmond, supposing it to be the next objective point for the invading army. During the campaign of forty-three days from the Rapidan to James River, the army had to be supplied from an ever-shifting base, and by wagons, over narrow roads through a densely-wooded country, with a lack of convenient wharves at each new base from which to discharge vessels. Under the general supervision of the chief quartermaster Brigadier-General Rufus Ingalls, the trains were made to occupy all the available roads between the army and the northern water-base. Yet, owing to his very able dispositions and management, little difficulty was experienced in protecting them.[16]

After the crossing had commenced, General Grant proceeded by a steamer to Bermuda Hundred to give necessary orders for the immediate investiture of Petersburg. The instructions to General Butler were verbal, that he should send General Smith on that very night with all the troops he could spare, but without sacrificing the position he then held. General Grant told him, that he would return at once to the army of the Potomac, and hasten its crossing. He had intended to throw it forward to Petersburg by divisions, as speedily

"History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xix., chap. lxxxiii., p. 399.

[15] See General Badeau's "Military History of Ulysses S. Grant," Vol. ii., chap. xx., pp. 355 to 357.

[16] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iii., p. 346.

as could be done, and so as to reinforce the Federal armies more rapidly there, than the enemy could bring troops in opposition. As directed, General Smith confronted the enemy's pickets near Petersburg before daylight the next morning. However, he did not get ready to assault the main lines until near sundown. Then, with a part of his command only, Smith made the assault, and carried the lines north-east of Petersburg from the Appomattox River, for a distance of over two and a-half miles. He captured fifteen pieces of artillery and over three hundred prisoners. Between the line thus captured and Petersburg, there appeared no other works, and there was no evidence that the enemy had reinforced that post with a single brigade. The moon was shining brightly, while the night was clear, and favourable for further operations. With two divisions of the second corps, General Hancock reached just after dark, and offered General Smith the service of these troops. However, nothing further was then done, and Smith only asked Hancock to relieve a part of his line in the captured works.[17]

To reinforce Petersburg, the enemy withdrew from a part of his intrenchment in front of Bermuda Hundred on the 16th. Taking advantage of this, General Butler at once moved a force on the railroad between Petersburg and Richmond. Then General Grant ordered General Wright, with two divisions of the sixth corps, to join him and to strengthen his position. Nevertheless, the Confederates again appeared in force, and about 2 o'clock in the afternoon on the 17th, General Butler was attacked. He then fell back to that line from which the enemy had withdrawn in the morning. By the time General Grant arrived next day, the enemy was in force. Preparations were made, nevertheless, and an attack was ordered for 6 o'clock that evening, by the second and ninth corps under General Smith. Fighting continued with but little intermission until 6 o'clock the next morning. It only resulted, however, in the Federals carrying an advanced post and some of the main works of the enemy on their right. The fifth corps having now joined, on the 17th and 18th, attacks were renewed and persisted in with great vigour; but these only resulted in forcing the enemy to an interior line, from which he could not be dislodged. During these four days' fighting, Grant lost about 10,000 men.[18] The army then proceded regularly to invest Petersburg towards the South-side railroad, so far as possible, yet without attempting to attack its fortifications. During the night of the 20th and morning of the 21st, Butler with an infantry brigade effected a lodgment, on the north bank of the James River at Deep Bottom, ten miles below Richmond. He then connected the pontoon bridge with Bermuda Hundred.[19] On the 21st, Grant

[17] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xix., chap. lxxxiii., p. 399.

[18] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol ix., chap. xviii., pp. 408 to 412. Also, General Badeau's "Military History of Ulysses S. Grant," Vol. ii., chap. xx., pp. 363 to 379.

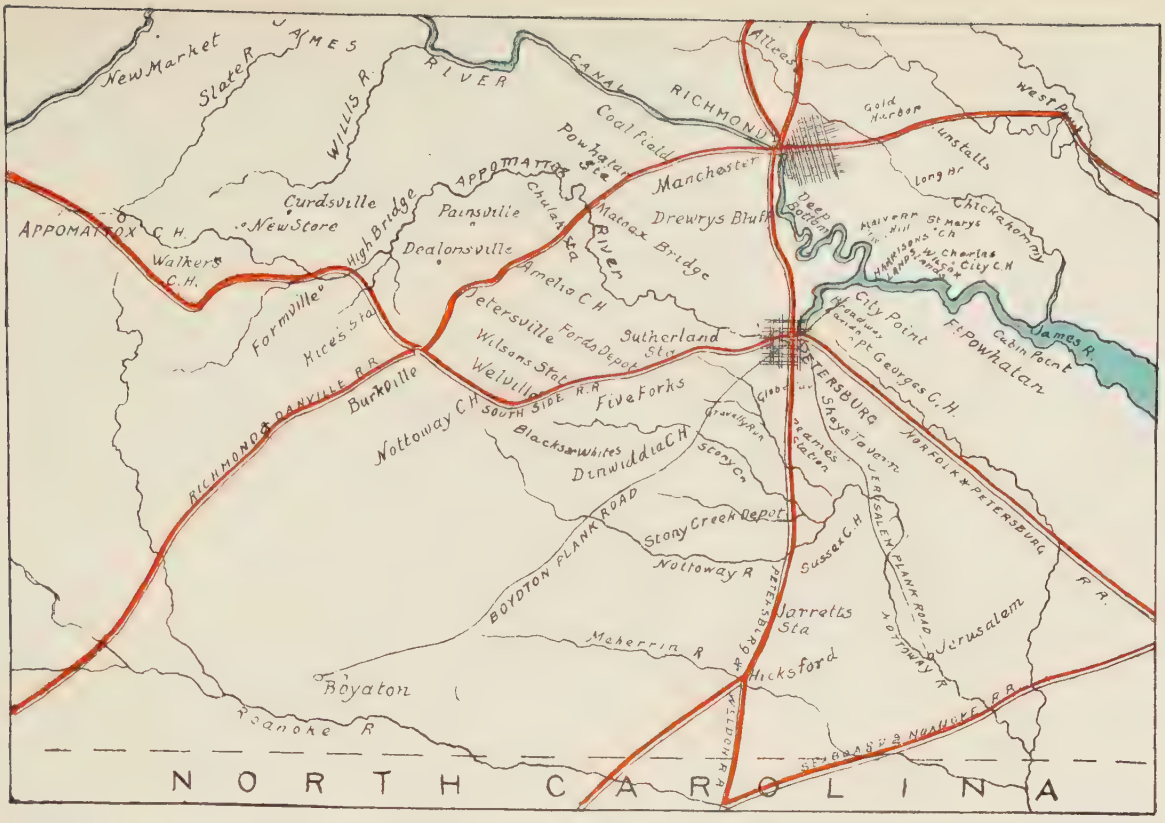
[19] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xix., chap. lxxxiii., pp. 400, 401.

endeavoured to capture the Weldon Road, with the corps of Hancock and of Wright. Birney who then commanded the former was in advance, and he encountered the enemy three miles south from Petersburg. Next day, Hill's column found an opening between both corps, and rushing in, he carried off many prisoners and seven guns. The attack was finally repulsed, but it cost Grant nearly 4,000 men. Moreover, he was forced to contract his left, and he was placed on the defensive for several weeks. The next morning, Wright sent a small force to the railroad; it cut the telegraphic wires, but it was again driven back. On the 22nd, General Wilson, with his own division of cavalry belonging to the army of the Potomac, and General Kaut's division of cavalry belonging to the army of the James, moved against the enemy's railroads south of Richmond. Striking the Weldon railroad at Ream's station, he destroyed the depot, and several miles of that and the Southside road, about 15 miles from Petersburg, and on to near Nottoway station. There he met and defeated a force of the enemy's cavalry. He reached Burksville station on the afternoon of the 23rd, and he destroyed the Danville railroad to Roanoke bridge, a distance of 25 miles. There again he found the enemy in force, and in a position from which they could not be dislodged. On the 28th, he met the Confederate cavalry at the Weldon railroad crossing Stony Creek, where he had a severe but not a decisive engagement. Thence he made a detour from his left, with a view of reaching Ream's station. At this place he was met by the enemy's cavalry, supported by infantry, sent from Petersburg. He was forced to retire, with the loss of 1,500 in killed, wounded and missing, as also of his artillery and trains.[20] In this last encounter, General Kautz with a part of his command became separated. However, he made way into the Federal lines. With the remainder of his force, General Wilson succeeded in crossing the Nottoway river, thus coming in safely on the left and rear of the Federals. Damage done to the enemy in that expedition partly compensated for losses sustained. It severed all connection by railroad with Richmond for several weeks.[21]

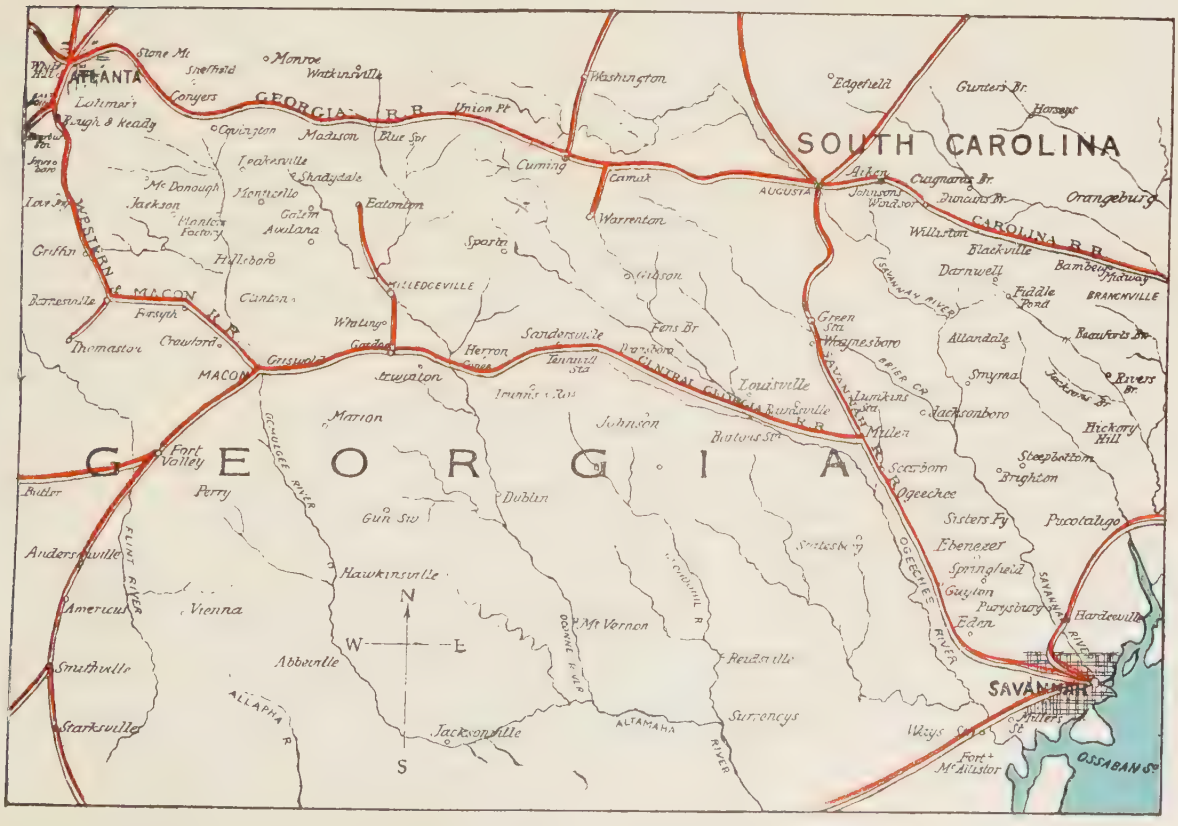
A mine had been prepared before the ninth army corps against Petersburg; it was began on the 25th of June and finished on the 23rd of July. An assault on the enemy's lines at that place had been resolved on for the night of the 30th of July. To divert the enemy's attention, the second corps and two divisions of the cavalry corps with Kautz's cavalry were crossed to the north bank of the James river and joined to General Butler's force. On the 27th, the enemy was driven from his entrenched position, and with the loss of four pieces of artillery. On the 28th, the Federal lines were extended from Deep Bottom to New Market road; but in getting that position, their army was attacked by the enemy in heavy force. The fighting lasted for several hours, and it

[20] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. xviii., pp. 413, 414.

[21] See General Badeau's "Military History of Ulysses S. Grant," Vol. ii., chap. xxi., pp. 392 to 413.



SIEGE OF PETERSBURG.



SHERMAN'S MARCH THROUGH GEORGIA.

resulted in considerable loss to both sides. The first object of that movement having failed, by reason of the very large force thrown there by the enemy, General Grant determined to take advantage of the diversion made, by assaulting Petersburg before the Confederates could get their force back. One division of the second corps was withdrawn on the night of the 28th, and moved to the rear of the eighteenth corps to relieve it in the line. That corps had been directed to support the meditated assault. On the night of the 29th, the other two divisions of the second corps and Sheridan's cavalry were crossed over and moved in front of Petersburg.[22]

On the morning of the 30th, between four and five o'clock, the mine was sprung. It blew up a battery and great part of a regiment. The advance of an assaulting column, formed of the ninth corps, immediately took possession of a crater made by the explosion; as also the line for some distance to the right and left, with a detached line in front of it. However, the troops failed to advance promptly to the bridge beyond.[23] Others were immediately pushed forward, but the time consumed in getting them up enabled the enemy to rally from his surprise.[24] Forces were sent to that exposed point for its defence. The captured line being untenable, and then of no advantage to the Federals, the troops were accordingly withdrawn but not without the heavy loss of 4,000 men. Of these 1,900 were made prisoners.[25]

Ascertaining how General Hunter was retreating from Lynchburg before a large Confederate force that had anticipated his approach thither,[26] and by way of the Kanawha river—thus laying Washington exposed to an advance, and the Shenandoah valley open for raids into Maryland and Pennsylvania—in the month of June, General Lee had ordered Early with a force of 20,000 men to march in that direction. Notwithstanding the great heat of the weather, he moved at the rate of twenty miles each day, and reached Winchester on the 2nd of July. Soon as this movement of the enemy was known, General Hunter, who had reached the Kanawha river, was directed to move his troops without delay by river and railroad to Harper's Ferry. Owing to the difficulty of navigation, by reason of low water and breaks in the railroad, great delay was experienced. It became necessary, therefore, to find other troops to check that march of the enemy. For this purpose, the sixth corps was taken from the armies operating against Richmond, to which was added the nineteenth corps commanded by General Emory, and then

[22] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. xviii., pp. 420 to 422.

[23] See Joseph Irving's "Annals of our Time," pp. 518, 525.

[24] See "Report of Committee on Conduct of the War," 1864-65, Part i., pp. 117 to 121.

[25] "After the failure of the mine, Burnside at his own request received leave of absence. The command of the ninth corps was given to Parke." —Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xix., chap. lxxxiii., pp. 405, 406.

[26] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii, p. 365.

fortunately beginning to arrive at Hampton roads from the Gulf Department. These troops landed there under orders issued immediately after ascertaining the result of the Red River expedition. The garrisons of Baltimore and Washington were at that time made up of heavy artillery regiments, Hundred Days' men and detachments from the invalid corps. One division, under the command of General Ricketts of the sixth corps, was sent to Baltimore, and the remaining two divisions of the sixth corps under General Wright were subsequently despatched to Washington. Sending forward his cavalry to destroy the railroad in the rere of Siegel, on the 3rd of July the Confederates under Early approached Martinsburg. Being in command of the forces there, and wishing to guard the stores committed to his charge, Siegel retreated across the Potomac to Shepardstown. Meanwhile, in an engagement at Leetown, Colonel J. A. Mulligan[27] checked the Confederate cavalry.[28] General Max Weber[29] commanding at Harper's Ferry crossed the river, and with Siegel he occupied Maryland Heights. On the 6th, the enemy took possession of Hagerstown, moving a strong column towards Frederick city.[30]

Meanwhile, General Lewis Wallace[31] with Ricketts' division and his own command—the latter mostly new and undisciplined troops—pushed out from Baltimore with great promptness. He met the enemy in force on the Monocacy, near the crossing of the railway bridge. His force was not sufficient to ensure success; nevertheless he fought, and although that engagement resulted in a defeat of the Federal arms, yet it detained the enemy, and thereby served to enable General Wright to reach Washington with two divisions of the sixth corps and the advance of the nineteenth corps. In this action, the Federal loss was 1,959, and of these 1,282 were missing. From Monocacy the Confederates moved towards Washington; and on the 10th, the Cavalry advance reached Rockville about evening.[32] On the morning of the 11th of July, Early's van was close up to the fortifications, covering the northern approach at Washington. In the afternoon, the Confederate infantry had come up and it was arrayed in front of Fort Stevens. The works were slightly defended, and Early might easily have made a dash into Washington, and driven out the Government, if his vigour had been equal to his opportunity.

On the 11th, a reconnaisance was thrown out in front of Fort Stevens, to ascertain the enemy's position and force. About 600 dis-

[27] Already renowned for his gallant defence of Lexington, in Missouri.

[28] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. vii., p. 161.

[29] Born in Achern, Baden, August 27th 1824. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. vi., p. 405.

[30] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol iii., sect. xix., chap. lxxxiii., p. 405.

[31] He was born in Brookville, Franklin County, Ind., April 10th 1827. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. vi., pp. 333, 334.

[32] See General Badeau's "Military History of Ulysses S. Grant," Vol. ii., chap. xxii., pp. 431 to 441.

mounted cavalry manned the works,[33] and from all the batteries within range a sharp artillery fire was opened. A severe skirmish ensued on the 12th. In this, the Federals lost about 280 in killed and wounded. The enemy's loss was probably greater. He commenced retreating during the night. Learning the exact position of affairs at Washington, General Grant had requested by telegraph, at a late hour on the 12th, the assignment of Major-General H. G. Wright to the command of all the troops that could be made available to operate in the field against the enemy. He directed, also, that the General should get outside the trenches with all the force he could collect, and push Early to the last moment. On the 13th, General Wright commenced that pursuit; but on the morning of the 14th, the Confederates re-crossed the Potomac.[34] On the 18th, the enemy was overtaken at Snicker's Ferry on the Shenandoah. Then a sharp skirmish occurred. On the 20th, General Averell encountered and defeated a portion of the rebel army at Winchester, there capturing four pieces of artillery and taking several hundred prisoners.

Learning that Early was retreating southwards towards Lynchburg or Richmond, General Grant directed that the sixth and nineteenth corps should return to the armies operating against the Confederate capital, so that they might be used in a movement against General Lee, before the return of those troops sent by him into the valley. He ordered that Hunter should remain in the Shenandoah valley, keeping between any force of the enemy and Washington, while acting on the defensive as much as possible. General Grant considered that if the enemy had any notion of returning, the fact should be developed before the sixth and nineteenth corps could leave Washington. Subsequently, the nineteenth corps was exempted from that order.[35] On the 22nd, Early reached Strasburg, and Wright returned to Washington. Finding the troops opposed to his retreat thus removed, Early now turned on Crook, who was at Kernstown, and routed him. In this encounter the gallant Colonel Mulligan was mortally wounded on the 24th. However, Crook made good his retreat, and with such skill as to save his artillery and trains; while Early drove the Union troops across the Potomac.

About the 25th, it became evident that the enemy was again advancing upon Maryland and Pennsylvania. The sixth corps then at Washington was ordered back to the vicinity of Harper's Ferry. The rebel force moved down the valley, and sent a raiding party into Pennsylvania. On the 30th, having demanded 100,000 dollars in gold as a ransom, they burned Chambersburg, because it could not be paid. Then they retreated, pursued by the Federal cavalry towards Cumberland. They were met and defeated by General Kelly, on the 1st of August. With

[33] See Humphreys' "The Virginia Campaign of '64 and '65," p. 244.

[34] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. vii., p. 174.

[35] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xix., chap. lxxxiii., p. 407.

diminished numbers they escaped into the mountains of West Virginia.[36] Thither General Hunter dispatched General Averell; and, on the 7th, he came up with the Confederates under McCausland who was routed, with the loss of all his guns and trains. Over 400 prisoners were taken, and the residue of his cavalry was scattered through the bridle-paths of the mountains. During the rest of the campaign, this rout had a very damaging effect upon the enemy's cavalry.[37]

From the time of the first raid, the wires were frequently down between Washington and City Point, making it necessary to transmit messages a part of the way by boat. It took from twenty-four to twenty-six hours to get despatches through, and to return answers back. Meanwhile, information might be received, showing a different state of facts from those on which directions were based. This often caused a confusion and an apparent contradiction, that must have considerably embarrassed those who had to execute orders. Moreover, such obstructions rendered operations against the enemy less effective than otherwise they might have been.

Although the chances now seemed to be rather remote, yet nothing could be more desired by the Confederate government than any prospect of embroiling the United States in a quarrel with England.[38] Intriguers and adventurers were found to engage in various wild enterprises. The principal agent of the Confederates in Canada was Jacob Thompson, Secretary of the Interior under the Administration of Buchanan, and who had been previously captured as a spy by General Grant on the Mississippi River. Then he was released with contemptuous forbearance.[39] Afterwards, he went to Canada, where he engaged in treasonable plots, to create an insurrection in the three great North-Western States of Illinois, Indiana and Ohio, when it was found in the summer of 1864, that the re-election of Lincoln for the Presidency was almost an assured fact. Meanwhile, he was in communication with the most abandoned characters,[40] ready to engage in robbery, burnings and even murder.[41] Moreover, he was in correspondence with the Confederate

[36] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. vii., pp. 175 to 178.

[37] See Early's "Memoir of the last Year of the War," p. 75.

[38] See Jones' "A Rebel War Clerk's Diary," Vol. ii., p. 359.

[39] See "Personal Memoirs of U. S. Grant," Vol. i., p. 462.

[40] A Virginian named John Yeates Beall, in conjunction with a man named Charles H. Cole, had attempted the capture of the United States war steamer Michigan, in Sandusky Bay, Lake Erie. Their plot miscarried, and Cole was captured on the 19th of September 1864, while Beall escaped to Canada. After a third attempt made to throw a passenger train from the West off the railroad track, for the purpose of robbing the Express Company, he was captured near the Suspension Bridge, in New York State, in the middle of December. He was afterwards tried by court martial, sentenced to death, and hanged in the latter part of February 1865.

[41] Thus several boats were burned through his agents at St. Louis, Mo., while New York City was fired in various places, and a like attempt was to be made in Cincinnati, Ohio. The complicity of the Confederate Government in his plots has been proved by the correspondence of Thompson with

Government, who hoped for some aid through his efforts. All his plans proved to be failures, and especially his attempt to release the Confederate prisoners, detained at Camp Douglas, near Chicago.[42] Moreover, numbers of Confederate subjects or sympathizers assembled in Canada, and made hostile excursions across the border into the State of New York, doing great mischief to the inhabitants and to their property. On one occasion they attacked the town of St. Alban's, plundered the houses and killed some of the population. The extradition of those raiders was demanded. Some of them were arrested, and brought before the Court at Montreal, when they were acquitted. This decision gave great offence to the North; and for such miscarriage of justice, irritation and violent language against England were the consequences throughout the United States.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

Selection by the Republican Party of Candidates for President and Vice-President—The Red River Expedition—Massacre at Fort Pillow—General Sherman's Advance against General Johnston—Retreat of the latter, and Battle of Lost Mountain—General Johnston superseded by Jefferson Davis, and General Hood appointed to succeed—Investment of Atlanta by Sherman's Army—Its Capture—Naval Engagement between the Kearsarge and the Alabama.

DURING the spring, summer, and autumn of this year, the Northern States had been much occupied with preparation and controversy, in reference to the approaching Presidential election. The eleven revolted States took no part in this contest. It soon became apparent that the only two candidates who could have any real pretensions to the high office were President Lincoln and General M'Clellan, the latter representing the Democratic Party.[1] The Republicans hesitated, however, in a choice between President Lincoln for a second term of office and General Fremont. The leading supporters of the latter were to be found in St. Louis and New York, while these were pressing the immediate extinction of slavery in the United States, and a vigorous execution of laws confiscating the property of rebels. Lincoln was more moderate in his views and policy; while he was generally trusted to have a desire for the extinction of slavery, when the war ended in favour of the Union, as had then been very confidently anticipated. The more radical section of the party called a convention, to meet at Cleveland, Ohio, where, after some disorderly discussion, Freemont was nominated as their candidate. However, the general body of the Republicans rejected such nomination.[2] Having selected Baltimore in which to

Judah P. Benjamin, preserved among the papers known as Confederate Archives.

[42] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. viii, chap i., pp. 1 to 27.

[1] See the "Annual Register for the year 1864," Part I.: "Foreign History," chap. vii., p. 276.

[2] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. ii., pp. 29 to 51.

hold a convention, it assembled there on the 7th of June 1864. An almost unanimous feeling in their respective States led the vast majority of the delegates, to declare for the President's re-election. But opinion was more divided on the selection of a Vice-President. After some deliberation, however, Andrew Johnson[3] of Tennessee was chosen for candidate. These proceedings were conducted with wisdom and decorum, while the resolutions passed were almost universally accepted by the Republican party, as shadowing forth their triumphant return at the coming November election.[4]

Early in the year, 1864, General Banks and Sherman had planned an expedition, to gain possession of Shreveport, at the head of navigation on the Red River, and in the State of Louisiana. With this movement, General Frederick Steele[5] was expected to co-operate from the State of Arkansas. A powerful fleet, commanded by Admiral David Dixon Porter,[6] was to rendezvous at the junction of Red River with the Mississippi. This consisted of twenty steamers, while several of these were monitors and iron-clads. Business of public importance had detained General Banks at New Orleans. However, General William Buel Franklin,[7] who was to take the initiative, set out from that city in the beginning of March, and by way of Opelousas to Alexandria, on the southern Bank of Red River. At this time, General Kirby Smith had a Confederate force of over 40,000 men under his command ; and a large part of these were stationed at Shreveport, under General Taylor. It was expected, that these contingents should be joined by troops, conducted by Price and Walker. Moreover, three large Confederate iron-clads were at Shreveport.

The Federal fleet accordingly moved up Red River. Not hearing from General Banks, troops disembarked at the ruins of Semmesport to reconnoitre, on the 12th of March. About 10,000 under General Andrew Jackson Smith,[8] comprising two divisions of the sixteenth, and a detachment of the seventeenth army corps, left Vicksburg, to join Admiral Porter's fleet, on the 10th March. These reached the designated station one day earlier than that appointed by General Banks. Thinking to defeat him, the rebels left Fort de Russey on the 14th, to give him battle in the open field. While occupying the enemy with skirmishing and demonstrations, Smith pushed forward to Fort De Russey. This had been left weakly guarded, and he captured it with a garrison of over 200 men, 11 pieces of artillery, and 1,000 muskets.

[3] See J. W. Bacon's "Life and Speeches of President Andrew Johnson, with a sketch of the Secession movement," etc., with portrait. London. 8vo.

[4] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. iii., pp. 52 to 78.

[5] He was born at Delhi N.Y., January 14th 1819. See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iv., p. 593.

[6] See *ibid.*, pp. 227, 228.

[7] He was born in York, Pa., Feb. 27th 1823. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. ii., pp. 535, 536.

[8] Born in Bucks Co., Pa., 28th of April 1815, he graduated in the U.S. military academy, became Brigadier-General of volunteers in March 1862, and died in St. Louis Mo., January 30th 1897. See *ibid.*, Vol. v., p. 556.

The Federal loss was slight. On the 15th, Smith pushed forward to Alexandria, which place he reached on the 16th. There he was joined by the remainder of the fleet. On the 21st, he had an engagement with the enemy at Henderson's Hill. There, too, he defeated the rebels, capturing 210 prisoners and four pieces of artillery. He also took possession of Natchitoches. On the 28th, he again attacked and defeated the enemy, under General Taylor, at Cane River. On the 24th, General Banks had arrived at Alexandria, and assembling his whole army on the 26th, he then pushed forward to Grand Ecore, on the way to Shreveport. The road led through dense pine forests, while the country was hilly and broken along his line of march.

Meantime, on the 23rd of March, Major-General Steele left Little Rock with the Seventh army corps, comprising about 12,000 infantry, with 3,000 cavalry under Carr, to co-operate with General Banks' expedition on Red River. He was to be joined according to an arrangement understood by 5,000 troops under Thayer,[9] with a small force under Clayton.[10] General Steele reached the town of Arkadelphia on the 28th. At this time, 12,000 Confederate troops were in south-western Arkansas, under the command of General Price. After driving the enemy before him, General Steele was joined near Elkin's Ferry in Washita county, on the 16th of April, by General Thayer, who had marched from Fort Smith. After several severe skirmishes, in which the enemy was defeated, Steele reached Camden, which he occupied.

On the afternon of the 7th of April, the advance of General Banks engaged the enemy near Pleasant Hill, and drove him from the field. On the same afternoon, the rebels made a stand eight miles beyond Pleasant Hill, but they were again compelled to retreat. On the 8th, at Sabine Cross roads and at Peach Hill, the main body of the enemy attacked and defeated the cavalry advance of the Federal troops, capturing nineteen pieces of artillery, with an immense amount of transportation-wagons and stores. However, the pursuit was checked by Emory's division[11] of the Nineteenth corps. During the night, after a loss of 3,000 in killed, wounded and missing, General Banks fell back to Pleasant Hill. There another battle was fought on the 9th. The enemy was then repulsed, and some of the guns that had been lost were retaken. Smith and his soldiers now desired to advance. However the horses had been without food for thirty-six hours, and water was wanting, so that during the night General Banks was obliged to continue his retrograde movement, while Porter's fleet of twelve gun-boats and thirty transports ascended the falls to Grand Ecore. Moreover, his dead and wounded were left behind. He had lost over 5,000 men, 130

[9] John Milton Thayer was born in Bellingham Mass., January 24th 1820. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of merican Biography," Vol. vi., p. 72.

[10] Powell Clayton was born in Bethel Delaware County, Pa., Aug. 7th 1833. See *ibid.*, Vol. i., p. 646.

[11] William Hemsley Emory was born in Queen Anne County Md., September 9th 1811. See *ibid.*, Vol. ii., p. 352.

waggons, and 1,200 horses and mules, with guns and small arms. Thence to Alexandria his retreat commenced on the 21st, Smith's troops forming the rear-guard. The Confederates followed in force, but that place he safely reached on the 27th of April.[12]

A serious difficulty now arose in getting Admiral Porter's fleet, which accompanied the expedition, over the rapids. The water had fallen so much since they passed upwards as to prevent their return. Notwithstanding, at the suggestion of Colonel Joseph Bailey[13] and under his superintendence, wing-dams were constructed by which the channel was contracted. Owing to this ingenius plan, the fleet found depth of water sufficient, and passed down the rapids in safety.[14] The army evacuated Alexandria, on the 14th of May. Many of the inhabitants had joined the national cause, and those who could not escape were left in the hands of the Confederates. After considerable skirmishing with the enemy's advance, the Federal army reached Morganzia and Point Coupee, near the end of that month. The troops then made their way to the Mississippi, and finally they reached New Orleans. This disastrous expedition, and the lateness of the season, rendered impracticable the carrying out of a projected movement, and in force sufficient to insure the capture of Mobile.

Learning the defeat and consequent retreat of General Banks on Red River, and the loss of one of his own trains at Mark's Hill in Dallas county, General Steele determined to fall back on the Arkansas River. He left Camden on the 26th of April, marching over dreadful roads, and in the midst of torrents of rain. On the 30th the enemy attacked him, while crossing Saline River at Jenkin's Ferry, but the attempt was repulsed with considerable loss. Nevertheless the Federals lost about 700 in killed, wounded and prisoners. On the 2nd of May, General Steele arrived at Little Rock.

During the month of March, the cavalry force, under Nathan Bedford Forrest,[15] moved into Tennessee, and annoyed the Federals very considerably, as he devastated the country through which he advanced. On the 23rd, he captured Jackson in that State, and on the 24th, his force pushed northwards, taking Union City and its garrison in Kentucky. Then Forrest attacked Paducah, commanded by Colonel S. G. Hicks with 650 of the 40th Illinois volunteers.

[12] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. iii., chap. ix., pp. 167, 168.

[13] He was born in Salem Ohio, April 28th 1827. He entered the military service of the United States in 1861. Afterwards, he became Brigadier-General and had a highly creditable career as a soldier. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography, Vol. i., pp. 137, 138.

[14] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xvii., cap. lxxvi., pp. 235 to 238.

[15] He was born in Bedford County Tennessee, in 1821, and afterwards he became a cotton planter in Mississippi. At the outbreak of the Civil War, he raised a cavalry regiment in 1861, and over this he was appointed Lieutenant-Colonel. See "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 122.

After three assaults, the Confederates retired with a loss of 1,500 men. Having but a small force, Colonel Hicks withdrew to the forts near the river, and there he repulsed the enemy. On the 13th of April, part of Forrest's troops, under the rebel General Abraham Berford,[16] summoned the garrison of Columbus Kentucky to surrender, but received for reply, from Colonel Lawrence of the 34th New Jersey volunteers, that being placed there by his government, with adequate force to hold his post and to repel all enemies from it, surrender was out of the question.

As a trading post on the Mississippi River, Fort Pillow in Tennessee had been garrisoned by a detachment of Tennessee cavalry, and by the first regiment of Alabama coloured troops. These were commanded by Major Booth. On the 12th of April, Forrest attacked that place before sunrise, and after some severe fighting, the commander was killed. Major Bradford then succeeded. The garrison was drawn from the outer line of entrenchments, and the men fought bravely until about 3 o'clock in the afternoon. A gun-boat from the river co-operated in the defence. Forrest sent a summons to surrender, but this was declined by Bradford. The enemy had stealthily advanced towards the fort, while that negotiation was in progress. From their positions, a sudden rush enabled them to carry the works by assault. After this had succeeded, and surrender was announced, the defenders threw down their arms. The Confederates then proceeded to perpetuate an act of the most frightful atrocity. It was announced, that the black troops should have no mercy, nor white men fighting with them. An inhuman and a merciless massacre was ordered by Forrest. Fugitives were dragged from their hiding-places, and wounded men were ordered to stand up to be shot. Some were stabbed to death, while others of the garrison were burned in their tents. No fewer than 19 officers and 528 men—of whom 262 were negroes—perished, without discrimination of colour, age or condition. Several women were there with their children, and most fiendish cruelties were exercised by the victors.[17] After this shocking occurrence, Forrest retreated into the State of Mississippi, having demolished the fort, and thrown its heavy guns into the river. When the news of his massacre ordered at Fort Pillow spread abroad, universal horror was expressed throughout the northern States, and embittered feelings were aroused to avenge that foul transaction on the chief criminal.[18]

[16] He was born in Kentucky about 1820. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. i., p. 443.

[17] The Report of the Committee of Congress on the conduct of the war is full of the most sickening details taken on evidence, when it was found, that many were not only shot in cold blood and drowned, but some were even crucified, buried alive and nailed to the floors of houses, which were then set on fire. This horrible massacre was even renewed in cold blood on the following morning. See Dr John William Draper's History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xvii., chap. lxxiv., pp. 214 to 218.

[18] The sympathetic compiler of the "Annual Register," for the year 1864, is altogether silent on the massacre, in the following brief and misleading record of that event: "The defence

On the 14th, having failed at Columbus, General Buford appeared before Paducah, but he was again repulsed. A design had been conceived, to capture and to make an example of Forrest, in retaliation for his atrocities. Accordingly, the Federal General Samuel Davis Sturgis[19] with 12,000 men went in pursuit. However, he was unable to come up with the delinquent. Early in June, Sturgis was again sent after him. This expedition was mismanaged, however, and it disastrously failed. In the attempt, Sturgis lost between 3,000 and 4,000 men, and his force was chased almost to Memphis. In the early part of July, Andrew Smith[20] set out at the head of some troops to reach Forrest. An action took place at Tupelo, in which again the Federals were worsted. Afterwards, Smith was compelled to retreat upon Memphis. In the beginning of August, another expedition started from that city to seek Forrest. While it was thus unsuccessfully employed, that daring partisan leader made a sudden and very unexpected dash on the city. He occupied it for a few hours, and afterwards he retreated into the State of Mississippi.[21]

Having about 68,620 Confederate troops within converging distance, Jefferson Davis and his Cabinet had urged upon General Johnston early in May, to take the initiative in a campaign which now seemed imminent, and for which they were aware General Sherman had been preparing. It was represented, that Johnston should make an effort for the recovery of that territory, which had been lost to the Confederates in Tennessee and Kentucky.[22] However, the more judicious military opinion of Johnston was, that he should act on the defensive and south of the Tennessee River.[23] His troops were divided into three corps, under Hardee, Hood and Polk respectively. General Johnston and his army had been posted at Dalton station, while they were guarded on the left and north by a strong position at Rocky Hill Ridge. It was also traversed by a gorge, called the Buzzard's Roost, and through it ran a little stream called Mill Creek. On every available point of defence, batteries had been placed. These fully secured the right of Johnston's position, which if turned at all could only be on his left.[24] The army of the Cumberland 60,773 strong, of the Tennessee 24,465, and of the Ohio 13,559, respectively commanded by Generals Thomas, McPherson,[25] and Schofield; in all 98,797, with 254 guns, were now united under

was gallantly conducted, and the struggle was of a severe character." —Part i. Foreign History, chap. vi. p. 262.

[19] He was born in Shippensburg Pa,. June 11th 1822. He served in the Mexican War. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. v., p. 734.

[20] See *ibid.*, p. 556.

[21] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xvii., chap. lxxiv., p. 218.

[22] See Jefferson Davis' "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., Part iv., chap. xlviii., pp. 548, 549.

[23] See Johnston's "Narrative of Military Operations," pp. 294 to 302.

[24] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xviii., chap. lxxix., pp. 268 to 271.

[25] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 653.

General Sherman. Some cavalry and two divisions of infantry joined him during the next month.[26]

Meanwhile, General Sherman with his divisions had begun to move[27] from Chattanooga, on the 5th of May. Finding the enemy's positions at Buzzard's Roost too strong to be assaulted, when arrived before them on the 7th, he only made a demonstration, by pressing Johnston's front at all points with skirmishing lines. On the 9th of May, General McPherson was sent through a wild and narrow defile about six miles long and called Snake Creek Gap, to turn that position, whilst Generals Thomas and Schofield threatened it with assaults on the north. This movement was successful in dislodging the enemy. However, Sherman failed to bring on a battle during Johnston's retirement from Dalton.[28] Howard then entered the Confederate works and afterwards pressed their rear, while the rest of the army moved on the left. Finding his retreat likely to be cut off, Johnston fell back to another position at Reseca, about eighteen miles southward on the railroad. On the 14th, an attempt was made to break his lines, but the assailants were obliged to fall back with a loss of 1,000 men. All that day the fighting continued. Again, it was renewed on the afternoon of May 15th, when the Confederates were driven from a portion of their works. A heavy battle then ensued. During both those days, Sherman lost between 4,000 and 5,000 men; while Johnston's losses were only about 2,500, as his troops for the most part fought behind earth barricades.[29] Nevertheless, when night came on, the enemy retreated southwards.

No sooner had he fallen back with his forces than Sherman followed, and having drawn his army together, they began an effective pursuit. With consummate prudence, skill and rapidity of execution, that general drove the Confederates before him.[30] All the national armies moved on the 17th by as many roads as they could find, under heat that was overpowering and through clouds of dust, in pursuit of the enemy.[31] Later on that day, Johnston's rear-guard was overtaken by Newton's division near Adairsville, and heavy skirmishing followed. The next morning Johnston had again disappeared. He was vigorously pursued, however, and he retreated to Cassville, where he halted on the evening of the 19th. There he intended to occupy a good position, and to give

[26] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. i., p. 4.

[27] For his subsequent military operations, see William Tecumseh Sherman's "Official Account of the Great March through Georgia, and the Carolinas from his Departure from Chattanooga to the Surrender of General Johnston (April 1865) and the Confederate Forces," New York, 1865, pp. 214, 12 mo.

[28] The various positions are pointed out on a Map of the Atlanta Campaign in "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. i., pp. 6, 7.

[29] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xviii., chap. lxix., pp. 275, 276.

[30] See Captain Conyngham's "Sherman's March through the South."

[31] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xviii., chap. lxxix., p. 276.

battle; but he was dissuaded from this course, by his lieutenant-generals Hood and Polk.[32] During the ensuing night, he retreated across the Etowah river. While these operations were going on, General Jefferson C. Davis's division of Thomas's army was sent onward to Rome. This town was captured, with its forts and artillery. Its valuable mills and foundries were also seized.

Having given his army a few days' rest at that point, General Sherman again put it in motion for Dallas on the 23rd,[33] with a view of turning the difficult pass at Allatoona. On the afternoon of the 25th under General Hooker, the advanced force had an obstinate battle with the enemy, driving him back to New Hope Church near Dallas. Sharp encounters occurred at this point, and beginning on the 27th. The most important of these, however, was on the 28th, when the enemy assaulted General McPherson. Many acts of gallantry took place, but the results were unfavourable to the rebel army.[34] On the 4th of June Johnston abandoned his intrenched position at New Hope Church. The Union army advanced to Ackworth on the 8th. Johnston then retreated to the strong positions of Kenesaw, Pine and Lost Mountains, west of Marietta.[35] Heavy rains had fallen for several days; but on the 14th, while reconnoitering the position in front of Pine Mountain, and observing a group on the opposite hill, Sherman gave orders to his artillery to fire a few volleys.[36] The second shot killed General Polk who was there, in company with General Johnston and other officers. His place was temporarily filled by General William W. Loring,[37] and afterwards permanently by Lieutenant-General Alexander Stewart.[38] Johnston was now forced to evacuate the advanced and more exposed position of Pine Mountain, and it was occupied by Sherman on the next day. The Confederate General then thought to concentrate his army on Kenesaw and Lost Mountain. However, he found this position too extended for a successful defence in case of an assault. This he foresaw should soon be attempted; when abandoning six miles of strong field works, he then fell back to an intrenched line nearer to Marietta.[39]

For months before, that line of defence had been strongly fortified;

[32] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. i., pp. 15, 16.

[33] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xviii., chap. lxxix., p. 227.

[34] See Jefferson Davis' "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., Part iv., chap. xlviii., p. 554.

[35] The positions are shown on the Sketch Map of the Chattanooga and Atlanta Campaigns, in Lieut.-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. iii., chap. v., p. 46.

[36] See "Memoirs of General William T. Sherman," Vol. ii., pp. 51, 52.

[37] Born in Wilmington N.C., Dec. 4th 1818. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol iv., pp. 28, 29.

[38] He was born in Rogersville, Hawkins County Tenn., October 2nd 1821. See *ibid.*, Vol. v., p. 681.

[39] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. i., pp. 20, 21.

[40] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xviii., chap. lxxix., pp. 283, 284.

and then Hood's corps covered Marietta on the north-east, while Hardee held the left of the line, and Loring was on the salient of Kenesaw Mountain. Bad weather had now set in, and rain fell almost continuously for three weeks, which rendered a general movement almost impossible.[40] Meanwhile, their superiority of force enabled the Federals to close round the enemy's intrenchments, and even to outflank his communications. Indeed, the Confederate General had been preparing defences about ten miles to the south, and at the crossing of the Chattahoochee river, in case he should be obliged to retreat.[41] Notwithstanding the obvious imprudence of risking an assault, Sherman took a bold resolve to force a passage onwards to Marietta. Having advanced Hooker's division towards the right on the 22nd, he was furiously attacked by Hood with a large force; however, the latter was repulsed with severe loss, leaving behind him the dead and wounded with many prisoners.[42] On the 27th, Generals Thomas and McPherson made a determined assault on Johnston's lines. McPherson advanced against a spur of Little Kenesaw to make a demonstration, and he gained some ground; while Thomas, having guidance of the assault in front, and under cover of a heavy artillery fire, sent forward Davis's[43] and Newton's[44] divisions, at eight o'clock in the morning. The brigades of Daniel McCook[45] and John G. Mitchel rushed on the enemy's works, under a terrible fire of artillery and musketry. Those defences were found to be impregnable. After sustaining frightful loss, the column of Davis was driven back, while Newton's division met with no better success, although some of his men were killed on the parapets.[46] Still, Sherman would persist in urging Thomas to break the line in front; but the latter replied, he had already lost heavily without gaining any material advantage, and that one or two more such assaults should completely use up his army.[47] Having thus found how fruitless it must prove to assail in face of those intrenchments, it was now intended to march laterally around them. Accordingly, on the night of the 2nd July, General Sherman commenced advancing his army by the right flank. M'Pherson led, but this movement soon became known to the Confederates, and their General ordered another retreat to a position already selected. On the morning of the 3rd, Sherman found that

[41] See Johnston's "Narrative of Military Operations," p. 345.

[42] For these various movements, see the Rev. Phineas Camp Headley's "Life and Military Career of Major-General W. T. Sherman." New York: 1865, 12mo.

[43] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. ii., pp. 102, 103.

[44] John Newtown was born in Norfolk Va., August 24th 1823. See *ibid.*, Vol. iv., p. 508.

[45] He was the grandson of George M'Cook, an Ulsterman formerly implicated in the movements of the United Irishmen, and a refugee in the United States. Daniel was born in Carrollton Ohio, July 22nd 1834. See *ibid.*, pp. 92, 93.

[46] While the Confederate loss in this assault was estimated at only 500, the Federals lost 2,500. See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. i., pp. 24, 25.

[47] See Van Horne's "Army of the Cumberland," Vol. ii., p. 103.

Johnston had abandoned Kenesaw, and he entered Marietta just as the enemy's cavalry were leaving, at 8.30. A.M. In the cemetery there Sherman counted more than 800 newly-made graves. He gave instant orders for a pursuit; but the Confederate General withdrew his army in good order to an advanced and intrenched line at Smyrna, five miles south from Marietta. He also constructed a strong *tête-du-pont* at the Chattahoochee.[48] On the 4th, Johnston's entire line of rifle-pits in front of his new position was carried; and during that night his army and trains were withdrawn within the *tête-du-pont*. There he stood defiantly, as Sherman had no previous idea regarding the strength of that position. Notwithstanding, the Federal General sent his cavalry up and down the river, until he found two eligible fords for crossing on the left. He immediately passed two divisions over, and these intrenched strongly on the east bank. This manœuvre obliged Johnson to cross the Chattahoochee, and to assume a new position behind Peach Tree Creek, his right wing covering Atlanta, and his left resting on the river. There he remained on the 10th, and Sherman spent a few days in strengthening several points for the passage of his troops, while increasing the number and capacity of his bridges. He also re-arranged the garrisons in his rear, so as to bring forward supplies for his army.[49]

On the 17th of July, having given his troops that needful rest, Sherman resumed operations, and having now crossed the Chattahoochee, he began immediate preparations for the occupation of Atlanta. During that interval, the General sent a telegram to General Rousseau,[50] commanding 2,000 cavalry at Decatur Ala, to march south and to destroy the railway between Georgia and Alabama. Then he was to turn northwards and to join the camp on the Chattahoochee. This march and instruction had been accomplished between the 10th and 22nd of July, when with the loss of only three men, Rousseau again entered General Sherman's lines.[51]

During the time of General Sherman's move, the rebel cavalry under General Joseph Wheeler[52] attempted to cut his communications in the rear. But the Confederates were repulsed at Dalton, and driven into East Tennessee. Thence they proceeded westwards to McMinnville, Murfreesboro' and Franklin. Finally, they were driven south of the Tennessee River. The damage done by those incursions was repaired in a few days. Cavalry raids were also made by Generals

[48] That post and succeeding positions of both armies are clearly shown on a Map illustrating this Campaign of Sherman, in Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xviii., chap. lxxix., pp. 286, 287.

[49] See "Personal Memoirs of General William T. Sherman," Vol. ii., p. 71.

[50] Lovell Harrison Rousseau was born in Lincoln County Ky., August 4th 1818. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. v., p. 336.

[51] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. iii., chap xv., p. 340.

[52] He was born in Augusta Ga., September 10th 1836. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. vi., pp. 463, 464

McCook, Garrard[53] and Stoneman, to cut the remaining railroad communication with Atlanta. The first two attempts were successful; the latter effort was otherwise. Meantime, General Sherman was dependent for the supplies of his armies upon a single track railroad from Nashville to the point where he was operating. This trail passed the entire distance through a hostile country, and every portion of it had to be protected by troops. Forrest's cavalry force in Northern Mississippi was evidently waiting for Sherman to advance far enough into the mountains of Georgia, to make a retreat disastrous, to get upon his line and to destroy it. To guard against such a danger, Sherman left what he supposed to be a sufficient force to operate against Forrest in West Tennessee. He directed General Washburn[54] who was there, to send Brigadier-General S. D. Sturgis in command of that division to attack him. On the 10th of June, the latter met the enemy near Guntown, Mississippi. Sturgis was badly beaten and driven back in utter rout and confusion to Memphis—a distance of about one hundred miles—and hotly pursued by the enemy. However, the Confederates were defeated in their designs upon Sherman's line of communications. Still the persistency with which he followed up success exhausted him, and made a season for rest and repairs necessary. In the meantime, Major-General A. J. Smith, with the troops of the army of the Tennessee, arrived from Red River at Memphis. There they had rendered most excellent service. That general was directed by Sherman immediately to take the offensive against Forrest. This task Smith effected with the promptness and success which characterised his whole military career. On the 14th of July, he met the enemy at Tupelo Mississippi. The fighting continued through three days. The Federal loss was small, as compared with that of the enemy. Having accomplished the object of his expedition, General Smith returned to Memphis.

No cordial relations had existed between General Johnston and the President of the Southern Confederacy. The latter professed to believe, that instead of retreating, or at least by making a stand at some eligible position north of Atlanta, the onward march of the Union army might be stayed. Johnston was then pressed to state, if he could hold that town, but he evaded giving an answer in the affirmative. Nor was it just to suppose he could so reply. However, the question was now put catagorically. Having disappointed those expectations formed by Jefferson Davis, the Confederate General was then required by telegram on the 17th to surrender his command. He was notified, moreover, by the Confederate Secretary of War, that General Hood had been appointed to succeed.[55]

The town of Atlanta was now before the Union army, but it had been encircled with strongly fortified lines to resist capture, and it was

[53] Kenner Garrard was born in Cincinnati Ohio, in 1830. See *ibid.*, Vol. ii., p. 608.

[54] Cadwallader C. Washburn was born in Livermore Me., April 22nd 1818. See *ibid.*, Vol. vi., pp. 371, 372.

[55] See General Badeau's "Military

defended by a powerful force. This was a converging centre for seven Southern Railways, mostly trunk lines and leading from important cities.[56] The Union army was now bearing down on the Confederate position; Thomas on the right, Schofield in the centre, and McPherson on the left. Assuming the offensive and defensive policy, Hood made several attacks upon Sherman in the vicinity of Atlanta. On the 20th, both armies came into collision about 4 o'clock p.m.; but after a while, Hooker drove the enemy back to his entrenchments, leaving on the field 500 dead, 1,000 wounded and many prisoners taken. Sherman's loss in killed, wounded and missing was somewhat less. Hood then resolved to try another movement, and on the night of the 21st he marched his troops beyond Decatur to lie in wait for an attack on the left flank of Sherman's advancing army. The Sixteenth Corps, commanded by General Grenville Mellen Dodge,[57] had been ordered from right to left, to occupy a high hill that overlooked Atlanta, and little suspecting that an enemy was on his rear. The most desperate and determined of those encounters took place on the 22nd of July. It opened about 11 o'clock, a.m., by an attack on the left and rear of Sherman. There a battery of artillery and some of the cannoneers were suddenly captured. About one o'clock on this day, the brave, accomplished and noble-hearted McPherson had turned backwards to ascertain the cause of such disorder among his troops, when he was killed. General Logan then succeeded him, and commanded the army of Tennessee through this desperate battle. He was superseded by Major-General Howard on the 26th.

In all of these attacks, the enemy was repulsed with great loss; but with much difficulty, Sherman drove them back to Atlanta. Finding it impossible entirely to invest the place, after securing his line of communications across the Chattahoochee, the Federal General moved his main force round by the enemy's left flank upon the Montgomery and Macon roads. He thus hoped to draw the Confederates from their fortifications. In this design Sherman effectually succeeded, for having cut off from Atlanta a portion of the Confederate army intrenched at Jonesboro', he then intercepted Hood's communications.[58] Having defeated the enemy near Rough and Ready, Jonesboro' and Lovejoys, Atlanta was no longer tenable. On the 1st of September, it was evacuated in the night-time by Hood,[59] who blew up the magazines and retreated southwards. Soon afterwards, the Federals marched in and took possession of that important city.

This great move of General Sherman virtually decided the fate of the Southern Confederacy. Immediately after the fall of Atlanta, he

History of Ulysses S. Grant," Vol. ii., chap. xxiii., p. 461.

[56] See Lippincott's Gazetteer of the World," pp. 544, 545. New revised edition, 1893.

[57] He was born in Danvers Mass., April 12th 1831. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. ii., pp. 192, 193.

[58] See the "Annual Register for the Year 1864," Part I., Foreign History, chap. vi., p. 274.

[59] See Joseph Irving's "Annals of our Time," p. 526.

encamped in and about that place. While there, he made all necessary preparations for refitting and supplying his army.[60] Nevertheless, the great length of road from Atlanta to the Cumberland River, which had to be guarded, allowed the troops but little rest in their new position. During this campaign, at least between thirty to forty thousand fell on either side, in the various battles so obstinately fought. Leaving a force to hold Atlanta, General Sherman with the remainder of his army resolved to fall upon Hood; and on the 20th of October, driving him to Gadston in Alabama, the Federal General deemed it useless to pursue him further, as he believed that Thomas had a sufficient force at Nashville to keep him in check.[61]

In the meantime, the Alabama was accustomed to sail under the English flag at sea, and thus she decoyed nearly seventy Northern vessels within her reach. In such cases she then displayed the Confederate flag and captured her prizes.[62] This work of destruction was greatly glorified in most of the leading English journals at that time, and Captain Semmes was extolled as a hero. On the 10th of June 1864, he took refuge in the harbour of Cherbourg in France. The cruize of the Alabama lasted nearly two years, before the Kearsarge man of war Captain Winslow commander, whose size of vessel and armament were about equal, came up with her June 19th off Cherbourg.[63] Both ships stood out about seven miles to sea, so that they might be away from a neutral's jurisdiction. After a spirited engagement, which lasted for a considerable time, the Alabama was utterly shattered. The two ships keeping their helms to port, while steaming at full speed, and round a common centre, fell into a circular course, and continued the action heading in opposite directions, delivering their broadsides in positions generally parallel to each other.[64] About an hour after the Alabama fired her first gun, Semmes found his vessel to be in a sinking condition, and then he made an effort to reach the French coast. However, the Kearsarge steamed ahead and raked across her

[60] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xviii., chap. lxxx., p. 310.

[61] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. xx., p. 476.

[62] "Unless when there was some particular motive for making use of the captured vessels, they were burnt. Sometimes the blazing wreck became the means for decoying a new victim. Some American captain saw far off in the night the flames of a burning vessel reddening the sea. He steered to her aid; and when he came near enough, the Alabama, which was yet in the same waters and had watched his coming, fired her shot across the bows, hung out her flag, and made him her prisoner One American captain bitterly complained that the fire, which seen across the waves at any other time, became a summons to every seaman to hasten to the rescue, must thenceforward be a signal to him to hold his course and keep away from the blazing ship."—Justin M'Carthy's "History of our own Times," Vol. iii., chap. xliv., p. 155.

[63] The Kearsarge however had the better guns. See Charles Norris' "The American Navy," Part i., chap. v., p. 91.

[64] This is well illustrated in a Map of the Kearsarge and Alabama Fight, in "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. vi., p. 148.

bow, when the Confederate colours were struck, as she was hopelessly settling down.[65] Then both officers and crew had to swim for their lives,[66] but, most of these were rescued. Except some damage to her boats, the Kearsarge had only three men wounded, and none killed. The Alabama had twenty-one wounded and nine killed, while it is supposed that ten were drowned.[67] The former vessel had suffered so little during the engagement, that Captain Winslow was taken somewhat by surprise, at the sudden and complete defeat of his enemy.[68] When Captain Semmes and his surviving crew appeared on English soil, they were received with every demonstration of enthusiastic welcome in the clubs; and the public journals, for the most part friendly to the Confederate cause, were filled with columns of eulogy on his heroic exploits.[69]

The first war-cruizer of the Confederates built in Liverpool was armed as the Florida in 1862; and her depredations on American commerce were scarcely less destructive than were those of the Alabama, until she was captured at Bahia Brazil, October 4th, 1864. Under the name of the Sea King in 1863, a vessel was built in Glasgow. In September 1864, the Confederates bought her, and she was called the Shenandoah.[70] She burned twenty-five United States' ships and bonded four, continuing her destructive cruise long after the war had ended.[71] Another of those Confederate cruisers the Stonewall was built in a French port. Afterwards, it was sold to the Danish government, and subsequently surrendered to the Spaniards at Havana. By these, that vessel was eventually given up to the United States.[72] The Confederate ships of war almost extirpated the Federals' carrying trade, and transferred it to English vessels; while the high rates for insurance nearly drove their merchant flag from the wide oceans.[73]

[65] Captain James S. Thornton—grandson to Matthew Thornton one of the Irish Signers of the Declaration of Independence—had direction of the fighting on board the Kearsarge.

[66] A friendly English steam yacht, which hovered near, saved Captain Semmes and the greater part of his surviving crew, when they were obliged to quit the sinking vessel. See *ibid.*, pp. 142 to 153.

[67] See James D. Bulloch's "Secret Service of the Confederate States in Europe," Vol. i. chap. v., pp. 277 to 283.

[68] The Alabama had sunk before the Kearsarge was ready with the boats to rescue the Confederate crew."—"Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. vi., pp. 149, 150.

[69] In July 1864, appeared "The Cruise of the Alabama and the Sumter," etc., with engravings, in two volumes, 8vo. London.

[70] The ingenious manner in which she had been procured, and also referable to her tender, a new iron screw-steamer the Laurel, employed in the packet service between Liverpool and Ireland, has been set forth detailed in James D. Bulloch's "Secret Service of the Confederate States in Europe," etc., Vol. ii., chap. iii., pp. 125 to 142.

[71] See *ibid.*, pp. 152 to 189.

[72] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xvi., chap. lxxiii., p. 203.

[73] See that interesting work of J. Thomas Scharf, "History of the Confederate States Navy from its Organization to the Surrender of its last Vessel." Albany, N.Y. 1894. 8vo.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

The United States Finances—Operations of Major-General Canby, West of the Mississippi—The Attack on Mobile by Sea and Land—General Sheridan appointed to an independent Command—Invasion of Missouri by General Price—Raids of Forrest and Morgan—Operations of General Grant's Army—General Sherman recommends a new Movement—Hood marches towards Nashville—Sheridan's Campaign against Early—Victory at Winchester—Battle of Hatcher's Run.

When the magnitude and duration of the Civil war had assumed threatening proportions, it became evident that the business of government and the strain on its resources could not be maintained on a specific basis. The plan of issuing bonds with treasury and legal tender notes had been adopted. Other loans were required as the war progressed, and heavy taxes were imposed to provide ways and means for the government.[1] The public debt on the 1st of July 1864 reached the enormous amount of 1,740,690,489 dollars 49 cents,[2] or close upon £350,000,000 sterling in British coin.[3] The premium on gold reached its highest point about that time, when it was rated one day at the stupendous price of 285, forcing the greenback dollar value down to 35 cents. The Secretary of the Treasury Mr. Chase had experienced much opposition to his financial measures from Congress, and at the close of the fiscal period of 1864 he resigned. His office was then assumed by Senator William Pitt Fessenden[4] of Maine, who evidenced marked ability in framing measures for the consolidation and funding of the national loans, so that the financial situation soon became favourable.

In the meantime, Major-General Banks had been relieved of his command in May 1864, and then he resigned. Contrary to his advice and protest, the disastrous Red River expedition had been planned; nor was he at all accountable for its miscarriage. Afterwards, Major-General Edward Richard Sprigg Canby[5] was assigned to command the military division of West Mississippi. He was directed, as the war proceeded, to send the Nineteenth army corps to join those armies operating against Richmond, and to limit the remainder of his command for such operations as might be necessary to hold those positions

[1] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii. Art. Finance (American), pp. 47, 48.

[2] According to the President's Message, on the 6th of December that year.

[3] See the "Annual Register for the year 1864," Part i., Foreign History, chap. vii., pp. 289, 294.

[4] He was born in Boscawen N.H., October 16th 1806. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. ii., pp. 443, 444.

[5] He was born in Kentucky in 1817. He had served in the Florida and Mexican wars, and he was made brigadier-general of Volunteers in March 1862. See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. i., pp. 707, 708.

and lines of communications he then occupied.[6] Accordingly he sent a part of General A. J. Smith's troops to disperse a force of the enemy, collecting near the Mississippi River. He met and defeated them near Chicot, on the 5th of June. The Federal loss was about 40 in killed, and 70 wounded.

In the latter part of July, General Canby sent Major-General Gordon Granger with such forces as he could collect, to co-operate with Admiral Farragut against the defences of Mobile Bay. These were mainly Forts Morgan and Gaines, commanding from opposite sides the entrance, and situated about thirty-three miles from the city. Fort Powell commanded another passage to the true harbour, called the Anchorage. Having made all necessary preparations for the grand attack, on the 5th of August Admiral Farragut directed his vessels to approach the entrance.[7] A line of piles and a double line of torpedoes stretched across the channel between them. Only a small passage had been left open for blockade-runners. Inside of those defences lay the large Confederate iron-ram Tennessee, and three wooden gun-boats. The Hartford was Admiral Farragut's flag-ship, and mounting into the port main-rigging, in order to see over the smoke of battle, a rope was passed around his body and fastened to one of the shrouds, so that in case of being wounded, he might not fall to the deck.[8] The iron-clad monitor Tecumseh commanded by Captain Tunis A. Macdonough Craven[9] had the post of honour assigned, to lead in eastward of a certain red buoy and directly under the guns of Fort Morgan. However, in his eagerness to engage the ram Tennessee, and firing the first shot at 6.47 A.M., he passed to the west, and ran against a torpedo which exploded. Then the monitor reeled, and sunk at once, with nearly every man on board.[10] The Brooklyn sloop of war then stopped, and this seemed likely to throw the whole line of Federal vessels into confusion ; when Admiral Farragut's ship coming next was ordered by him to take the lead. All the other vessels followed, although suffering greatly from the enemy's raking fire as they passed the fort. Having thus entered the bay, one of the Confederate gun-boats was captured, one was sunk, while another was driven for protection under the walls of the fort. The ram alone remained as a formidable adversary, and she steamed towards the Hartford. Then Farragut ordered every ship to attack her at once, not only with shot, but by ramming with their bows. The shot had little effect for some time, on the sloping iron-sides of that monster vessel. However, the enormou-

[6] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xvii., chap. lxxvi., p. 241.

[7] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. ii., p. 417.

[8] A full account of this naval action is to be found in Com. Foxhall's "Battle of Mobile Bay," Boston, 1878.

[9] He was born in Portsmouth N.H., January 11th 1813, and having early entered the U. S. Navy as midshipman, he afterwards became an active and a meritorious officer. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. ii., pp. 3, 4.

[10] In the Tecumseh 113 were drowned, "Of all on board, only the pilot and a few men escaped."—"The Amer-

guns of the monitors at length destroyed her smoke-stack and steering-apparatus, while jamming her shutters; then a white flag was displayed. The Tennessee hauled down her colours and surrendered.[11] In this battle, the Federal fleet suffered heavily, losing 335 men in killed and wounded. The Confederate fleet lost 10 killed, 16 wounded, and 280 made prisoners. The loss in the forts is not known. But at the entrance of the harbour, the Confederate defences could only be taken by those troops co-operating on the land. On the 8th of August, Fort Gaines was surrendered to General Grainger by its Commandant Colonel Anderson. Fort Powell on Dauphin Island was blown up, having been abandoned by the Confederates. On the 9th, Fort Morgan was invested by the Thirteenth army corps. After a severe bombardment it surrendered on the 23rd. The captures amounted to 1,464 prisoners and to 104 pieces of artillery. The city of Mobile could not then be taken by the fleet, owing to the shoal water approaching it, and to obstructions in the channel. However, another main avenue of supply was closed to the Confederacy, and the blockade runners could not thenceforward enter the bay.[12]

It was now clear to General Grant, that some person should have supreme command over all those forces in the Departments of West Virginia, of Washington, of the Susquehanna, and of the Middle Department. Accordingly on the 2nd of August, he ordered General Sheridan to report in person to Major-General Halleck, chief of staff at Washington, with a view of assigning him to the temporary command of all the forces arrayed against Early.[13] At this time, the enemy was concentrated in the neighbourhood of Winchester, while the Federal forces under General Hunter were concentrated on the Monocacy,[14] at the crossing of the Baltimore and Ohio railroad. This left open to the enemy western Maryland and Southern Pennsylvania. From where General Grant was, he hesitated to give positive orders for the movement of the Federal forces at the Monocacy, lest by doing so he should expose Washington. Therefore on the 4th, he left City Point to visit Hunter's command, and to determine for himself what was the best course.[15] On arrival there and after consultation, General Grant issued to General Hunter instructions for concentrating all his available force without delay in the vicinity of Harper's Ferry, while leaving only such railroad-guards and garrisons for public protection as might be necessary. He was also directed to follow the enemy, whether he moved north or south of the Potomac, so long as it should be safe to do so. If it were ascertained that the enemy had but a small force north of that river, then General Hunter

can Navy," by Charles Morris, Part i., chap. v., p. 89.

[11] See the "Annual Register for the year 1864," Part i., Foreign History, chap. vi., p. 273.

[12] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. ii., pp. 417, 418.

[13] See Ulysses S. Grant's "Personal Memoirs," Vol. ii., p. 317.

[14] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xix., chap. lxxxiii., p. 408.

[15] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. vii., p. 180.

was to leave a small force of observation to hold him in check, and with the main body of his army to march southwards. A reinforcement of three excellent cavalry brigades, numbering at least 5,000 men and horses, was promised him, as sooner or later it was thought he should have to push up the Shenandoah valley; and to drive the enemy southwards, orders were also given to take all the provisions, stock and forage necessary for the army, while the rest was to be destroyed, so that the Confederates should not be tempted to return there in force among a sympathising population.[16] The loyalists, however, were to be paid for whatever supplies they furnished.

The troops were immediately put in motion, and the advance reached Halltown that night. General Hunter had expressed a willingness to be relieved from command,[17] if another having more harmonious relations with his superiors could assume it; and General Grant, pleased with this self-sacrifice, telegraphed to have General Sheridan then at Washington sent to Harper's Ferry by the morning train. General Grant remained at Monocacy until General Sheridan arrived on the morning of the 6th, and then he had a conference in relation to military matters. Sheridan had orders to take general direction of all troops in the field, and accordingly, on the 7th of August, he formally assumed command of the Middle Military Division. Grant afterwards returned to City Point, by way of Washington.[18]

The fine army now assigned to Sheridan consisted of the Sixth Corps, under General Horatio Governeur Wright,[19] the Nineteenth Corps, part present and part on the way, under General Cuvier Grover.[20] George Crook's Army of Western Virginia, and Charles Russell Lowell's[21] reserve brigade.[22] To these were added Alfred N. Duffie's troops,[23] and William Woods Averell's division.[24] Two divisions of cavalry at his request, commanded by General Alfred Thomas Archimedes Torbet,[25] comprising the cavalry from the Army of the Potomac, with James Harrison Wilson's[26] division, were sent to Sheridan. These divisions

[16] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1871 to 1865," Vol. iii., chap. xiii., p. 285.

[17] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xix., chap. lxxxiii., p. 408.

[18] For his motives and action in reference to Sheridan's appointment, see General Badeau's "Military History of Ulysses S. Grant," Vol. ii., chap. xxiv., pp. 494 to 504.

[19] He was born in Clinton Conn., March 6th 1820. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. vi., pp. 623, 624.

[20] Born in Bethel Me., July 24th 1829. See *ibid.*, Vol. iii., p. 6.

[21] He was born near Drayton Ohio, September 8th 1828. See *ibid.*, Vol. ii., pp. 14, 15.

[22] Born in Boston Mass., January 2nd 1835. See *ibid.*, Vol. iv., p. 43.

[23] He was born in Paris France, May 1st 1835. See *ibid.*, Vol. ii., pp. 247, 248.

[24] The commander was born in Cameron Stenben County N.Y., Nov. 5th 1832. See *ibid.*, Vol i., pp. 121, 122.

[25] He was born in Georgetown Del. July 1st 1833. See *ibid.*, Vol. vi., pp. 134, 135.

[26] He was born near Shawneetown Ill., September 2nd 1837. See *ibid.*, pp. 552, 553.

formed a Corps. The first of these reached him at Harper's Ferry, about the 11th of August. Altogether, this force consisted of some 22,000 infantry present for duty, and of about 8,000 horse. The field returns showed nearly fifty per cent. more, or about 43,000 officers and men; but all proper deductions being made, 30,000 was regarded as the fighting contingent of those troops, afterwards designated the Army of the Shenandoah.[27]

By the month of August, General Grant was enabled to return the Sixth Corps for service with the Army of the Potomac; as already on the 11th of July, Early had advanced against the fortifications on the north side of Washington. However, the Sixth Corps arrived there opportunely, and the enemy did not attack.[28] One division of Sheridan's force was despatched to the Army of the James. Another was ordered to Savannah Georgia, so as to hold Sherman's new acquisitions on the sea coast,[29] and thus enable him to move without detaching from his force for that purpose. Only the Nineteenth Corps was then left with Sheridan in the Valley of the Shenandoah.[30] Reports from various sources led General Grant to believe, that the enemy had detached three divisions from Petersburg to reinforce Early in the Shenandoah valley. He therefore, on the 12th of August, sent the Second Corps and Gregg's division of cavalry belonging to the Army of the Potomac, with a force of General Butler, to threaten Richmond from the north side of the James. His object was to prevent the enemy from Sending troops away; and if possible, to draw back those he had detached. In this movement were captured six pieces of artillery and several hundred prisoners. Troops that were under marching orders to assist Early were detained, and it was ascertained that only Kershaw's division had gone.[31]

Meanwhile, General Lee had crossed the James River on the 15th, and by a night march, his advance was in the entrenchments of Petersburg before morning. The Confederates seized on all the commanding points of defence, and rapidly strengthened their lines. On the 17th, an assault was made with such spirit and force, that these were carried at one point; but in fine, the assailants were driven back with heavy loss.[32] The enemy having withdrawn heavily from Petersburg to resist the Federal movement north of the James River on the 18th, General Grant moved the Fifth Corps, General Warren commanding, towards the extreme left. He took possession of the Weldon railroad, four miles

[27] See General Badeau's "Military History of Ulysses S. Grant," Vol. iii., Appendix p. 656.

[28] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. ii., p. 714.

[29] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sec. xix., chap. xxxiii., p. 415.

[30] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. xiv., p. 329.

[31] Joseph Brevard Kershaw was born in Camden S.C., January 5th 1822. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iii., p. 527.

[32] See Jefferson Davis' "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., Part iv., chap. lii., p. 638.

below Petersburg.[33] A gap was then left between Warren and the troops on his right. Into this on the 19th Lee sent Mahone's division and 2,000 prisoners were taken.[34] During that day, the Federals had considerable fighting, but the enemy was at length repulsed. The 20th was spent by Warren in strengthening his position. To regain possession of the road, the enemy made repeated and desperate assaults on the 21st, but each time he was driven back with great loss. The assaults of these three days cost Grant 4,543 men. By the 24th, seven miles of the railroad were effectively destroyed.[35] During the night of the 20th, the troops on the north side of the James were withdrawn. Then Hancock's Second Corps and Gregg's division of cavalry returned to the front of Petersburg. On the 25th these forces were at Ream's Station destroying the railroad. There they were attacked by A. P. Hill, and after desperate fighting a part of their line gave way. The Federals were then driven from their position.[36] Five pieces of artillery fell into the Confederates' hands. Out of 8,000, Hancock lost 2,400 men, of whom three fourths were missing.[37]

The rebel General Price, with a cavalry force of about ten or twelve thousand, had reached Jacksonport, towards the close of August, on his way to invade South-east Missouri. Whereupon, General A. J. Smith's command—then marching from Memphis to join Sherman—was sent from Cairo Ill.[38] A cavalry force about the same time was sent from Memphis, under command of Colonel Edward Francis Winslow.[39] This addition made General Rosecrans' forces superior to those of Price. No doubt was then entertained that he should be driven back, while the forces under General Steele in Arkansas could intercept his retreat. On the 26th day of September Price attacked Pilot Knob, and there having met with an obstinate resistance, he at last forced the garrison to retreat.[40] A part of his forces then advanced threatening St. Louis, but he found that city to be strongly guarded. Thence moving northwestwardly towards Jefferson city, it was too well protected to be carried by any assault. Turning still to the west, Price was joined by numerous bands of guerrillas and backwoodsmen.[41] His forces continued

[33] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. xviii., p. 428.

[34] William Mahone was born in Southampton County Va., December 1st 1826. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iv., pp. 117.

[35] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xix., chap. lxxxiii., p. 416.

[36] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. xviii., p. 430.

[37] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xix., chap. lxxxiii., p. 416.

[38] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. viii., chap. xx., pp. 478, 479.

[39] He was born in Augusta Me., September 28th 1837. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. vi., p. 568.

[40] See Moore's "Rebellion Record," Vol. xi., p. 342.

[41] One of those bands, under a notorious outlaw Bill Anderson captured, disarmed, and then massacred two parties of Union prisoners. The

their raid up the Missouri River, capturing Boonville, Glasgow, Lexington and Independence, on their route towards Kansas, when General Curtis, commanding that department, immediately collected such forces as he could to repel their invasion. Meanwhile, General Rosecrans' cavalry under Pleasonton was operating in Price's rear. That column fought the raiders in several sharp engagements, as they turned southwards for retreat.[42] The enemy was at length brought to battle, at the crossing of the Big Blue River, and there he was defeated. Afterwards pursued until the Little Osage being reached, on the 25th of October, the rear-guard was charged with great vigour. Being again routed, having lost nearly all of his artillery and trains, Generals Marmaduke and Cabell were captured with about one thousand prisoners. Then Price made a precipitate retreat into northern Arkansas.[43]

The enemy's cavalry under Forrest crossed the Tennessee near Waterloo Ala., on the 20th of September; and on the 23rd he attacked at Athens the garrison, consisting of six hundred men, mostly negroes.[44] These capitulated on the 24th. Soon afterwards, two regiments of reinforcements arrived. The Confederates were soon compelled to surrender the town. Forrest destroyed the railroad westward, captured the garrison at Sulphur Branch Trestle, and skirmished with the garrison at Pulaski on the 27th. That same day, he cut the Nashville and Chattanooga railroad near Tullahoma and Decherd. On the morning of the 30th, one column of Forrest's command under Buford appeared before Huntsville, and summoned the garrison to surrender. Receiving an answer in the negative, he remained in the vicinity of the place until next morning. Again he summoned it, and received the same reply as on the previous night. He then withdrew in the direction of Athens, which place had been garrisoned. He attacked it on the afternoon of the 1st of October, but without success.[45] On the morning of the 2nd, he renewed his attack, but he was again handsomely repulsed. Another column under Forrest's command appeared before Columbia on the morning of the 1st, but it did not make an attack. On the morning of the 3rd, he moved towards Mount Pleasant. Meanwhile, Federal reinforcements were brought from Atlanta, and a body of cavalry from Memphis.[46] While these operations were progressing, every exertion was made by General Thomas to destroy the Confederate forces before they could recross the Tennessee. However, he was unable to prevent Forrest's escape to Corinth in Mississipp.i[47]

culprits were followed, and their leader was killed a few days later. See *ibid.*, p. 511.

[42] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. viii., chap. xx., p. 479.

[43] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xvii., chap. lxxvii., p. 255.

[44] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. iii., chap. xvii., pp. 373, 374.

[45] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xviii., chap. lxxx., p. 311.

[46] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. iii., chap. xvii., p 374.

[47] See Dr. John William Draper's

Emboldened by Forrest's operations, guerrilla bands were also very active in Kentucky. The most noted of these raiders was Morgan. With a force of from two to three thousand cavalry, he entered that State through Pound Gap in the latter part of May. On the 11th of June, he attacked and captured Cynthiana with its entire garrison. On the 12th, he was overtaken by General Stephen Gano Burbridge,[48] and completely routed, with considerable loss.[49] He was finally driven out of the State, and into Virginia. This notorious guerrilla chief was afterwards surprised and killed on the 4th of September, near Greenville Tenn.[50] His command was captured and completely dispersed by General Alvan C. Gillem.[51] In September an expedition under General Burbridge was sent to destroy the salt works of Saltville Va. He met the enemy on the 2nd of October, about three miles and a-half from that place. He drove the Confederates into their strongly intrenched position around the salt-works. From these, however, he was unable to dislodge them. During the night he withdrew his command, and returned to Kentucky.

Meanwhile, General Grant's army was unable to advance against the Confederate opposing force. By the 12th of September, a branch railroad was completed from the City Point and Petersburg railroad to the Weldon railroad; thus enabling the Federals to supply without difficulty, and in all kinds of weather, the army in front of Petersburg. The extension of their lines across the Weldon railroad had compelled General Lee in conformity to extend his, as Richmond was menaced from north of the James River.[52] It was thought by Grant, that the enemy could then have few troops north of the James for the defence of Richmond. On the night of the 28th, the Tenth Corps of General Butler's army, Major-General William Birney,[53] and the Eighteenth Corps, Major General Ord commanding, crossed to the north side of the James. They advanced on the morning of the 29th, carrying the very strong fortifications and intrenchments below Chapin's Farm, and known as Fort Harrison. They captured fifteen pieces of artillery, besides the New Market road and intrenchments.[54] This success was followed up by a gallant assault upon Port Gilmer, immediately in front of the Chapin Farm fortifications. There, however, the Federals were repulsed with heavy loss. Kautz's cavalry[55] was pushed forward on the

"History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xviii., chap. lxxx., p. 511.

[49] He was born in Scott County, Kentucky, August 19th 1831. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. i., p. 449.

[49] See General Duke's "History of Morgan's Cavalry," p. 528.

[50] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. viii., chap. iii., p. 58.

[51] He was born in Tennessee in 1830. See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 216.

[52] See Jefferson Davis' "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., Part iv., chap. lii., p. 640.

[53] Born near Huntsville Ala., May 28th 1819. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. i., p. 269.

[54] See General Grant's "Personal Memoirs," Vol. ii., p. 333.

[55] August Valentine Kautz was born

road to the right, and supported by infantry. These reached the enemy's inner line, but they were unable to get further. However, Fort Harrison was fortified, and although General Anderson with a a large force tried to retake it on the 30th, he was defeated with great loss.[56]

The position captured from the Confederates was so threatening to Richmond, that General Grant determined to hold it. The enemy then made several desperate attempts to dislodge the Federals. All of these were unsuccessful. On the morning of the 30th, General Meade sent out a reconnaissance with a view to attacking the enemy's line, if he were found to be sufficiently weakened by withdrawal of troops to the north side. During this movement, the United States troops captured and held the enemy's works near Poplar Spring Church. In the afternoon, some troops moving to gain the left of the point held were attacked by the enemy in great force. They were compelled to fall back, until supported by those forces holding the captured works. The cavalry under Gregg was also attacked, but it speedily repulsed the enemy. In those operations, the Federals lost 2,685, of whom 1,756 were missing.[57]

The conception, for completing this campaign, by a masterly manœuvre, had occurred to the mind of General Sherman during the fall. Thereupon, he communicated to General Grant a proposition, to cut loose from his own base of operations, and to sever the connexion between Richmond and the south, while Grant should press the enemy near that city. On the 12th of September, the Commander-in-chief wrote to him regarding the situation in Virginia, and of a purpose he had to move against Wilmington. In view of ulterior measures, Sherman had intended to remove all the inhabitants of Atlanta, sending those committed in the Union cause to the rear of his army, and the rebel families to the front. This purpose he had announced to General Hood early in September, and afterwards to the local and municipal authorities. Protests followed as a matter of course; but this policy was adopted, to save the transportation of supplies, both for the civilians and for his troops. Besides a military necessity existed for contracting the defences, so as to require a smaller garrison for occupation. This course of action was approved at Washington, and sanctioned in a despatch from General Halleck, dated September 28th.[58] Meanwhile, Sherman had received some informal overtures from Joseph E. Brown,[59] Governor of Georgia, towards withdrawing that State from the Confe

in Ispringen, Baden Germany, Jan. 5th 1828. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iii., p. 495.

[56] See Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. xviii., p. 432.

[57] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xix., chap. lxxxiii., p. 417.

[58] See General William T. Sherman's "Memoirs," Vol. ii., pp. 111 to 128.

[59] He was born in Pickens County S.C., April 15th 1821. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. i., pp. 408, 409.

deracy and to procure peace; since further resistance to the Federal forces was then regarded as sheer madness, by all who took a rational view of existing conditions.[60]

Meantime General Sherman had sent various despatches to Generals Grant and Halleck, recommending that his own movement should be southwards, while holding Nashville with a considerable army under Thomas, to prevent the Confederate attempts against Tennessee and Kentucky.[61] In anticipation of those operations by General Grant to the south of his position before Richmond, Sherman had advised that his own army and Canby's should be reinforced to the maximum; that after Grant got possession of Wilmington, Sherman should strike for Savannah and the river; that Canby meanwhile be instructed to hold the Mississippi River, and to send a force to take Columbus Ga., either by way of the Alabama, or of the Appalachicola; that Sherman himself should keep Hood employed, and put his army in final order for a march on Augusta, Columbia and Charleston, and to be ready so soon as Wilmington was sealed, to commence his march towards the city of Savannah.

During this period of expectancy, Jefferson Davis delivered a speech in Macon Georgia on the 23rd of September. This undignified and imprudent oration was reported in the southern papers. He declared it was a deep disgrace for the Confederate army to have fallen back from Dalton to the interior of Georgia, denouncing the Governor of that State as a scoundrel, stating that two-thirds of the soldiers were absent from the army, and that the south was exhausted, while he still made an appeal for recruits. This senseless tirade very soon became known to the whole country. Moreover, his unguarded words disclosed the enemy's plans, with his declaration that Tennessee should be regained, while the Federals were to be driven back to the Ohio. Thus it enabled General Sherman to meet the contemplated operations.[62] When the Confederate President reached the camp, in an interview with General Hood it was resolved that Tennessee should next be invaded,[63] and Georgia be abandoned.[64]

In execution of his plan Hood crossed the Chattahoochee about the beginning of October, having 36,000 under his command, and the fourth part of his troops being cavalry. His army had been reported in the south-west of Atlanta. Moving far to Sherman's right he reached Dallas, and thence with cavalry he succeeded in reaching the railroad about Big Shanty. There the Confederates captured the garrison, as also that of Ackworth. Meantime, anticipating this movement, Sherman sent

[60] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. xx., pp. 469 to 471.

[61] See General W. T. Sherman's "Offical Account of the great March through Georgia and the Carolinas," etc.

[62] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xviii., chap. lxxix., pp. 307 to 309.

[63] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. xx., p. 472.

[64] During a review of Hood's army by Davis, however, both felt extremely mortified in hearing brigade after brigade hail the Executive with the shout, "Give us General John-

General Thomas back to Nashville, and he despatched a reinforcement from Rome to strengthen the post at Allatoona, under the charge of Colonel Toutelotte. Meanwhile Hood crossed the Coosa River, twelve miles below Rome. Sherman followed him on the 10th, and from that town he sent the Twenty-third Corps and some cavalry to threaten his enemy's flank. As the Confederates marched northwards, they destroyed rail communications. On the 12th, Hood demanded the surrender of Resaca, but there he was repulsed. He then moved forward very rapidly, Sherman in pursuit, but unable to bring on a battle.[65]

The operations of Sheridan, during the month of August and the fore part of September, were both of an offensive and a defensive character. These resulted in many severe skirmishes, principally by the cavalry. In them, the Federals were generally successful. The enemy was on the west bank of the Opequan creek covering Winchester, and the Federal forces were in front of Berryville. They were in such a position, that either side could bring on a battle, at any time. Defeat to the Federals should have laid open the States of Maryland and Pennsylvania for long distances to the enemy, before another army could be interposed to check him. On the morning of August 10th, Sheridan moved out from Halltown to open that campaign; while Early, correctly learning the concentration of forces there, began a retrograde movement through Winchester and up the Valley. He knew also that General Lee was sending him a large reinforcement; while not having had such knowledge, Sheridan pursued him with great diligence. At last, the Confederates took up a strong position at Fisher's Hill, two miles south of Strasburg. Meantime, General R. H. Anderson, with Kershaw's infantry and Fitzhugh Lee's cavalry divisions on their way to join, had orders to move on Front Royal. When Sheridan learned the large force now gathering on his left flank, he retired down the Valley and gained a long start before Early perceived his departure, on the morning of the 17th.[66] Then, the Confederates set out in hot pursuit; Early from Strasburg, and Anderson from Front Royal. Winchester was evacuated, and Sheridan again took up the strong position at Halltown. Meanwhile Lee had required Anderson to return, and expecting a reduction of the force in his front, Sheridan moved forward on the 28th of August. On the 3rd of September, he occupied the line from Clifton to Berryville. At that very time and place, Anderson's troops were marching for Richmond when they were thus arrested, and soon Earley's force was ready to co-operate. Then, both divisions retreated hastily to the west side of the Opequon. As the Federals did not move to dislodge them, and as only scouting parties advanced along the eastern banks of that river; it was thought safe for Anderson to leave with his troops for Richmond, and on the 14th he was

ston," a commander who had most of their confidence.

[65] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sec. xviii., chap. lxxx., pp. 313, 314.

[66] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. xiii., pp. 282 to 294.

allowed quietly to cross the mountains on his way to Front Royal. This was an opportunity for which Sheridan eagerly waited; and he only desired the concurrence of the Commander-in-chief, to make an attack on the Confederates remaining.

At first, General Grant hesitated about allowing the initiative to be taken. Nevertheless, the use of the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad and of the Chesapeake and Ohio Canal, which were both obstructed by the enemy, became so indispensably necessary, and the importance of relieving Pennsylvania and Maryland from continuously threatened invasion was so great, that Grant determined such risk should be incurred.[67] But, fearing to telegraph the order for an attack, without knowing more than he did of General Sheridan's opinion as to what might be the probable result, he left City Point on the 15th of September to visit Sheridan at his headquarters, and after conference with him to decide what should be done. He was met at Charleston. Sheridan then pointed out distinctly how each army lay, and what he could do if authorised, expressing such confidence of success, that General Grant willingly gave his assent.[68] For convenience of forage, the teams to supply the army were kept at Harper's Ferry. Grant asked Sheridan if he could get out his teams and supplies in time to make an attack on the ensuing Tuesday morning. The reply was, that he could before daylight on Monday.

The intention of Sheridan was to throw his whole force on Early's line of communications. However, hearing that the Confederate army had been divided, he advanced towards Winchester early on the 19th of September, only to find it was there concentrated. He crossed the Opequon, and hurried through the Berryville canon, a defile two miles long. Soon General Sheridan attacked Early, and drove his troops from their earthworks, at the crossing. A Confederate division under Ramseur[69] covered Winchester, and it was posted in a belt of woods. About noon, the Union troops began the attack, and succeeded in breaking the enemy's lines; but in turn, they were checked and driven back. After a most sanguinary and bloody battle, lasting until five o'clock in the evening, Early was defeated with heavy loss. But with coolness and skill, he retired on a line of breastworks in front of Winchester. From these he was likewise driven, and his troops then fled in disorder through that town. The entire position from Opequon creek to Winchester was thus carried, while pursuit was continued until night fell. The Union cavalry followed up the pike to Kearnstown. Two thousand prisoners were captured, and five pieces of

[67] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xix., chap. lxxxiii., p. 409.

[68] The words he used at parting were "Go in," and then he left Sheridan to use his own discretion. See "Personal Memoirs of Ulysses S. Grant, Vol. ii., p. 583.

[69] Stephen Dodson Ramseur was born in Lincolnton N.C., May 31st 1837. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. v., pp. 167, 168.

artillery.[70] The loss of Early in killed and wounded was about 2,000.[71] As the Union troops were constantly in the open field and the attacking force, their losses were still greater, amounting to 4,300 in killed and wounded,[72] with about 700 missing.[73]

During that night, the Confederates retreated under cover of the darkness towards Strasburg. Two miles south of that place, Early drew up his troops on the 20th; his right protected by a hill, and by the north fork of the Shenandoah; his left was posted at the base of Little North Mountain; while his cavalry was stationed in the rear. The enemy thus rallied made another stand, in this strong position at Fisher's Hill. On the afternoon of that day, the Federal troops began to arrive, and to take up positions for aggression. Sheridan was engaged on the 21st in posting Wright and Emory—one on the right and the other on the left; while Crook with the Eighth corps gained the flank of Little North Mountain under cover of the woods. Already Early had given orders that his troops should retire when night came on,[74] and the sun had now set. The Sixth and the Nineteenth Corps opened the battle in front. Suddenly, however in that short hour of twilight, Crook burst upon them, taking their works in reverse, and putting them to a disordered flight.[75] Sixty guns and a thousand prisoners were captured, while the rest of the Confederates escaped in the darkness.

They were pursued with great energy through Harrisonburg, Staunton and the gaps of the Blue Ridge. After stripping the upper valley of supplies and provisions for the rebel army, Sheridan returned to Strasburg, and took position on the north side of Cedar Creek. Meanwhile, Early marched with the greatest speed up the valley to escape, taking the Keezeltown Road to Port Republic and Brown's Gap, where he arrived on the 25th. There shelter and succour awaited him.[76] Having, as he supposed, secured his victorious army in their position, Sheridan went to Washington, there to consult with the Secretary of War respecting the detachment of the Sixth Corps. Meantime, receiving considerable re-enforcements from Richmond, and with Kershaw's division restored to his original strength, General Early again returned to the valley, and resumed his former position at Fisher's Hill. On the 9th of October, his cavalry encountered the Federal army near Strasburg. There the rebels were defeated, with the loss of eleven pieces of artillery and 350 prisoners. Then Sheridan continued to fall back so far as Cedar Creek

[70] See "Personal Memoirs of P. H. Sheridan, General U.S. Army," Vol. i., chap. xxiii., xxiv., pp. 456 to 500.

[71] Among their superior officers were Generals R. E. Rodes, A. C. Godwin and Colonel W. T. Patton, killed; while, Generals Fitzhugh Lee and Zebulon York were wounded.

[72] Among their killed was General D. A. Russell, and among their wounded were Generals E. Upton, J. B. Mackintosh, and G. H. Chapman, besides Colonels Isaac H. Duval and Jacob Sharpe.

[73] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. xiii., pp. 300 to 305.

[74] See Early's "Memoir of the Last Year of the War," p. 99.

[75] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xix., chap. lxxxviii., pp. 410, 411.

[76] See "Abraham Lincoln, a His-

fixing his camp on the left bank of that stream, just above its junction with the North Fork.[77] While on his way with all the cavalry at Port Royal, Sheridan received a telegraphic message from General Wright at Cedar Creek indicating that the Confederate general meditated an attack. Whereupon, he sent back the cavalry, and proceeded to Washington, which he reached on the 17th. He left that same day, reaching Winchester on the evening of the 18th.[78]

On that very night, having the advantage from their elevated station of surveying every position of the Union army, with every road and intrenchment around, the enemy crossed the mountains, which separated the branches of the Shenandoah.[79] They forded its north fork, and very early on the morning of the 19th, under cover of darkness and a fog, they surprised and turned the Federal left flank, and captured those batteries which enfiladed their whole line. The troops were roused out of sleep about 4 o'clock a.m., when they fell back with heavy loss and in much confusion. Attempting to stem the disaster, General Thoburn commanding the First Division lost his life. However, the Union army was finally rallied, especially by General Rutherford B. Hayes who commanded the Second Division; and, after some time, other divisions formed into lines between Middletown and Newtown. The Sixth Corps steadily maintained its ground, in face of the repeated attacks of Early; and Lewis A. Grant,[80] commanding Getty's[81] division, drove the Confederates from their position, and advanced to pursue, when they were checked by a furious discharge of artillery.[82] About nine o'clock General Wright who commanded in the absence of General Sheridan withdrew his troops to a better position north of Middletown, and there he threw up some hastily improvised defences.

At this juncture, General Sheridan, who had been at Winchester when the battle commenced, now rode forward in all haste with an escort of twenty troopers. On the way, he rallied some hundreds of fugitives, and brought them back. About two thousand of all corps came with him from near Newtown.[83] He arrived on the field, and arranged his lines, just in time to secure a great victory. In order to finish his day's work with as much speed as possible, Early had summonded his divisions to begin a conjoint attack on the Union army.[84] But, such was their dis-

tory," Vol. ix., chap. xiii., pp. 306 to 310.

[77] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iv., Art. SHENANDOAH VALLEY, p. 489.

[78] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap xiv., p 315.

[79] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War, from 1861 to 1865," Vol. iii., chap. xiii.

[80] He was born in Vermont about 1820. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. ii., p. 708.

[81] George Washington Getty was born in Georgetown D.C., October 2nd 1819. See *ibid.*, p. 633.

[82] Then and there General Bidwell was mortally wounded. A few months before, he had made a gallant sortie from the works at Washington.

[83] These he turned over to the command of General Crook, then on the extreme left and rear. See Pond, "The Shenandoah," p. 236.

[84] The topography of Cedar Creek and its surroundings, with the respective position of both armies, are

organized state, after the first flush of success was over, that his subordinates could not well collect them for a simultaneous onset, as the Union cavalry were strong and actively operating on both flanks of the Confederates.[85]

Soon as Sheridan arrived at the front, the news spread throughout the army, and it was received with an indescribable tumult of joy; when Wright resuming charge of the Sixth Corps, and Getty that of his own division, arrangements were at once made for a determined attack on the enemy. Immediately drawing up all the rear troops to Getty's line, and sending Custer's cavalry back to the right, Sheridan formed a strong line of battle.[86] Assuming the offensive, he now presented a firm front to Early's last ineffective assault about one o'clock. This was readily repulsed, by the Nineteenth Corps and a part of the Sixth, and with great vigour. The enemy was then forced to retreat, while Early had already sent some fourteen hundred prisoners to his rear and on the way to Richmond. He manœuvered with much ability to rally his disordered columns, and to retire with his spoils. However, defeated as he was with great slaughter, his killed and wounded amounting to 1,860, with over 1,000 taken prisoners, he made a last stand in a good position. But vainly he opposed a bold front to the inevitable loss and disaster. Most of his artillery and trains, together with the trophies he had captured in the morning, were taken. The wreck of his army escaped during the night, and fled in the direction of Staunton and Lynchburg. Pursuit was made so far as Mount Jackson. The Union loss in killed and wounded was far heavier than that of the Confederates, amounting in all to 5,665; yet the victory of Cedar Creek was decisive.[87] Thus ended the enemy's last attempt to invade the North through the Shenandoah valley. For this great achievement, Sheridan was promoted to be Major-General in the regular army, and he received the thanks of Congress, while Grant's armies fired a salute of 100 guns in honour of his signal victory.[88]

On the 7th of October, the Confederates attacked Kautz's cavalry north of the James. They drove it back with heavy loss in killed, wounded and prisoners, as also with the loss of eight or nine pieces of artillery. This was followed by an attack on the intrenched infantry line.[89] It was repulsed, however, with severe slaughter. On the 13th, a reconnaissance was sent out by General Butler, with a view to drive the enemy from some new works he was constructing. This resulted however, in very great loss to the United States troops.[90] Again, the Army of

shown in the Map to be found in "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. xiv., pp. 318, 319.

[85] See Early's "Memoir of the Last Year of the War," pp. 110 to 114.

[86] See "Personal Memoirs of P. H. Sheridan, General U. S. Army," Vol. ii., chap. iii., pp. 53 to 88.

[87] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. xiv., pp. 323 to 327.

[88] See Chambers's "Encyclopædia, a Dictionary of Universal Knowledge," Vol. ix., p. 391. New edition, 1892.

[89] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. xviii., p. 433.

[90] See Dr. John William Draper's

the Potomac, leaving only sufficent men to hold its fortified line, moved on the 27th by the enemy's right flank. The Second Corps, followed by two divisions of the Fifth Corps, with the cavalry in advance, and covering the left flank, forced a passage at Hatcher's Run. They moved towards the South Side railroad, until the Second Corps and part of the cavalry reached the Boydton plank-road, where it crossed Hatcher's Run. There they were met in front and flank by Generals Wade, Hampton,[91] and William H. F. Lee,[92] with dismounted cavalry, while infantry were hastened forward by General Lee[93]. The Federals were six miles distant from the South Side railroad, at Hatcher's Run. This General Grant desired to reach by a surprise, and to hold, with all the available infantry, amounting to some 35,000, and about 3,000 horse under Gregg.[94] Finding that the troops had not gained the end of the enemy's fortifications, and no place presenting itself for a successful assault, they were then withdrawn and stationed within the fortified line. On receiving a report that General Warren had connected with General Hancock, Grant returned to head quarters. Soon after he left, the enemy moved out across Hatcher's Run, in the gap between Generals Hancock and Warren, which was not closed as reported. They then made a desperate attack on General Hancock's right and rear. As they fought in the midst of dense woods, much confusion ensued on both sides. Immediately facing to meet that assault, and Thomas W. Egan's[95] division of the Second Corps having attacked the Confederates in flank, these suffered severely, losing heavily in prisoners and captured guns. After a bloody combat, Hancock drove the enemy within his works. He then withdrew that night to his old position.[96] In support of this movement, General Butler made a demonstration on the north side of the James. He attacked the enemy on the Williamsburg road, and also on the York River railroad. In the former attack he was unsuccessful; but in the latter he succeeded by carrying a work, which was afterwards abandoned. The Union loss was over 1,000 men; that of the Confederates much less. The Federal forces then withdrew to their former positions.[97]

From this time forward the operations in front of Petersburg and Richmond were confined to the defence and extension of the Federal lines, with some offensive movements for crippling the enemy's communi-

"History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xix., chap. lxxxiii., p. 417.

[91] Born in Columbia S.C., in 1818. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iii., p. 70.

[92] Second son of General Robert E. Lee, and born at Arlington Va., May 31st 1837. See *ibid.*, p. 674.

[93] See Jefferson Davis' "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., Part iv., chap. lii., p. 644.

[94] See Humphreys, "The Virginia Campaign of '64 and '65," p. 295.

[95] Thomas W. Egan was born in New York city in 1836. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. ii., p. 314.

[96] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. iii., chap. xiv., p. 309.

[97] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. xviii., p. 434.

cations, and to prevent his detaching any considerable force to send south.[98] Meanwhile, a territorial government having been organised for Nevada in 1861, it entered the Union as a new state, March 21st 1864.[99] In the order of incorporation, it reckons as the Thirty-sixth State in the Union.[100]

CHAPTER XXXIX.

Party Selections of Candidates for the Presidency and Vice-Presidency—Confederate Military Commands in the West—Purpose of General Sherman to march through Georgia eastwards—Burning of Atlanta—Hood marches northwards—Battle at Franklin—Victory of General Thomas at Nashville.

When the time for holding Conventions regarding the election of President arrived in 1864, certain Radical politicians were disposed to select as their abolitionist candidate John C. Frémont, while the more moderate Republicans favoured the selection of General Ulysses S. Grant[1]. While the former was willing to accept the position, in which he had been placed; the latter declined his nomination, being resolved not to interfere with the well-merited claims of the President. Soon the popular will became generally pronounced, and the Union Convention assembled on the 7th of June, in Baltimore Md. There on the 8th, the result of the first ballot was 484 for Lincoln, while the Missouri delegation cast 22 votes for Grant. Then Missouri changed its vote, and the secretary of the convention read the grand total of 506 for Lincoln[2]. Afterwards, by a considerable majority, Andrew Johnson of Tennessee, a War Democrat, was selected as a candidate for the Vice-Presidency[3] Before the month had closed, the relations between the President and the Secretary of the Treasury became so strained, that the latter tendered his resignation, which was accepted[4]. His successor was William Pitt Fessenden, Senator from Maine.

Soon after the nomination of the President for re-election, Horace Greeley and some other less prominent individuals had a great desire

[98] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xix., chap. lxxxiii., p. 419.

[99] It was formed out of part of New Mexico, and of a strip from California. See Lippincott's "Gazeteer of the World," pp. 2682, 2683. New Revised Edition, 1893.

[100] See Dr. L. De Colange's "National Gazetteer," a geographical Dictionary of the United States, pp. 693, 694.

[1] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. ii., pp. 29 to 51

[2] See *ibid.*, chap. iii., pp. 52 to 72.

[3] See Edward McPherson's "Political History of the United States of America during the Great Rebellion," pp. 405 to 408. Washington, 1865, 8vo.

[4] See Judge Robert Bruce Warden's "Account of the Private Life and Public Services of Salmon Portland Chase," pp. 617 to 624. Cincinnati, 1874, Roy. 8vo.

to propose terms of peace and an adjustment of existing differences between the States, North and South. In an unauthorised fashion propositions were made to Jefferson Davis, who haughtily rejected them. The President had anticipated such a result; and, as the chief rebel declared, that he would fight for bitter separation to the bitter end, this avowal became a great damper on the efforts of Northern-Peace Democrats.[5]

Meanwhile the Democratic Convention had been postponed from July 4th to the 29th August, 1864, when it was summoned to meet in Chicago. The military situation had become most unsatisfactory during that interval, and the desire for peace was increasing among the people. The War and Peace Democratic delegates chose Governor Seymour of New York, as permanent chairman of that Convention. Having laid down their platform, that a cessation of hostilities was desirable, with a view to an ultimate convention to re-construct the Federal Union, the motion afterwards to be considered was the selection of a standard-bearer to contest the forthcoming election. This National Democratic Convention nominated General M'Clellan as a candidate for the Presidency on the 31st August, his political declarations during the war having found favour with their leaders. On the motion of Clement L. Vallangdigham, who had returned from Canada, it was moved that the nomination be made unanimous. This proposition was carried with great cheering. George Henry Pendleton of Ohio was also nominated as candidate for the Vice-Presidency.[6] However the public events then transpiring created quite a revolution in the opinions of the electorate; and the wise administration of President Lincoln[7] seemed to be further confirmed in the successes which were daily announced, while his popularity was shared by the Tennesseean colleague, who had resolved on sustaining his policy.

Early in the month of October, having already received some intimation of his being appointed to take command of the Confederate army under Hood, General Beauregard repaired to Augusta, where he had a long conference with Jefferson Davis. Arrangements were then made to assign General W. J. Hardee to the department of South Carolina, Georgia and Florida; while Major-General Samuel Jones[8] took charge of the Military District of South Carolina; Major-General Howell Cobbe[9] being placed over the Military District of Georgia; and, at a still later period, Major-General James Patton Anderson[10] was appointed for the Military District of Florida. Then too Jefferson Davis communicated the design of Hood, to cut off General Sherman from his base of opera-

[5] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chaps. viii., ix., pp. 184 to 221.

[6] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iv., p. 160.

[7] See Henry Jarvis Raymond's "History of the Administration of President Lincoln," New York, 1864, 12mo.

[8] Born in Virginia, in 1820. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iii., p. 470.

[9] Born in Cherry Hill, Jefferson County, Ga., September 7th, 1815. See *ibid.*, Vol. i., pp. 666, 667.

[10] Born in Tennessee, about 1820. See *ibid.*, p. 69.

tions, by destroying the railroad and bridges between Atlanta and Chattanooga. This movement was favoured by Beauregard; and accordingly he was placed in command of the Military Division of the West, which covered more than one-third of the territorial extent of the Confederacy. Furthermore, Davis promised him the cordial co-operation of the War Department, and desired him to confer with Generals Hood[11] and Taylor.[12] These were designed to act under Beauregard's directions. Accordingly he set out for Hood's head-quarters near Cave Spring. At that point on the 9th of October Beauregard joined him, but having learned that both President Davis and Hood had agreed upon a proposed campaign in Tennessee, he was not wholly satisfied that it was the best plan which could be devised, as it had been rather hastily recommended, and not sufficiently considered in all its details. The Confederate General then repaired to Jacksonville, about thirty miles south-west, and on the 11th he telegraphed General Taylor to meet him there without delay, as he determined not to assume command until he had seen and freely conferred with both of his department commanders.[13]

From the moment the Democratic Convention at Chicago named their candidates, the general success of the Union armies began to prevail, and the State elections succeeding gave unmistakable indications of popular sentiment surging with the Republican tide. When Atlanta had fallen and fortune had turned in favour of the National cause, in accepting his nomination as candidate for the Presidency, M'Clellan replied in a letter,[14] which gave the public a very confused notion of his principles and purposes, in reference to Union preservation.[15] As the day for presidential voting approached, precautions had been taken to guard against disorder, especially in New York and Chicago.[16] The election was chiefly confined to the Northern and Middle States. On the 8th of November, the extraordinary majorities cast for Lincoln and Johnson were received with great rejoicing by the Republicans, and none were more surprised at the result than the President himself. M'Clellan carried only three States,[17] with twenty-one electoral votes.[18] On the very day of election, General M'Clellan resigned his commission in the army. The place thus made vacant was immediately filled by Philip H. Sheridan.[19] During the public rejoicings of the Union party at

[11] His Department consisted of Tennessee, as also a part of Western and Northern Georgia.

[12] His Department comprised Alabama, Mississippi and Eastern Louisiana.

[13] See Alfred Roman's "Military Operations of General Beauregard," etc., Vol. ii., chap. xxxix., pp. 276 to 281, and Appendix, pp. 597 to 600.

[14] Dated September 8th, 1864.

[15] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. xi., pp. 260, 261.

[16] See Autobiography and Personal Reminiscences of Major-General Butler," chap. xvi., pp. 752 to 768.

[17] These were New Jersey, Delaware, and Kentucky.

[18] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 650.

[19] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. xvi., pp. 351 to 384.

the results of the States autumnal elections, Chief-Justice Taney died on the 12th day of October. The post had continued vacant until the President nominated Salmon P. Chase for confirmation by the Senate, and to succeed on the 6th of December. This appointment gave very general satisfaction, and it furnished proof of the President's magnanimity, for it was well known that their previous personal relations had been inharmonious, while Chase had been an ambitious and a distinguished rival or opponent in matters affecting Cabinet policy.[20]

While Hood had been operating in his rear during the month of September, General Sherman was revolving in mind[21] a move from Atlanta through the State of Georgia, and his plan for this celebrated march had been communicated to the Commander-in-Chief. Being unable to see his way to co-operate with General Sherman by moving towards Savannah, Lieutenant-General Grant so informed him on the 11th of October. However, Sherman was at length allowed to act as he deemed best. Hoping that General Thomas had a force sufficient to protect Nashville and the lines on the Tennessee River, Sherman then resolved on assuming the offensive, as much more effective than remaining in a position where his communications were exposed to attacks on all sides. On the 2nd of November he received Grant's full permission to advance.[22]

The original design, to sally forth through the heart of Georgia, to capture one or more of the great American seaports of the south, to hold Atlanta,[23] and by getting through to the coast, with a garrison left as a check on the southern railroads, was now about to be attempted by General Sherman. In round numbers, his efficient army amounted to 60,000 men perfectly equipped. His right wing, under Howard consisted of the Fifteenth Corps,[24] commanded by General Osterhaus, in the absence of John A. Logan, and the Seventeenth Corps,[25] commanded by Frank P. Blair, jr. The left wing under General Slocum comprised the Fourteenth Corps,[26] commanded by Jeff. C. Davis, and the Twentieth Corps,[27] under Alpheus S. Williams.[28] General Sherman

[20] See J. W. Schucker's "Life and Public Services of Salmon Portland Chase, United Senator and Governor of Ohio, Secretary of the Treasury, and Chief-Justice of the United States," etc., New York, 1874, 8vo.

[21] See Sherman's "Memoirs," Vol. ii., p. 170.

[22] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. xx., p. 478.

[23] See Military Operations of the Atlanta Campaign between the United States and the Confederate Forces (1864), with folding Maps in case, Published 1874.

[24] There were four divisions in it, commanded by Brigadier-Generals C. R. Woods, W. B. Hazen, John E. Smith and John M. Corse.

[25] The three divisions of this corps were under Major-General J. A. Mower, and Brigadier-Generals M. D. Leggett and Giles A. Smith.

[26] There were three divisions in it, commanded by Brigadier Generals W. P. Carlin, James D. Morgan and Absalom Baird.

[27] Brigadier-Generals N. J. Jackson, J. W. Geary and W. T. Ward were the leaders of its respective three divisions.

[28] He was born in Saybrook Conn., September 10th 1810. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. vi., p. 519.

held the cavalry division[29] separate, and immediately subject to his own orders.[30] Seeing the constant annoyance he should have with guarding the roads to his rear, if he attempted to hold Atlanta, General Sherman had now resolved on the abandonment and destruction of that place, with all the railroads leading to it. At once preparations were commenced for the proposed movement, while keeping his army in position to watch Hood. Full details were communicated to Thomas and to all the commanders of corps.[31] Having to gather his subsistence as he marched through the country, it was not impossible that a force inferior to Sherman's own might compel him to head for such a point as he could reach, instead of such as he might prefer. Having been assured through his reconaissances, that Hood had moved westward from Gadsden[32] and across Sand Mountain, General Sherman sent the Fourth Corps, under Major-General David Sloan Stanley,[33] and the Twenty-third Corps Major-General Schofield commanding, back to Chattanooga to report to Major-General Thomas at Nashville. He had been placed in command of all the troops belonging to that military division, save the four army corps and the cavalry division, Sherman designed to move with through Georgia. Having the troops thus left at his disposal, there was little doubt that General Thomas could hold the line of the Tennessee, or in the event that Hood should force it, he ought still be able to concentrate and beat him in battle.

Having assembled his troops at Atlanta by the 14th of November, the churches and dwelling-houses of that city were spared; but all the depôts buildings, machine shops and stores were blown up or burned.[34] On the 16th Sherman commenced his march; his left wing under Slocum moving along the railroad, towards Augusta; while Howard commnding the right marched along the road. Each division had cavalry protecting its flanks.[35] The withdrawal of Hood northwards to capture Nashville, which Thomas was charged to hold with the line of the Tennessee River, left the south almost completely denuded of Confederate troops. That campaign was conducted with comparatively little opposition. The immediate objective point of Sherman's march was Savannah; but, the ulterior object was to reach Grant's army before Richmond.[36] However, he feigned a movement tending more towards the latter city. On his line of march, the Federal general had resolved

[29] This was commanded by General Judson Kilpatrick, and it was composed of two brigades, under Colonel E. H. Murray and Colonel Smith D. Atkins.

[30] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. xx., p. 481.

[31] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xviii., chap. lxxx., p. 318.

[32] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. x., chap. i., p. 4.

[33] He was born in Cedar Valley Ohio, June 1st 1828. See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iv., p. 573.

[34] See Major George Ward Nichols' "Story of the Great March," New York, 1865, 12 mo.

[35] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xviii., chap. lxxx., p. 327.

[36] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iv., Article, SHERMAN, William Tecumseh, p. 497.

to draw his subsistence and forage from the rich State of Georgia, which the ravages of invasion had hitherto spared.[37]

Soon after General Sherman commenced his march from Atlanta, two expeditions started for other objective points in the south. One of those moved from Baton Rouge and it was directed by General Canby, to cut the enemy's line of communication with Mobile, and to detain troops in that field. However, this had not a favourable result.[38] General John Gray Foster,[39] who commanded the department of the south, also sent an expedition by way of Broad river, to destroy the railroad between Charlestown and Savannah. This started under the immediate command of Brigadier-General John P. Hatch.[40] It consisted of about five thousand men of all arms, including a brigade from the navy. They proceeded up Broad River, debarked at Boyd's Neck, and marched in the direction of Grahamsville. At Honey Hill about three miles from that place, General G. W. Smith with the Georgia Militia was found and attacked in a strongly fortified position. After severe fighting, this resulted in the Federal repulse, with a loss of 746 in killed, wounded and missing. This Confederate victory saved the line of retreat for Hardee to Charleston, as during the night General Hatch withdrew his troops.[41] However on the 6th of December, General Foster obtained a position covering the Charleston and Savannah railroad, between the Coosawhatchie and Tullifinny rivers.[42] Another expedition despatched from Vicksburg, under command of Brevet Brigadier-General E. D. Osband, colonel of the 3rd United States coloured cavalry, on the 27th of November captured and destroyed the Mississippi Central Railroad bridge and the trestle-work over Big Black River near Canton. Thirty miles of the road and two locomotives besides stores were seized.

During these operations in Middle Tennessee, with a force under General Breckinridge the Confederates entered East Tennessee. On the 13th of November, they attacked General Gillem near Morristown, capturing his artillery and several hundred prisoners. With what was left of his command, Gillem retreated to Knoxville. Following up this success, Breckinridge moved near that town, but he withdrew on the 18th followed by General Jacob Ammen.[43] General Thomas had directed General Stoneman to concentrate the commands of Generals

[37] See Pierre Larousse's "Grand Dictionnaire Universel du xix Siecle," etc., Tome xiv., Art. SHERMAN (William Tecumseh), p. 666.

[38] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xviii., chap. lxxx., p. 342.

[39] He was born at Whitefield Coos County N.H., May 27th 1823. See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 127.

[40] He was born in Oswego N.Y., January 9th 1822. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iii., pp. 113, 114.

[41] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. xx., pp. 487, 488.

[42] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xviii., chap. lxxx., p. 342.

[43] Born in Botetourt County Va., January 7th 1808. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. i., p. 67.

Burbridge and Gillem near Bean's Station, to operate against Breckinridge, and to overcome or drive him into Virginia. He was instructed also to destroy the salt-works at Saltville, and the railroad into Virginia so far as he could go, and without endangering his command. On the 12th of December, Stoneman commenced that movement, and he captured or dispersed the enemy's forces wherever he met them. On the 16th, he struck the enemy under Vaughan at Marion, completely routing and pursuing him to Wytheville, capturing all his artillery, trains, and 198 prisoners. He destroyed Wytheville, with its stores and supplies, besides the extensive lead-works in the vicinity. Returning to Marion, he met a force under Breckinridge, consisting among other troops of the Saltville garrison, that had started in pursuit. At once, he made arrangements to attack it the next morning. However, morning found Breckinridge missing, and then Stoneman moved directly to Saltville. There he destroyed the extensive salt-works and a large amount of stores, while he captured eight pieces of artillery. Having successfully executed his instructions, he returned General Burbridge to Lexington and General Gillem to Knoxville.[44]

Instead of following Sherman according to the understanding with Jefferson Davis,[45] Hood continued his move northwards. His imagination was filled with fantastic visions of conquests he was then about to commence.[46] Under his command were Lee's, Cheatham's and Stewart's corps, comprising less than 30,000 infantry and artillery, with about 12,000 cavalry under Forrest.[47] On the 26th of October, the advance of Hood's army attacked the garrison at Decatur in Alabama. This has been represented as merely a demonstration. Failing to carry the place he withdrew towards Courtland, and succeeded in the face of the Federal cavalry by effecting a lodgment on the north side of the Tennessee River near Florence. On the 28th, Forrest reached the Tennessee at Fort Heiman. There he captured a gun-boat and three transports. From the 1st to the 10th of November, the army of Hood remained at Florence.[48] He had laid a pontoon bridge over the Tennessee River, and thus he crossed over a corps of infantry with two divisions of cavalry. On the 2nd of November, he planted batteries above and below Johnsonville, on the opposite side of the river, thus isolating three gunboats and three transports. On the 4th, the enemy opened his batteries upon the place, and he was replied to from the

[44] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xxi., chap. lxxxviii., pp. 530, 531.

[45] His objects in directing this movement are given in the "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., Part iv., chap. xlviii., pp. 564, 565.

[46] See Hood's "Advance and Retreat," p. 268

[47] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. iii., chap. xix., p. 416.

[48] For a correct understanding of the position and future operations, the reader may consult the Sketch Map of Hood's advance on Nashville, in Lieut.-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. iii., chap. xix., p. 416.

gunboats and the garrison. The gunboats becoming disabled were set on fire, and also the transports, to prevent them from falling into the enemy's hands. Stores and property on the levee, valued at a million and a half dollars, were consumed. On the 5th, Forrest disappeared, crossed to the north side of the Tennessee River above Johnsonville, and moved towards Clifton. Subsequently he joined Hood. On the night of the 5th, General Schofield with the advance of the Twenty-third Corps reached Johnsonville. Finding the enemy gone, he was ordered to Pulaski, and put in command of all the troops there, with instructions to watch the movements of Hood and to retard his advance. However, he was not to risk a general engagement, until the arrival of General A. J. Smith's command from Missouri, and until the latter could get his cavalry remounted.

On the 19 h General Hood continued his advance, General Thomas retarding him as much as possible. Thomas fell back towards Nashville, for the purpose of concentrating his command, and to gain time for the arrival of reinforcements. The cavalry of Forrest joined Hood on the 21st, and the northward movement then commenced.[49] On the 23rd, Granger withdrew the garrisons from Athens, Decatur and Huntsville, moving towards Stevenson near Lookout Mountain. That night also Schofield evacuated Pulaski, and marched towards Columbia. There on the 24th and 25th, the enemy skirmished with him. On the night of the 27th, finding that place not tenable in the face of a greatly superior force, Schofield took post on the north bank of Duck River, having held the Confederates at bay on the other side with two divisions of the Twenty-third Corps and Wilson's cavalry. However, the Confederates at length forced a passage, and then their line of retreat being compromised, the Federals were withdrawn from Columbia after dark on the 29th Marching twenty five miles by night, the whole command got into position at Franklin, early on the morning of the 30th. Orders were given by Hood to interrupt this retreat, but these miscarried. Coming up with the main force which was closely followed, the Confederates found General Schofield in position at Franklin, a small town on a tributary of the Cumberland River and about eighteen miles south from Nashville. The Harpeth River there assumes a horse-shoe shape. There Schofield had only time to get some of his guns and wagons on the north side, and to place Cox's Twenty-third Corps on the left and centre, with Kimball's division of Stanley's corps on the right; both flanks were resting on the river, while Hood's troops were forming for the attack.[50] Having only 10,000 men to hold that position, Schofield sent two brigades of Wagner's division forward to retard the advance of Hood, who commenced the attack about 4 o'clock on the 30th of

[49] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xviii., chap. lxxxi., pp. 344 to 346.

[50] An excellent diagram of the Battlefield of Franklin Tennessee, copied from the "Bivouac" for June 1885, may be found in "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. x., chap. i., pp. 14, 15.

November. The brigades of Wagner could not resist the first heavy shock of battle, but falling back to the works and having lost a thousand men, Schofield's lines were broken in the centre, and eight of his guns were captured. Nevertheless at this critical moment, Emerson Opdycke,[51] commanding one of Wagner's brigades, brought his men forward and closed the gap. Thus he saved the army from disaster.[52] The enemy assaulted the Federal works four different times. Each attack was repulsed with great loss to them during that whole afternoon and until near midnight. While this desperate struggle continued, Wilson's cavalry met and checked Forest at the river, driving some of his detachments back.[53] In every instance the enemy was defeated. His loss in that battle was 1,750 killed, 3,800 wounded, and 702 prisoners. Among his losses were five general officers, Major-General Patrick Roynane Cleburne, Gist, John Adams,[54] Strahl and Granbury, killed; while six others, Brown, Carter, Manigault,[55] Quarles, Cockerell and Scott were wounded, and another Gordon was captured. The entire loss of the Federals in killed, wounded and missing was about 2,300. This was the first serious opposition that Hood experienced. During the night, by order of General Thomas, Schofield and his troops fell back towards Nashville. Nor was this retreat molested.

So soon as it had been ascertained that Hood was crossing the Tennessee River, and that Price was going out of Missouri, General Rosecrans had been ordered to send General Thomas the troops of General A. J. Smith's command, and such other troops as could be spared. The advance of this reinforcement reached Nashville on the 30th of November. Other reinforcements were also rapidly arriving. Detachments belonging to Sherman's column, amounting to 5,000 under the command of Steedman, and a brigade of coloured troops, were at hand. These raised Thomas' army to more than 56,000 men.[56] In front of Nashville, a Federal line of battle had been formed on the 1st of December. Arriving at that city, Schofield held the left extending to the Nolinsville pike; General Woods' Fourth Corps held the centre; while General A. J. Smith's Sixteenth Corps occupied the right, his flank resting on the Cumberland River below the city. Steedman's provisional command filled the space from Schofield's left to the Cumberland. The cavalry of Wilson was moved north of the river.[57]

[51] Born in Hubbard Trumbull County, Ohio, January 7th 1830. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iv., pp. 582, 583.

[52] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xviii., chap. lxxxi., pp. 349, 350.

[53] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol x., chap. i, pp. 21, 22.

[54] John Adams, whose father and mother came from Ireland and settled at Nashville, was born in Tennessee, in 1825. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. i., pp. 23, 24.

[55] Arthur Middleton Manigault was born in Charleston, S.C., in 1824. See *ibid.*, Vol. iv., p. 188.

[56] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xviii., chap. lxxxi., pp. 350, 351.

[57] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. x., chap. i., p. 22.

Meantime, Hood was impatient to follow up his assumed victory, and he was too impatient to wait for reinforcements, although he knew that Thomas commanded a numerically stronger army. Accordingly in a defiant manner, he commenced the establishment of his lines in front of Nashville, on the 2nd. The next day he occupied Montgomery Hill, an irregular cone-shaped eminence, rising about 450 feet over the general level of the surrounding country. The ascent to its summit was quite abrupt, while its sides were covered by forest trees.[58] Lee's corps occupied the centre and was astride of the Franklin Pike, Stewart was placed on the left, and Cheatham on the right, their flanks widely extending to the Cumberland River, while Forrest's cavalry filled up the gap. Thus posted, on the 5th Hood despatched Bates' division of infantry with Forrest's cavalry, to invest and capture Murfreesboro' commanded by General Rousseau. This expedition totally failed. On the 7th, some of the garrison under General Milroy made a sally and inflicted a sharp defeat on Bates' infantry. This division, with the exception of two brigades, was then recalled to Nashville; while in that useless adventure, Forrest with his division of cavalry remained away too far from Hood for recall, and at a time when he was most needed.[59]

The hard frosts and sleet during the beginning of December prevented any favourable opportunity for Thomas taking the field; but, he was making all necessary preparations for a successful issue, and he was resolved to run no unnecessary risks. Even a demonstration of the Confederate cavalry to cross the Cumberland into Kentucky was disregarded, as he still remained strictly on the defensive.[60] Besides every day's delay was likely to bring reinforcements, with which he might be able with less sacrifice of life to surround the enemy's positions and effectually to cut off his retreat. Meantime, he had been most urgently advised by General Grant and the authorities at Washington to advance against Hood, notwithstanding his representations of the continued bad weather forbidding the movements of men and horses, which could then only result in a useless sacrifice of life. Although the very same causes had delayed the Commander-in-Chief at Petersburg, where his relative position regarding Lee was superior to that of Rosecrans in Missouri, or to that of Thomas at Nashville, in points of advantage; yet Grant requested Halleck to telegraph orders, that Thomas should be removed and that Schofield should supersede him. Nevertheless, trusting the capacity of their able general in the west, the government remonstrated and the order was delayed. Again, unheeding the reasons given by Thomas for delay Grant became urgent, and he even started for Washington on his way to Nashville so as to direct under his own supervision a move against

[58] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xviii., chap. xxxi., p. 351.

[59] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. x, chap. i., p. 23.

[60] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from

Hood.[61] The very same causes for delay had prevented the Confederate leader from doing much more than strengthening his positions. He was even expecting an attack there, which he hoped to resist with success, and afterwards to gain possession of Nashville, with abundant supplies for his army. Then he hoped to occupy all Tennessee,[62] while he could make further dispositions for opening a spring campaign even further north.

On the 14th of December Thomas had communicated his plan of attack to the corps commanders. He had resolved to turn the enemy's left flank, which seemed that part of his lines the least protected, while he made a strong demonstration towards his right with the force brought by Steedman from Chattanooga. He manned the inner line of defences around Nashville with volunteers. On the morning of the 15th, after a thaw had set in, and under cover of a thick fog, Thomas moved forward to attack Hood then in position. The roads and fields were deep in mire, heavy rains had fallen, and the soldiers floundered through the mud with great difficulty. While Steedman made a feint on the right of Hood's lines, Smith's divisions, covered by Wilson's cavalry, moved out on the Hardin Pike, and swept round his left flank, while the Confederate, general's attention was chiefly engaged on the advance towards his right. Some redoubts and guns, with some hundreds of prisoners, were thus captured. Then Schofield was ordered to prolong Smith's line to the right, with his two divisions under Crouch and Cox. These rapidly gained ground all the forenoon, while Wood with the Fourth Corps assaulted and carried Montgomery Hill. This was the most advanced post held by Hood. Meanwhile the Confederate batteries on the river were captured by the dismounted cavalry, assisted by the gunboats.[63] At length Hood was steadily driven back to a new line, having its right and left flanks respectively on the Overton and Brentwood Hills. His left, under Cheatham, occupied a commanding range of hills on the left of the Frankfort Pike. His centre, under Stewart, fronted forward, and was stretched across from that road to another westwards, and called the Granny White turnpike, while Lee was stationed on the right, both flanks being refused, and strongly intrenched to the east, west, and south. Hood then placed his guns in position, thinking his line sufficiently strong to resist any attack, and withdrew his artillery horses to the rear for better security. The Union lines, filled with confidence and enthusiasm, closed rapidly around him. In such position both sides awaited the result next day.[64]

Early on the morning of the 16th, Wood pressed the Confederate

1861 to 1865," Vol. iii., chap. xix., pp. 424, 425.

[61] See Van Horne's "History of the Army of the Cumberland," Vol. ii., pp. 253 to 258.

[62] See Hood's "Advance and Retreat," p. 331.

[63] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. iii., chap. xix., pp 425, 426.

[64] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. x., chap. i., p. 31.

skirmishers across the Franklin Pike, and the Federal troops were prepared for a renewal of the engagement. Thomas rode along the entire line, and surveyed every part of the field. His right, under Schofield and Smith, with Wilson's cavalry, was thrown well out on the plain, to assail the enemy on his left, while Steedman and Wood were to assault him in front.[65] About 3 o'clock p.m. General Wood opened the battle by sending Colonel Philip Sydney Post's brigade[66] to assault the work on Overton's Hill,[67] while C. R. Thompson's brigade of coloured troops of Steedman's command joined in this desperate enterprise. They advanced steadily, and had almost reached the crest, when Lee's reserves charged, and pouring in a most destructive fire, the assailing column began to waver. Then it fell back, leaving their dead and wounded among the abatis on the hill. The gallant Colonel Post was among the wounded, and at first reported to be killed.[68] From this beginning Hood hoped for a decisive success to retrieve the preceding day's repulse.[69] However, the commands of Smith and Schofield advanced on the Confederates' left, and rapidly bursting over their lines, all their artillery and thousands of prisoners were soon captured. Then an enfilading fire was directed against those soldiers that continued to stand firm. But wild confusion ensued among the Confederate troops,[70] except in Lee's corps, which preserved its organization. Hurrying in total rout towards Franklin, an aide-de-camp was sent to inform General Forrest of the disaster. While the loss of Thomas was comparatively slight, already he had captured 4,462 prisoners, including 287 officers of all grades, fifty-three pieces of artillery, and thousands of small arms.[71] After this battle, which lasted two days, Hood's troops, defeated and driven from the field in the utmost confusion, were protected by one or two of S. D. Lee's brigades. These efficiently resisted the pursuing cavalry during the first hours of night. A drenching rain then came down, which rendered retreat and pursuit extremely difficult. The rivers and watercourses were greatly swollen, moreover, owing to the profuse rains that had laetly fallen.

After Hood's disaster at Nashville, the cavalry column came up with his rear-guard four miles north of Franklin, where they captured over 400 prisoners. Then driving the Confederates through that town, they found 2,000 wounded in the hospital there, and they liberated

[65] See Lieutenant-Colonel Fletcher's "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," Vol. iii., chap. xix., p. 426.

[66] Philip Sydney Post was born in Florida N.Y., March 19th 1833. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. v., p. 84.

[67] The movements and positions of the troops on the 15th and 16th of December 1864, are clearly marked on the Map of the Battlefield of Nashville, drawn by Major Wilbur F. Foster, Engineer Corps, C.S.A., in "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. x., chap. i., pp. 26, 27.

[68] He survived, however, for many subsequent years.

[69] See Hood's "Advance and Retreat," p. 303.

[70] See Cox's "Franklin and Nashville," p. 123.

[71] See "Reports of Committee on the Conduct of the War, 1865-66." Supplement, Vol. i., p. 377.

some hundreds of Union prisoners. Closely pursued by cavalry, on the 18th the enemy crossed Harpeth River, destroying the bridges behind them. Only on the 22nd could the Duck River be crossed, for want of material to form a bridge. Still did Thomas urge the pursuit with cavalry and infantry on to the Tennessee River, which the fugitives crossed on the 26th and 27th. At Columbia Forrest had joined them, and his troops greatly aided their escape. Nevertheless, Hood was forced to abandon many pieces of artillery, and most of his transportation. On the 28th of December the Federal advanced forces ascertained that he had made good his escape to the south side of the river.

The rains, having set in heavily both in Tennessee and North Alabama, made it difficult to move army baggage and artillery. Wherefore General Thomas deemed it necessary to stop the pursuit of his main force at the Tennessee River. Notwithstanding, a body of cavalry under Colonel W. J. Palmer, of the Fifteenth Pennsylvania volunteers, and amounting only to 600 men, continued to follow Hood's disorganized troops for some distance, through North Alabama and Mississippi. He captured a considerable amount of transportation-wagons and stores, besides the enemy's pontoon bridge. After a ride of over 250 miles in pursuit, he returned to the Federal camp at Decatur, there reporting a loss of only one killed and two wounded.[72]

The retreats and misfortunes, which had been unceasingly occurring since the battle of Chattanooga, had now brought Hood's army into a condition of despair, and the enthusiasm distinguishing the earlier days of the war was fast disappearing.[73] Continuing his retreat from the Tennessee River, General Hood arrived at Tupelo, Miss., and from that place, on the 13th of January, 1865, he requested to be relieved from command of his army, which had then rapidly melted away. Four thousand of them went to join General Maury[74] at Mobile. Hood was relieved by Jefferson Davis, and on the 23rd of January he bade farewell to the few troops that remained, and then went to Virginia.[75] During this campaign, 13,189 prisoners were captured from the Confederates, and those included seven general officers, with nearly 1,000 other officers of all grades; seventy-two pieces of serviceable artillery, and many battle-flags. During the same period over 2,000 deserters were received, while many also went to their homes. The losses of Thomas in killed, wounded, and missing did not exceed 10,000. He had thus waited most judiciously for the favourable opportunity to strike, and the result was a signal victory obtained over the enemy.

[72] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. x., chap. i., pp. 35, 36.

[73] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xviii., chap. lxxxi., p. 362.

[74] Dabney Herndon Maury was born in Fredericksburg Va., May 21st 1822. In May 1861, he left the United States army, and he was then appointed Adjutant-General in the Confederate service. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iv., p. 266.

[75] See Hood's "Advance and Retreat," p. 307.

CHAPTER XL.

Enrolment of Coloured Soldiers—The Prisoners of War—Advance of General Sherman upon Savannah—Surrender of the City—Movements of Brevet Major-General Grierson in the South West—Expedition directed against Wilmington—Its Failure—Renewal of the Attempt successful.

Soon after the decree of Emancipation had been proclaimed, the Federal army was largely recruited from the coloured race. Notwithstanding the inhuman penalty of death, which had been threatened and executed against them as captives, the entire number of negroes commissioned and enlisted during the last two years of the war amounted to 186,017 men.[1] However opposed to the prejudices and dislike of the Southerners such men were, not alone as adversaries, but even as allies; yet when the Confederacy was tottering to its fall, during the autumn and winter of 1864, and when it was found difficult to recruit white soldiers for their army, it now came to be considered if blacks could be called into their service. In his message of November 7th, Davis reluctantly argued the question, but recommended only that the 20,000 slaves then employed in various labours for the army should be increased to 40,000, to be drilled in encamping, marching, packing trains, also to be employed as pioneers and engineer labourers. The proposition of having negro soldiers was still more distasteful to the members of the Confederate Congress.[2] Still discussion on the measure went on, and early next year General Lee gave it his assent, as not only expedient, but necessary.[3]

When it was ascertained in 1864, that the prisoners would be held long in confinement, Andersonville, in Georgia, was selected for the location of a principal prison.[4] An insufficient space for enclosure there had been set apart for a prison-pen, which measured only thirty-five acres, much of which was a swamp, and through which a small stream of water ran. Into this narrow space no less than 35,000 Union soldiers had been crammed. There only the most scanty and low dietary was furnished to them; while as a consequence, sickness and death made

[1] According to the Report of the Provost Marshal-General.

[2] See E. A. Pollard's "Life of Jefferson Davis," pp. 453, 454.

[3] See M'Cabe's "Life of Lee," p. 574.

[4] According to Jefferson Davis' statement, it was a salubrious place; yet he acknowledges, that as the number of prisoners rapidly increased by the middle of May, gangrene and scurvey made their appearance. General John H. Winder, who had been stationed at Richmond in charge of the police and local guards, as also having the general control of prisoners, went to Andersonville in June. In September, he moved with the main body of the prisoners, first to Millen Ga., and afterwards to Florence S. C. See "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., Part iv., chap. xlix., pp. 596, 597.

fearful ravages. Without proper medical or surgical treatment, the survivors soon became living skeletons, emaciated from hunger and disease. Numbers were crawling about within their prison lines, which they dare not pass under penalty of their being shot, and many were afflicted with severe and incurable diarrhœa, dysentery, and scurvy.[5]

Even the terror of a violent and an immediate death was occasionally added to their daily torments, and it stifled every aspiration for freedom in the hearts of those miserable captives.[6] In July, 1864, when General Sherman's rapid march towards Atlanta threatened their rescue, an order was given by General Winder to the guards at Andersonville to open fire upon the stockade with grape shot.[7] There can be no accurate return of the mortality in the rebel prisons; but about 188,000 Union soldiers were captured by the Confederates; about half of them were paroled, and half confined in prison. Among the latter, 36,000 died in captivity.[8] On the other hand, the Union armies captured 476,000 Confederates; of these 227,000 were retained as prisoners, and 30,000 died. Thus, while the percentage of mortality in Northern prisons was thirteen in the hundred, that in rebel prisons was thirty-eight.[9]

Most unaccountably General Grant sent orders to General Sherman on the 6th of December, and these instructed him to establish a base on the sea coast, with necessary cavalry, to include all his artillery and troopers, as also, that he should come by water to City Point, with the balance of his command. This dispatch gave Sherman great uneasiness, for he had now set his heart on the capture of Savannah;[10] and preparations had been already made for its investment, while General

[5] In the summer of 1864, Lieutenant-Colonel D. T. Chandler had been sent to inspect the prison at Andersonville, when that humane and high-minded Confederate officer gave the foregoing report to his Government, and in it were included many other appalling particulars. Dr. Joseph Jones also inspected Andersonville in 1864 and gave a similar Report, which is printed in the "Trial of Henry Wirz," at pp. 618 to 642.

[6] In a Report intended to vindicate their action in the treatment of prisoners, a joint committee of the Confederate Congress relates, that when it was feared Richmond might be taken, at the time of Kilpatrick's abortive cavalry raid, and lest their prisoners might escape, a mine was prepared under the Libby prison. A sufficient quantity of gunpowder was put into it, and pains were taken to inform the prisoners, that any attempt by them to escape would thus be effectually defeated. See Pollard, "The Lost Cause," pp. 629 to 641.

[7] This heartless jailer, who boasted to General Chandler, that he had never been inside the stockade, and that if it were too crowded he would kill enough to make it suit. He was still near enough to breathe their tainted air with his victims, for he contracted gangrene of the face, and died not long after his promotion. See "The Southern Historical Society Papers," Vol. i., p. 183.

[8] According to a Report of the War Department to the Fortieth Congress.

[9] As a finale to the foregoing melancholy recital, Messrs. John G. Nicolay and John Hay add: "There is the evidence of Southern priests, whose hearts were torn by the agonies of Catholic soldiers, dying of want and privation in the murderous stockade. But this cumulation of anguish would be an ungrateful task."—"Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. vii., chap. xvi., pp. 470, 471.

[10] See Sherman's "Memoirs," Vol. ii., pp. 205, 206.

Slocum occupied some favourable positions to co-operate against Hardie's communications. After this Grant received a communication from General Sherman, dated the 6th of December, acknowledging the receipt of such order on that day, and informing him of preparations making to carry it into effect, so soon as he could get transportation. Also that he had expected upon reducing Savannah, instantly to march for Columbia S.C., thence to Raleigh, and there report to General Grant, but that this should consume about six weeks' time after the fall of Savannah, whereas by sea he could probably reach by the middle of January. The confidence he manifested in this letter, of being able to march up and join Grant, pleased the General ; and without waiting for a reply to his letter of the 18th, Sherman was directed on the 28th of December, to make preparations to start as he proposed, and without delay, to break up the railroads in North and South Carolina, and to join the armies operating against Richmond so soon as he could.

Nearly a week previous to his entry on the scene of operations, General Sherman had sent out a formal demand for the surrender of Savannah. General Hardie the Confederate commander replied, that he proposed notwithstanding, as duty required it from him, to prepare for a siege. On the 10th of December, the Union army reached the immediate vicinity of Savannah ; and on the 12th, they occupied a semicircular line reaching from Savannah River to the Savannah and Gulf railroad.[11] The defences, earthworks and fortifications around the city were very strong, but the General in command had not troops sufficient to protect his extensive lines. Sherman then put his siege guns in position. The ships under command of Rear-Admiral Charles Steedman,[12] also co-operated in that attack. Held by a garrison of two hundred and fifty men with experienced officers, Fort M'Alister, on the right bank of the Ogeechee River, was captured by assault after a feeble resistance, on the evening of the 13th. This enabled General Sherman to open communication with the Federal fleet, and to secure supplies for his army. Besides, it furnished him with heavy ordnance for use against the city.[13]

On the 18th of December, having received information of the defeat and utter rout of Hood's army by General Thomas, and that owing to the great difficulty of procuring ocean transportation it should take over two months to transport Sherman's army ; doubting whether he might not contribute as much towards the desired result by operating from where he was, Grant wrote to Sherman and asked him for his views, as to what it should be the best course to adopt. He closed by congratu-

[11] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xviii., chap. lxxx., p. 333.

[12] He was born in Charleston S.C., September 24th 1811. See "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iv., pp. 585, 586.

[13] See Jefferson Davis' "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., Part iv., chap. xlviii., p. 572.

lating Sherman upon the splendid results of his campaign.[14] Seeing the hopelessness of resistance Hardie retreated, taking the route of Union Causeway on a pontoon bridge, and in the direction of Charleston. This march of the garrison took place on the night of the 20th. At dawn on the 21st of December, several Federal regiments were sent forward to occupy the deserted entrenchments. Then at the head of his body-guard, General Sherman entered Savannah. The city had been previously evacuated by the Confederates.[15] Afterwards, he received its formal surrender from the municipal authorities, and immediately he announced this triumph as a Christmas gift presented to the President. After a march of twenty-seven days over a distance of more than 300 miles, with occasional skirmishes, only five officers and fifty-eight men were killed, thirteen officers and 232 men were wounded, one officer and 258 men were missing. From the time the Federal army left Atlanta until its arrival before Savannah, no intelligence of its movements reached the north, except through the Confederate newspapers.[16]

Meantime, some minor skirmishes were in course of action in the south-west. A cavalry expedition, under Brigadier-General Grierson,[17] started from Memphis on the 21st of December. On the 25th, he surprised and captured Forrest's dismounted camp, which he destroyed at Verona Mississippi, on the Mobile and Ohio railroad. Sixteen cars loaded with wagons and pontoons for Hood's army, 4,000 new English carbines and large amounts of public stores, were also seized. On the morning of the 28th, Grierson attacked and captured a force of the enemy at Egypt, and he destroyed a train of fourteen cars. Thence turning to the south-west, he struck the Mississippi Central railroad at Winona. He demolished the factories and a large amount of stores at Bankston, with the machine shops and public property at Grenada. He arrived at Vicksburg, after these achievements, on the 5th of January 1865.[18]

At that time, Wilmington in North Carolina was the most important sea-coast port which had been left to the enemy, and through which he could get supplies from abroad, while he was able to send cotton and other products out of it, by means of blockade-runners.[19] Besides, it was a place of great strategic value. The navy had been making strenuous exertions to seal the harbour, but with only partial effect. The nature

[14] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. xx., p. 493.

[15] See Joseph Irving's "Annals of our Time," p. 535.

[16] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xviii., chap. lxxx., pp. 338 to 341.

[17] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 274.

[18] For these and other brilliant services, he was brevetted Brigadier and Major-General of the U.S. army, March 2nd 1867. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. ii., p. 763.

[19] Their principal starting point was from Nassau in the Bahamas or Bermuda. "The total number of prizes brought in during the war was eleven hundred and forty-nine, while a large number of vessels were sunk or destroyed, their cargoes, at a low estimate, being valued at 31,000,000 dol." —"The American Navy," by Charles Morris, Part i., chap. v., pp. 98, 99.

of the outlet at Cape Fear River was such, that it required watching for a great distance. Without possession of the northern shores and lands at New Inlet or Fort Fisher, it was impossible for the navy entirely to close the harbour against the entrance of blockade-runners.[20] To secure possession of that tract required the co-operation of a land force, which General Grant agreed to furnish. In Hampton Roads, under Admiral David D. Porter a most formidable armada was collected for concentration upon that point. This necessarily attracted the attention of the enemy, as well as that of the loyal North. Through the imprudence of the public press, and very likely of officers in both branches of the service, the exact object of such expedition became a subject of common discussion in the newspapers, both North and South. Thus warned the enemy prepared to meet it. This condition of affairs caused a postponement of the intended expedition, until the latter part of November.[21]

Being again called upon by Hon. Gustavus Vasa Fox[22] Assistant Secretary for the Navy, General Grant agreed to furnish the men required at once, and went himself in company with Major-General Butler to Hampton Roads. There they held a conference with Admiral Porter as to the force required, and on the time for starting. About 6,500 men were regarded as sufficient. A date for starting was not definitely arranged, but it was thought all should be ready at farthest, by the 6th of December. On the 30th of November, learning that Bragg had gone to Georgia, taking with him most of the forces about Wilmington, General Grant deemed it of the utmost importance, that the expedition should reach its destination before his return. Accordingly, the commander-in-chief directed General Butler to make all arrangements by the 5th of December for the departure of Major-General Weitzel,[23] who had been designated to command the land forces, so that the navy might not be needlessly detained. Nevertheless, a series of misunderstandings and oversights occurred, to defeat the object of this expedition.[24] As General Butler commanded the army from which troops were taken for that enterprise, as also that territory within which they were to operate, military courtesy required that all orders and instruc-

[20] The position of the land defences and the sea approaches is set forth in a diagram to be seen in Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xxi., chap. lxxxviii., p. 522.

[21] See an account of these transactions, in "Incidents and Anecdotes of the Civil War," by Admiral David Dixon Porter, published at New York, in 1885, 8vo, and also by the same writer, "History of the Navy in the War of the Rebellion," New York, 1887, 8vo.

[22] Gustavus Vasa Fox was born in Saugus Mass., 13th June 1821, and he served at an early age in the Navy. He was appointed in 1861 Assistant Secretary of the Navy, by President Lincoln. This post he held to the end of the war. His abilities for administration in that Department were soon recognised, and as an able man, he was often consulted on naval expeditions by General Grant. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. ii., pp. 519, 520.

[23] See *ibid.*, Vol. vi., p. 423.

[24] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. x., chap. iii., pp. 59, 60.

tions should go through him, and they were so sent; but, General Weitzel afterwards officially informed General Grant, that he never received the foregoing instructions nor was he aware of their existence, until he read General Butler's published official report of the Fort Fisher failure, with Grant's endorsement and papers accompanying it. The destined fleet was detained several days at Hampton Roads, awaiting the loading of a powder-boat. The importance of getting the Wilmington expedition off without any delay, with or without the powder-boat, had been urged upon General Butler, who now assumed command of the land forces, and he was advised to notify Admiral Porter. The fleet finally sailed on the 13th of December, and arrived at the place of rendezvous off New Inlet, near Fort Fisher, on the evening of the 15th. Admiral Porter reached on the evening of the 18th, having put into Beaufort, to get coal and ammunition.[25] The sea becoming rough, making it difficult to land troops, and the supply of water and coal being nearly exhausted, the transport fleet put back to Beaufort to replenish. This, with the state of the weather, delayed a return to the place of rendezvous until the 24th. Then the powder-boat was exploded; nevertheless, it procured no important result.[26] On the 25th Christmas Day, a landing was effected without opposition, when an outlying earthwork and its garrison were captured by General Weitzel.[27]

Under Brevet Brigadier-General N. M. Curtis, a party of his command had pushed up towards the fort, and these men were hardly molested by the garrison on their approach. Before receiving a full report on the result of this reconnaisance, and in violation of the instructions given, General Butler ordered the re-embarkment of the troops and the return of the expedition, contrary to the opinion of some among the officers, who rather inconsiderately thought that Fort Fisher could be taken without much loss. The re-embarkment followed on the morning of the 27th.[28]

Soon after the return of that expedition, General Grant received a despatch from the Secretary of the Navy, and a letter from Admiral Porter, informing him that the fleet was still off Fort Fisher, and expressing the conviction that under a proper leader the place could be taken. General Grant answered on the 30th December, advising Admiral Porter to hold on, that he would send a force, and make another attempt to take the place. This time he selected Brevet Major-General A. H. Terry to command the expedition. The troops composing it consisted of the same that composed the former, with the addition of a small brigade numbering about 1,500, and a small siege train.[29] He also communicated, January

[25] See David D. Porter's "Naval History of the Civil War," p. 693.

[26] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil Vol. iii., sect. xxi., chap. lxxxviii., p. 523.

[27] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. x., chap. iii., pp. 61, 62.

[28] A detailed account of these transactions, and an ample explanation of the miscalculations and mistakes, with a vindication of his character and services may be found in the "Autobiography and Personal Reminiscences of Major-General Benjamin F. Butler," chap. xvii., xviii., xix., pp. 774-918.

[29] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil

3rd 1865, to the commander of the troops special instructions. Lieutenant-Colonel Cyrus B. Comstock,[30] who accompanied the former expedition, was assigned in orders as chief engineer to this division. The armada sailed from Fort Monroe on the morning of the 6th, and it arrived at the rendezvous off Beaufort on the 8th. Owing to the difficulties of the weather, it lay there until the morning of the 12th, when it got under way, and reached its destination that evening. Under cover of the fleet a disembarkation of the troops commenced on the morning of the 13th, and by 3 o'clock p.m. it was completed without loss. On the 14th a reconnaisance was pushed to within five hundred yards of Fort Fisher, and a small advance work was taken. This was turned into a defensive line against any attempt that might be made from the fort. A reconnaisance disclosed the fact that the works in front had been seriously injured by the navy fire. In the afternoon of the 15th the fort was assaulted. After most desperate fighting it was captured, with its entire garrison and armament.[31]. Thus, by the combined efforts of the navy and army, one of the most important successes of the war was obtained. The Federal loss was 110 killed, and 536 wounded. On the 16th and 17th, the enemy abandoned and blew up Fort Caswell and the works on Smith's Island, which were immediately occupied by the Federals. This gave them entire control over the mouth of Cape Fear River. Soon afterwards, at the request of Lieutenant-General Grant, Major-General B. T. Butler was relieved, and Major-General E. O. C. Ord was assigned to command the Department of Virginia and of North Carolina.[32]

The defence of Federal lines on the Tennessee River no longer required that force, which had beaten and nearly destroyed the only army threatening them. Wherefore General Grant determined to find other fields of operation for General Thomas' surplus troops. On the 7th of January he was directed, if assured of Hood's departure south from Corinth, to send General Schofield and his corps eastwards, with as little delay as possible. This direction was promptly complied with, and the advance of the Twenty-third Corps reached Washington on the 23rd of that same month. Thence it was despatched to Fort Fisher and to New Bern. The State of North Carolina was constituted into a military Department, and General Schofield assigned to its command. The first task required from him was the capture of Wilmington. He was placed under the orders of Major-General Sherman, and his force was destined for co-operation with the southern movement. He was also required to open the route from New Bern to Goldsboro', and to concentrate his army there for any duty required by the exigencies of

War," Vol. iii., sect. xxi., chap. lxxxviii., pp. 523, 524.

[30] He was born in West Wrentham Mass., February 3rd 1831. He served with distinction as engineer during the war. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. i., p. 702.

[31] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," vol. ..., chap. iii., pp. 65 to 67.

[32] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xxi., chap. lxxxviii., pp. 526, 527.

that campaign.[33] General Grant had visited Fort Fisher, accompanied by General Schofield, for the purpose of seeing the condition of things, and of personally conferring with General Terry and Admiral Porter as to what was best to be done. There a plan for the coming attack was devised.

In obedience to General Grant's instructions, Schofield proceeded to reduce Wilmington, North Carolina, in co-operation with the navy under Admiral Porter, by moving his forces consisting of 15,000 men up both sides of the Cape Fear River. Fort Anderson, the enemy's main defence on the west bank of the river, was occupied on the morning of the 19th, the enemy having evacuated it. Some fighting took place between the opposing forces on the 20th and 21st. During the night, however, the enemy retreated towards Goldsboro'. On the morning of the 22nd,[34] the United States troops entered Wilmington.

CHAPTER XLI.

Amendment of the United States Constitution—Decree of Universal Negro Emancipation—Directions of General Grant to draw the distant Armies for Convergence towards Richmond—Capture of Mobile—Sherman's Army moves northwards—General Lee appointed Confederate Generalissimo—Movements of Sheridan—Second Inauguration of President Lincoln—Movements of Stoneman—Conference between Generals Grant and Sherman—Combined Assaults around Petersburg—Its Capture.

A PROPOSAL to amend the Constitution had been previously debated in Congress, and already it passed the Senate, but it failed for lack of the two-thirds vote in the House of Representatives. However in the President's message, presented to Congress on the 6th of December 1864, its consideration was again recommended. The issue was finally decided, by more than the requisite two-thirds vote. Nevertheless, this difficult and complex measure of policy required time for its general adoption. At length, the congressional decree was ratified in succession by the several States, Illinois taking the lead on the 1st of February 1865, the day after the joint resolution had passed the House of Representatives.[1] Moreover, West Virginia was one of the foremost States to de-

[33] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. x., chap. iii., p. 68.

[34] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. v., p. 424.

[1] Next in order followed Rhode Island and Michigan, February 2nd; Maryland, New York, and West Virginia, February 3rd; Maine and Kansas, February 7th; Massachussetts and Pennsylvania, Feb. 8th; Virginia, Feb. 9th; Ohio and Missouri, Feb. 10th; Indiana and Nevada, Feb. 16th; Louisiana, Feb. 17th; Minnesota, Feb. 23rd; Wisconsin, March 1st; Vermont, March 9th; Tennessee, April 7th; Arkansas, April 20th; Connecticut, May 5th; New Hampshire, July 1st; South Carolina, November 13th; Alabama, Dec. 2nd; North Carolina, Dec. 4th; Georgia, Dec. 9th; Oregon,

clare by joint committee of both its legislative Houses, February 3rd, that slavery should be thenceforward abolished within its limits. Another question, which had long divided the opinions and councils of politicians, was at length solved in favour of the coloured race. What had been only commenced in 1864 was completed on the 31st January 1865, when by Act of Congress approved by the President, universal Negro Emancipation had been decreed.[2]

As General Grant desired to bring Sherman's army of 60,000 men to Richmond, the latter General prepared for a march northwards by way of Columbia and Raleigh; but he feigned demonstrations, as if he intended to threaten Charleston, so as to detain there a considerable force of the enemy. Nevertheless, he determined to move through the interior of South Carolina, and towards the uplands at the heads of rivers he was obliged to cross. About the middle of January 1865, he was ready to undertake that expedition. But, floods set in, and the swamps around Savannah became almost impassable. However, the interval was well employed in strengthening its defences, and in directing local matters; when on the 18th, he transferred the command of that city to General Foster, to whom he communicated information regarding his proposed movements.

Having been directed in January 1865, to make preparations for a movement against Mobile, and the interior of Alabama, General Canby mustered a force of about 45,000 men, including 3,000 engineers, artillery and cavalry. The Confederate General Taylor was at Meridan, while General D. H. Maury commanded the garrison at Mobile, numbering 9,000 troops.[3] Their united forces reached 15,000. Admiral Henry K. Thatcher, with his fleet, was to co-operate in that investment designed. Still the city had been strongly fortified on every side, and defended by a net-work of streams, while the water of the bay was so shallow, that ships of heavy draft could not easily come within shelling distance of the fortifications, and everywhere the channel was thickly planted with torpedoes.[4] General Canby commenced his movement on the 20th of March. The Sixteenth Corps 16,000 men, Major-General A. J. Smith commanding, moved from Fort Gaines by water to Fish River; the Thirteenth Corps 13,200 strong, under Major-General Gordon Granger, moved from Fort Morgan, and joined the Sixteenth Corps on Fish River, both marching thence on Spanish Fort and investing it on the 27th;

Dec. 11th; California, Dec. 20th; Florida, Dec. 28th; New Jersey, Jan. 23rd 1866; Iowa, Jan. 24th; and Texas, February, 1870. Without waiting for the ratification by the last six of these States, Mr. Seward proclaimed on the 18th of December 1865 that three-fourths of the thirty-six States then in the Union had adopted the Amendment, which rendered it valid as part of the Constitution of the United States. See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. x., chap. iv., pp. 72 to 90.

[2] See "Histoire de France depuis 1789 jusqu 'a nos Jours," Tome vi., chap. viii., p. 305.

[3] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xxi., chap. lxxxviii., p. 527, and chap. lxxxix., pp. 539 to 541.

[4] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. x., p. 239.

while Major-General Steel's command 13,200 men, moved from Pensacola on the 10th of April, and joined the army before Mobile. Spanish Fort was a system of defences, rather than a single fortification, and it was seven miles east from Mobile. Its works extended two miles in length, and it was garrisoned by 3,000 men. On the 27th of March, it was invested by Smith's corps on the right, and by Granger's on the left. On the 4th of April, a bombardment was opened, but the fort appeared to sustain little damage. However, on the evening of the 8th, General Carr on the extreme right of Canby's line found it possible to gain a commanding crest well covered by pines, when he captured three hundred yards of the Confederate works, fifty guns, and half of one of their brigades. Whereupon, the Confederates evacuated Spanish Fort, on that night, as it was found to be no longer tenable.[5] General Steele had cut the railroad from Tensas to Montgomery. He effected a junction with the forces before Mobile, and partly invested Fort Blakely. This was another strong position on the east bank of the Appalachee, having a garrison of 3,500 men, commanded by General Liddell. However, the works were assaulted with great determination and bravery; while the coloured troops especially distinguished themselves in the attack. Fort Blakely was carried by assault, on the evening of the 9th, and many prisoners were captured; the Federal loss, however, was very considerable, and it was estimated at about 1,000, while that of the Confederates was about one half that number. A great store of guns, small arms and munitions was also taken.[6] Major-General Canby received the surrender of the Confederate Generals, Richard Taylor and E. K. Smith. Thus, on the 12th of April, Mobile was captured.[7]

On the 21st of January, General Grant instructed Sherman, that he had ordered eastwards the Twenty-third Corps Major-General Schofield commanding; that it numbered about 21,000 men; that the Federals had at Fort Fisher about 8,000 men, and at New Bern about 4,000; that if Wilmington were captured, General Schofield would go there; if not, he would be sent to New Bern; that in either event, all the surplus force at both points should move interiorly towards Goldsboro', in co-operation with his own movements; that from either point railroad communication could be run out; and that all those troops should be subject to his orders, as they came into communication.[8] By the 1st of February, General Sherman's whole army was in motion from Savannah. The General directed a flanking movement, which effectively procured the evacuation of Charleston. The chief object of his march, however, was either to cut off Lee's anticipated retreat

[5] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xxi., chap. lxxxviii., pp. 527, 528.

[6] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. x., p. 241.

[7] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. i., p. 707.

[8] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xxi., chap. lxxxviii., p. 529.

or to join Grant before Richmond.[9] Accordingly he moved on to Columbia, the capital of South Carolina, and it was captured on the 17th. Among the important fruits of this campaign was the immediate fall of Charleston. It was evacuated by the enemy on the night of the 17th of February, and it was occupied by the United States forces on the 18th.

On the morning of the 31st of January 1865, General Thomas was directed to send a cavalry expedition under General Stoneman from East Tennessee, to penetrate South Carolina in the direction of Columbia; as also to destroy the railroads and military resources of the country, and to return if he was able, to East Tennessee by way of Salisbury North Carolina, releasing the Federal prisoners of war who were there confined. Regarding the feasibility of this latter attempt, General Stoneman was to judge.[10] He was so late in making a start on that expedition, however, that General Grant directed Thomas to change such a course, and ordered him to repeat his raid of last fall, destroying the railroad towards Lynchburg so far as he could. This move should serve also to keep him between the Federal garrisons in East Tennessee and the enemy. On the 15th General Thomas was directed to start the expedition, so soon after the 20th as he could get it ready.

On the 7th of February, the lines of the Union army at Petersburg were extended to Hatcher's Run. The Weldon railroad had been destroyed to Hicksford.[11] Before a general movement of the armies operating against Richmond was made, General Grant deemed that all communications with the city north of James river should be prevented. Having withdrawn the bulk of his force from the Shenandoah valley, the enemy either sent it south, or replaced with it troops detached from Richmond. Desiring if practicable to reinforce Sherman, whose cavalry was greatly inferior in numbers to that of the enemy, General Grant determined to make a move from the Shenandoah. He therefore telegraphed to General Sheridan on the 20th of February to use his cavalry for a raid in the direction of Lynchburg. There he was directed to destroy the railroad and canal in every direction. If information he might get there should justify it, he was instructed to strike south, heading the streams in Virginia to the westward of Danville, whence he might push on and join General Sherman.[12] On the 25th, General Grant received a despatch from General Sheridan, inquiring where Sherman was aiming for, and if definite information could be given him as to the points he might be expected to move, on that side of Charlotte north from Carolina. Immediately he received a telegram, stating that such information could not be given, but that if he reached Lynchburg, he had

[9] See Chambers's "Encyclopædia, a Dictionary of Universal Knowledge," Vol. ix., Art. William Tecumseh Sherman, p. 395. New Edition, 1892.

[10] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xxi., chap. lxxxviii., p. 530.

[11] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. xviii., p. 434.

[12] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil

discretionary powers to act on whatever advices he might be able to obtain.

Preparations were at once made by Sherman, after the taking of Wilmington, for a movement on Goldsboro', in two columns. One of these marched from Wilmington, and the other from New Bern. Another object in view was to repair the railroad leading thither from each place, as also to supply General Sherman by Cape Fear River towards Fayetteville, if it became necessary. The column from New Bern was attacked on the 8th of March at Wise's Forks, and driven back with a loss of several hundred prisoners. On the 11th, the enemy renewed his attack upon the intrenched position, but he was repulsed with severe loss, and he fell back during the night. On the 14th, the Neuse River was crossed and Kingston was occupied. On the 21st, Goldsboro' was entered. The column from Wilmington reached Cox's Bridge on the Neuse River, ten miles above Goldsboro', on the 22nd.[13]

From the command of the army of Northern Virginia, Lee had been appointed generalissimo of all the Confederate military forces, on the 9th of February. As matters were now becoming hopeless for their cause, and as so many Federal generals were converging on his lines about Richmond, overtures were made by him to General Grant, on the 2nd of March, for a military conference, which might end the calamities of that war. On referring the proposal to Washington, instructions were returned to hold no conference with General Lee, except it were for the capitulation of his army, or on purely military subjects, and not to decide, discuss or confer upon any political question. Wherefore, Grant replied courteously to Lee, declining an interview and on the ground, that authority to act in the matter was vested solely in the President of the United States.[14]

Unencumbered with infantry, General Sheridan moved from Win chester on the 27th of February, with two divisions of cavalry. These numbered about 5,000 each.[15] On the 1st of March, he secured the bridge, which the enemy attempted to destroy, across the middle fork of the Shenandoah at Mount Crawford, He entered Staunton on the 2nd, and the enemy retreated on Waynesboro'. Thither Sheridan followed, and there he found the Confederates very strong in an entrenched position. These were under the orders of General Early. Without stopping to make a reconnaisance, an immediate attack was directed, and the position was carried. Then and there 1,600 prisoners, eleven pieces of artillery, with horses and caissons complete, 200 wagons and teams loaded with subsistence, and 17 battle-flags were captured. To the great mortification of Early,[16] those prisoners and the spoils, under an escort of 1,500 men, were sent back to Winchester. Destroying effectually the railroad and

War," Vol. iii., sect. xxi., chap. lxxxviii., p. 533.

[13] See *ibid.*, chap. lxxxviii., p. 530.

[14] See *ibid.*, chap. xc., pp. 561, 562.

[15] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. ix., chap. xiv., p. 329.

[16] See Early's "Memoir of the Last Year of the War," p. 133.

bridges as he went, Sheridan marched on to Charlottesville. That place he reached on the 3rd. There he remained two days, destroying the railroad toward Richmond and Lynchburg, including the large iron bridges over the north and south forks of the Rivanna River. He then awaited the arrival of his trains.[17] This necessary delay caused him, however, to abandon the idea of capturing Lynchburg. Dividing his force into two columns, early on the 6th, he sent one to Scottsville, whence it marched up the James River Canal to New Market, destroying every lock and in many places the canal banks. There a force was pushed out from the column to Duiguidsville to obtain possession of the bridge across the James River. However, that effort failed as the enemy burned it on his approach. He also burned the bridge across the river at Hardwicksville. The other column moved down the railroad towards Lynchburg, destroying it so far as Amherst Court House. Thence it crossed the country, uniting with the column at New Market. The river being very high, the pontoons of Sheridan did not reach across; and the enemy destroyed the bridges, by which he had hoped to clear the river, to get on the south side railroad about Farmville, and to destroy it so far as Appomatox Court House. Now Sheridan could only return to Winchester or strike for a base at the White House. He chose the latter course. From New Market he took up his line of march, following the canal towards Richmond. He destroyed every lock upon it, and cut the banks wherever practicable. He concentrated his whole force at Columbia, on the 10th. There he rested one day, and sent information of his position and purposes, with a request for supplies to meet him at White House. This message reached General Grant on the night of the 12th. An infantry force was immediately sent to get possession of White House, and supplies were forwarded. Moving from Columbia in a direction to threaten Richmond, and near to Ashland Station, he crossed the Annas. Having destroyed all the bridges and many miles of the railroad, he proceeded down the north bank of the Pamunky, and on the 19th he reached White House.[18]

After the long march by General Sheridan's cavalry over winter roads, it was necessary to rest and refit at that station. A communication from General Grant was sent to General Thomas, dated March 7th 1865, advising to repair the railroad in East Tennessee, and to throw a good force up to Bull's Gap, which should be fortified. If required in the spring, to make a campaign towards Lynchburg or into North Carolina, he was directed to hold himself in readiness. On the 24th of March, General Sheridan moved from White House, crossed the James River at Jones' Landing, and on the 27th he formed there a junction with the army of the Potomac in front of Petersburg.[19] During this

[17] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xxi., chap. lxxxviii., pp. 533, 534.

[18] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iv., Art. *Shenandoah Valley* and *Philip Henry Sheridan*, pp. 487 to 492.

[19] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil

move, General Ord sent forces to cover the crossings of the Chickahominy.

The inauguration of President Lincoln for a second term took place, on the 4th of March, 1865, with the usual ceremonies.[20] Great expectations were then entertained in the Northern States, and the war was fast drawing to a close, as the resources of the South seemed to be well nigh exhausted, and reverses were generally experienced by the Confederate arms on all sides. From Columbia, Sherman moved on Goldsboro' North Carolina, by way of Fayetteville, reaching the latter place on the 11th of March.[21] Thus he came into communication with Generals Schofield and Terry, at Wilmington, and by way of Cape Fear River. He sent them word, that he should feign a demonstration on Raleigh, but that he would march on Goldsboro' which he hoped to reach by the 20th, and he directed them to meet him at that place. On the 15th Sherman resumed his march to Goldsboro'. Slocum's corps met a force of the enemy at Averysboro', under Hardee, and after a severe fight, he defeated and compelled it to retreat. The Federal loss in that engagement was 12 officers and 65 men killed, and 477 wounded. The enemy's loss was much greater, as 108 dead were found on the field.[22] Meanwhile, the remnants of Beauregard's garrison at Columbia had time to move on Raleigh, N.C., where they were joined by Cheatham's force from the West, as also by Hardie's troops and by the garrison of Augusta. The combined forces of the enemy under General Joseph E. Johnston, on the 18th, attacked General Slocum at Bentonville, capturing three guns and driving him back upon the main body. General Slocum led in the advance, and ascertaining that the whole of Johnston's army was at the front, he arranged the troops in a defensive position. He there intrenched himself, and awaited reinforcements which were pushed forward. On the night of the 21st, the enemy retreated to Smithfield, leaving his dead and wounded in the hands of the Federals. From that position he occupied, Sherman continued to march on Goldsboro', which place had been occupied by General Schofield on the 22nd.[23] He crossed the Neuse River ten miles above at Cox's Bridge, where General Terry had got possession, and had thrown a pontoon bridge across. He thus formed a junction with the columns from Wilmington and New Bern.[24]

War," Vol. iii., sect. xxi., chap. lxxviii., p. 534.

[20] At the inauguration of Abraham Lincoln as President, he maintained the lofty honour with homely dignity; but, the Vice-President Andrew Johnston created great scandal, by appearing on that public occasion in a most excited and as was commonly reported intoxicated state. See Joseph Irving's "Annals of our Time," p. 695. New Edition. London, 1875, 8vo.

[21] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. x., chap. xii., p. 233.

[22] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xxi., chap. lxxxix., p. 556.

[23] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. x., chap. xxii., p. 237.

[24] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. ii., sect. xxi., chap. lxxxix., p. 553

By this time, Jefferson Davis had relieved Beauregard from the chief command of those forces operating against Sherman,[25] and he unwillingly re-appointed Johnston to take his place, because General Lee had recommended that course.[26] Before accepting his new grade, however, Johnston had visited Beauregard, to ascertain if he had been consulted on the subject, when the latter expressed his perfect willingness to accept the subordinate commission under such a commander.[27] Accordingly, on the 25th, he assumed the chief direction of the Southern division of the Confederate forces at Charlotte.

On the 20th of March, Stoneman moved from Knoxville towards Lynchburg to intercept the retreat of Lee, should he attempt to escape in that direction. He crossed the Blue Ridge, by way of the Watauga to the Yadkin. Thence he turned sharply to the North, and reached Wytheville without opposition, destroying there a large depot of Confederate supplies.[28] He broke down all the important bridges, thus interrupting railroad communication with Richmond. He pushed on to within a few miles of Lynchburg. Having gone southwards, and unacquainted with the surrender of General Lee on the 12th of April, General Stoneman defeated Pemberton and Gardner. At Salisbury N.C., he defeated a Confederate force. He captured 13 guns and 1,364 prisoners there, and the bridges on all the railroads for many miles around were destroyed. According to orders given, the enormous stores, accumulated with such toil and effort as a reserve stock for Lee's army at that place, were treated in like manner. Afterwards, he returned to Greenville in East Tennessee.[29]

Having got his troops all quietly in camp about Goldsboro', and his preparations for furnishing supplies to them perfected, Sherman visited General Grant at City Point, on the 27th of March. He then stated he would be ready to move as he had previously written, by the 10th of April, his troops fully equipped and rationed for twenty days, if it should become necessary to bring his command to bear against Lee's army, in co-operation with the forces in front of Richmond and Petersburg. He proposed in this movement to threaten Raleigh, and then by turning suddenly towards the right to reach the Roanoke at Gaston or thereabouts, whence he could move on to the Richmond and Danville railroad, striking it in the vicinity of Burkesville, or to join the armies operating against Richmond, just as might be deemed best. He was commissioned to carry into execution such a plan, if he received no further directions. Meantime, General Grant explained to him the movement he had ordered, to commence on the 29th of March. If he should not prove so entirely successful as he hoped, the commander-in-chief purposed

[25] See Alfred Roman's "Military Operations of General Beauregard," Vol. ii., chap. xlv., p. 357.

[26] See Jefferson Davis' "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., Part iv., p. 631.

[27] See General Johnston's "Narrative of Military Operations," pp. 371, 372.

[28] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. x., chap. xii., p. 238.

[29] See Dr. John William Draper's

cutting the cavalry loose, to destroy the Danville and South side railroads, and thus to deprive the enemy of further supplies, as also to prevent the rapid concentration of Lee's and Johnston's armies. On the 30th of March, Sherman returned to Goldsboro', and there he commenced preparing for those pre-arranged movements.[30]

On the 24th of March, General Grant issued instructions for a general movement of the armies operating against Richmond[31] to Major-Generals Meade, Ord and Sheridan. Early on the morning of the 25th, the enemy assaulted the Federal lines in front of the Ninth corps, which held from the Appomatox river towards the left. They carried Fort Steadman, and a part of the line to the right and left of it, established themselves, and turned the guns of the fort against the Federals; but the troops on either flank held their ground, until the reserves were brought up. Then the enemy was driven back with a heavy loss in killed and wounded, 1,900 prisoners being taken. The Federal loss was 68 killed, 337 wounded, and 506 missing. General Meade ordered the other corps to advance, and to feel the Confederates in their respective fronts. Pushing forward they captured and held the enemy's strongly entrenched picket line, in front of the Second and Sixth corps. They also took 834 prisoners. The enemy made desperate attempts to retake that line but without success. The Federal loss in front of these works was 52 killed, 864 wounded, and 207 missing. The enemy's loss in killed and wounded was far greater. With two divisions of the Twenty-fourth corps Major-General Gibbons commanding, and one division of the Twenty-fifth corps under Brigadier-General Birney, with McKenzie's cavalry, Major-General Ord took up his line of march, on the night of March 27th, and in pursuance of instructions given. He reached the position assigned him near Hatcher's Run, on the morning of the 29th. On the 28th, instructions had been issued for General Sheridan's advance.[32]

On the morning of the 29th, that movement commenced. At night the cavalry was at Dinwiddie Court House, and the left of the Federal line extended to the Quaker road, near its intersection with the Boydton plank-road. The position of the troops from left to right was as follows:—Sheridan, Warren, Humphreys, Ord, Wright, Parke.[33] Everything now looked favourable for the defeat of the enemy, and for the capture of Petersburg and Richmond. Having previously informed General Sheridan verbally, not to cut loose for the raid contemplated in his orders until he received further notice from General Grant; on the 29th, Sheridan was directed to push round the enemy if he could and

"History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xxi., chap. lxxxviii., p. 531.

[30] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. x. chapter xii., page 240.

[31] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xxi., chap. xc., p. 564.

[32] See General Grant's "Personal Memoirs," Vol. ii., p. 621.

[33] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xxi., chap. xc., pp. 566 to 568.

to get on his right rear. From the night of the 29th to the morning of the 31st, the rain fell in such torrents as to make it impossible to move a wheeled vehicle, except where corduroy roads were laid in front of them. During the 30th, Sheridan advanced from Dinwiddie Court House towards Five Forks, where he found the enemy in force.[34] General Warren advanced and extended his line across the Boydton plank-road to near the White Oak-road, with a view of getting across the latter; but finding the enemy strong in his front, and extending beyond his left, he was directed to hold on where he was and to fortify. General Humphreys drove the enemy from his front into his main line on the Hatcher, near Burgess Mills. Generals Ord, Wright and Parke made examinations in their fronts, to determine the feasibility of an assault. The two latter reported favourably. Confronting the United States troops, as the enemy did at every point from Richmond to the extreme left, General Grant conceived his lines must be weakly held, and might be penetrated.

The General-in-Chief then determined to reinforce General Sheridan with a corps of infantry, and thus enable him to cut loose and turn the enemy's right flank, and with the other corps to assault the Confederate lines.[35] The result of the previous offensive effort, when he assaulted Fort Steadman, particularly favoured this idea. The enemy's intrenched picket line, captured at that time, threw the lines occupied by the belligerents so close together at some points, that it was but a moment's run from one to the other. At once efforts were made to relieve General Humphrey's corps, and to report to General Sheridan. Nevertheless, the condition of the roads prevented immediate movement. On the morning of the 31st, General Warren reported favourably to getting possession of the White Oak road, and he was so directed. To accomplish this, he moved with one division, instead of with his whole corps. The advanced column was then attacked by the enemy in superior force, and driven back on the second division, before it had time to form. In turn, they were both forced back upon the third division. Then, however the enemy was checked. A division of the Second corps was immediately sent to Warren's support. The enemy was driven back with heavy loss, and possession of the White Oak road was thus gained.[36] With a portion of his cavalry Sheridan advanced, and got possession of the Five Forks. After the affair with the Fifth corps, the Confederates re-inforced their cavalry, defending that point with infantry. They forced him back towards the Dinwiddie Court House. There Sheridan displayed great generalship.[37] Instead of retreating with his whole command on the main army, to tell the story of superior forces encountered, he deployed his cavalry on foot, leaving only mounted men enough to take charge of the horses. This compelled the enemy to deploy

[34] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. x., chap. viii., pp. 168, 169.

[35] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xxi., chap. xc., p. 569.

[36] See *ibid.*, p. 570.

[37] See Chambers's "Encyclopædia, a Dictionary of Universal Knowledge,"

over a vast extent of woods and broken country, and it made his progress slow. At this juncture, Sheridan despatched to General Grant an account of what had taken place, and that he was dropping back slowly on Dinwiddie Court House.[38] General McKenzie's cavalry and one division of the Fifth corps were immediately ordered to his assistance. Soon after receiving a report from General Meade, that Humphreys could hold his position on the Boydton-road, and that the other two divisions of the Fifth corps could go to Sheridan, they were so ordered. Thus the operations of that day necessitated the sending of Warren because of his accessibility, instead of Humphreys as had been intended.[39]

The Fall of Richmond was already imminent, when on the 30th of March the Confederate Congress passed an act which empowered their President to call on each State for her quota of troops, to be raised from such of the population, irrespective of colour, as the proper authorities thereof may determine. The result was without success.[40] On the morning of the 1st of April, reinforced by General Warren, Sheridan drove the enemy back on Five Forks. Late in the evening, he there assaulted and carried that strongly-fortified position. Sheridan captured all the Confederate artillery, taking between 5,000 and 6,000 prisoners, with many colours.[41] Towards the close of this battle, Brevet-Major-General Charles Griffin relieved Major-General Warren in command of the Fifth corps. The report of Sheridan's great victory reached General Grant after nightfall. It was immediately communicated to the army, and the announcement was received with deafening cheers.[42]

General Nelson A. Miles'[43] division of Humphreys' corps was sent to reinforce General Sheridan. A bombardment then commenced, and it was kept up until 4 o'clock in the morning of April 2nd. Then, an assault was ordered on the enemy's lines. General Wright penetrated them with his whole corps, sweeping everything before him, and on to his left towards Hatcher's Run. He captured many guns and several thousand prisoners. Wright was closely followed by two divisions of General Ord's command, until he met the other division, that had succeeded in forcing the enemy's lines near Hatcher's Run. Generals Wright and Ord immediately swung to the right, and closed on the enemy in Petersburg. They left that part of the Confederate force,

Vol. ix., Art. Philip Henry Sheridan, p. 391. New Edition, 1892, sm. fol.

[38] See General Grant's Report.

[39] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xxi., chap. xc., p. 570.

[40] See E. A. Pollard's "Life of Jefferson Davis," p. 456.

[41] See "Personal Memoirs of P. H. Sheridan, General U. S. Army," Vol. ii., chap. vi., p. 165.

[42] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xxi., chap. xc., p. 573.

[43] Born at Wachusettsville Mass., August 8th 1839. He was greatly distinguished throughout this war. See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 727.

which had been severed from the main body, to be disposed of by Sheridan. Meantime, General Humphreys moved forward with two divisions, and joined General Wright on the left. General Parke succeeded in carrying the enemy's main line, capturing guns and prisoners; but he was unable to occupy the inner line. Being advised regarding that condition of affairs, General Sheridan then returned General Miles to his proper command. On reaching the enemy's lines immediately surrounding Petersburg, a portion of General Gibbon's corps by a most gallant charge captured two strongly enclosed works—the most salient and commanding south of Petersburg—thus materially shortening the line of investment necessary for taking possession of that city. The enemy south of Hatcher's Run retreated westward to Sutherland's Station, where he was overtaken by Miles' division. A severe engagement ensued, and lasted until both the right and left flanks of the Confederates were threatened by the approach of General Sheridan, who was moving from Ford's Station towards Petersburg, and by a division sent by General Meade from the front of Petersburg. Then they broke in the utmost confusion, leaving in the hands of the Federals their guns and many prisoners.[44] The remnant of that force afterwards retreated by the main road along the Appomatox River; and immediately, the Federals took possession of Petersburg, which had so long resisted their most strenuous efforts to effect its capture.

CHAPTER XLII.

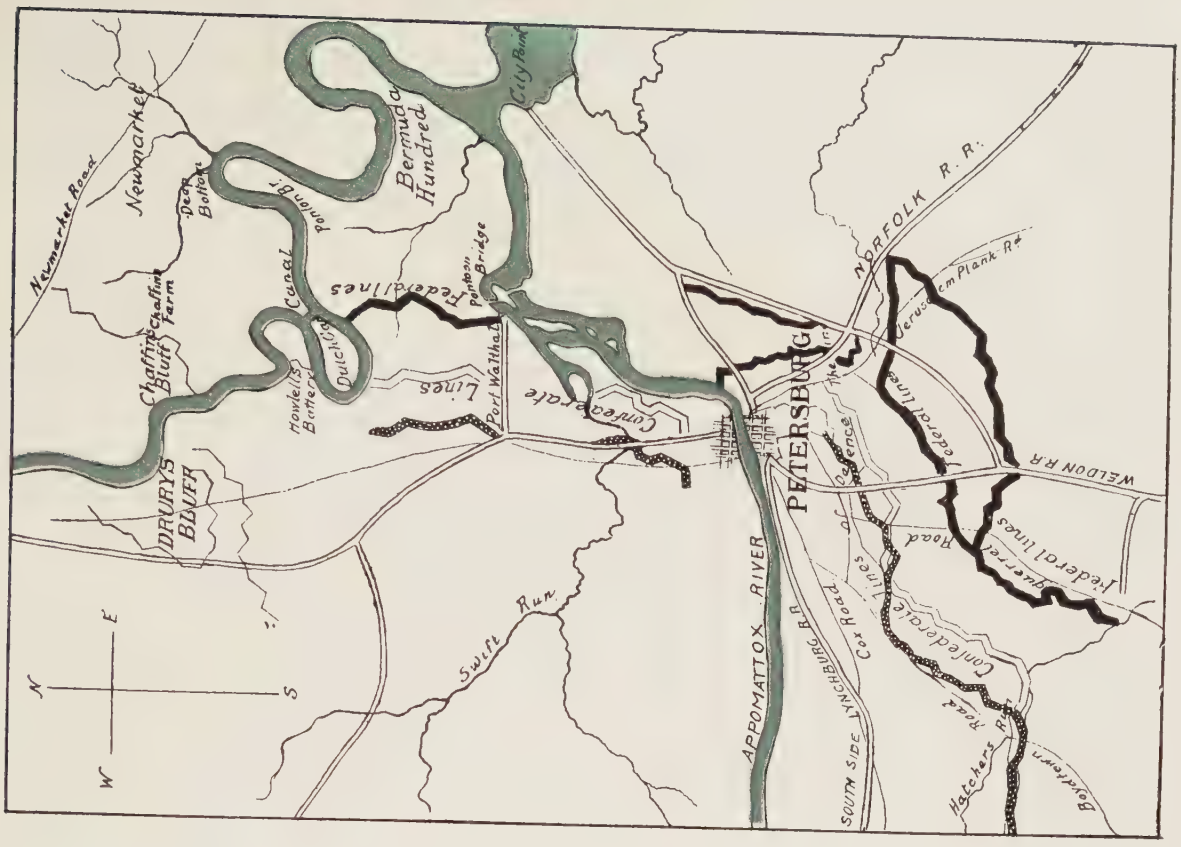
Evacuation of Petersburg and Richmond—Pursuit of Lee's Army by General Grant—Battle at Farmville—Negotiations for Surrender of Lee's Army—Negotiations for Surrender of Johnston's Army—Successful Operations of Brevet Major General James H. Wilson, in the South-west—Various Contingents of Confederates in the South lay down their Arms—End of the War.

THE news of those reverses, speedily conveyed to the head-quarters of the rebel government, caused the greatest consternation; and especially among those officials most active in prosecution of the war. Jefferson Davis and the executive made hasty preparations for flight, even without provision for the more effective withdrawal of that army, which had so bravely fought to sustain their cause. During the night of the 2nd of April, amid the greatest perplexity and confusion, the enemy was obliged to evacuate Petersburg and Richmond. Collecting their scattered forces, the Confederates then retreated towards Danville.[1] Immediately afterwards, the third division of the twenty-fourth Army Corps, under the command of Brigadier General Charles Devens,[2] was the first to enter Richmond.

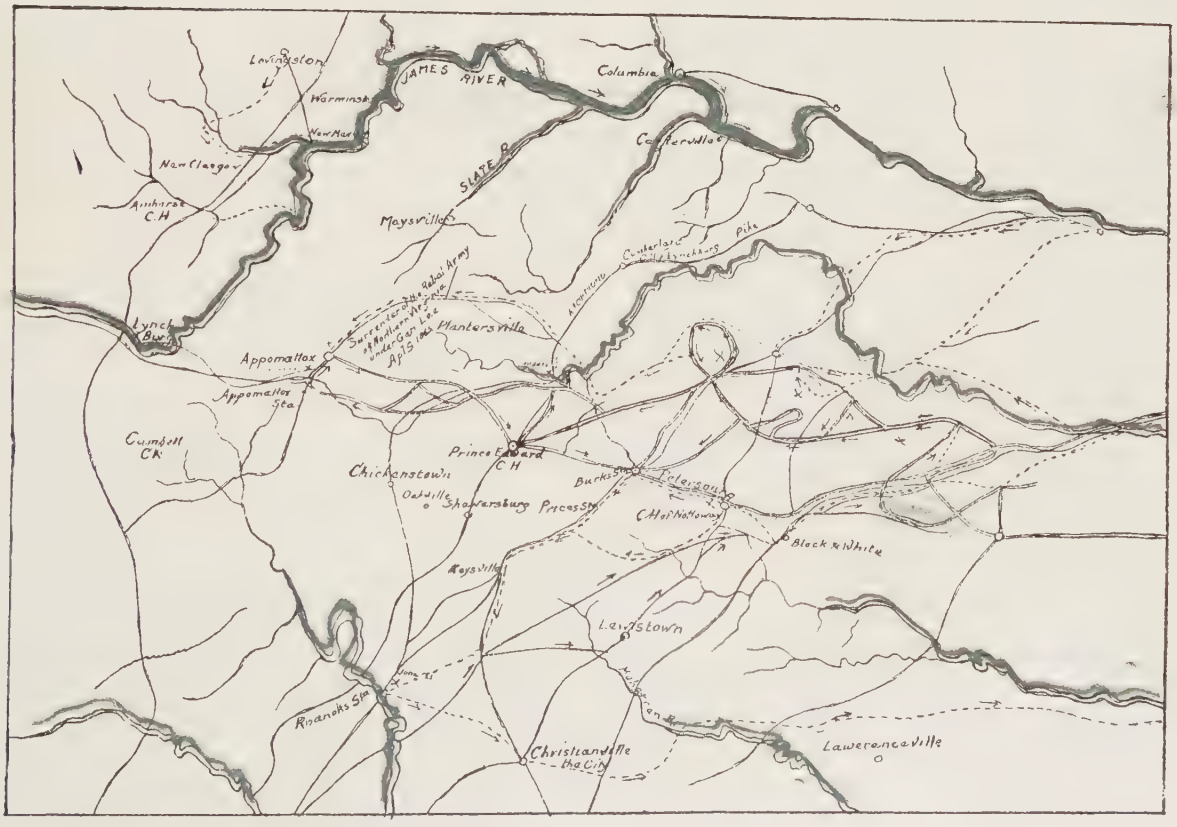
[44] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xxi., chap. xc., p. 574.

[1] See "Personal Memoirs of P. H. Sheridan, General U.S. Army," vol. ii., chap. vii., pp. 171 to 186.

[2] He was born of Irish extraction



DEFENCES OF PETERSBURG.



SCENE OF GENERAL LEE'S SURRENDER.

On the morning of the 3rd a general pursuit commenced, and General Sheridan pushed for the Danville road keeping near the Appomatox. He was followed by General Meade with the Second and Sixth corps, while General Ord moved for Burkesville along the South-side road.[3] The Ninth corps stretched along that road behind him. The object of Lee appears to have been a junction with Johnston. Making all speed in crossing the Appomatox River, he reached Amelia Court House on the 4th, where he ordered supplies to be sent for his army. However he there learned to his dismay, that the train which had brought those provisions had been ordered on to Richmond by the authorities, to carry away Jefferson Davis and his fugitive officials. It had even gone without unloading the subsistence. The Confederate army was obliged to start with rations for only a single day, and the men were now famishing, so that it was absolutely necessary to procure supplies from the surrounding country. Wherefore, they were obliged to halt on the 4th and 5th, while the Federals were fast approaching their position and in great force.

On the 4th, General Sheridan had struck the Danville road near Jettersville. There he learned that Lee was at Amelia Court House. He immediately entrenched himself, and awaited the approach of General Meade who reached on the next day. Moreover, General Ord arrived at Burkesville on the evening of the 5th. Thus was Lee effectually cut off from any reasonable prospect of joining Johnston.

On the morning of the 5th, General Grant addressed a communication to Major General Sherman apprising him of Lee's retreat. Meantime, on the following morning it was found that General Lee was retreating west of Jettersville. He now tried to make his way over the Appomatox River at Farmville, with a view of reaching Lynchburg. Then General Sheridan moved with his cavalry to strike his flank, and he was followed by the Sixth Corps. The Second and Fifth Corps pressed hard after, thus forcing Lee to abandon many hundred waggons and several pieces of artillery. Meanwhile, General Ord advanced from Burkesville towards Farmville, sending two regiments of infantry and a squadron of cavalry under Brevet Brigadier-General Theodore Read, to reach and destroy the bridges. This advance met near Farmville the head of Lee's column which it heroically attacked, notwithstanding the great superiority of his force.[4] In that well-contested engagement with the Con-

in Charlestown, Mass., 1820 He served as a Volunteer in the war. He was greatly distinguished in the battles at Fair Oaks, Antietam, Fredericksburg, and Chancellorville. In the latter battle he was severely wounded.

[3] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," vol. iii., sect. xxi., chap. xc., p. 582.

[4] Brigadier-General Thomas A. Smyth, who commanded the second division of the Second Army Corps before Richmond, fell mortally wounded near Farmville. He was born in Ireland, and he volunteered at the opening of the war in 1861, participating in most of the battles in which the army of the Potomac had been engaged. He died at Petersburg on the 7th April 1865. See "Irish

federates General Read was killed. After a brave resistance his small force was overpowered. However, that action caused a delay in the enemy's movements, and this enabled General Ord to get well up with the remainder of his force. Whereupon the enemy immediately intrenched himself. In the afternoon, General Sheridan struck the enemy south of Sailors' Creek. He captured sixteen pieces of artillery and about 400 waggons. Moreover he detained the Confederates until the Sixth Army Corps came to his support. A general attack of infantry and cavalry followed, which resulted in the capture of 6,000 or 7,000 prisoners, among whom were many general officers.[5] The movements of the Second Corps and of General Ord's command contributed greatly to that day's success.

Thoroughly understanding the hopelessness of further resistance and despairing of success, on the night of the 6th several Confederate generals met round a bivouac fire, and concluded on sending Pendleton to advise Lee, that a capitulation ought to be proposed. Pending such consideration, on the morning of the 7th that pursuit of the Federals was renewed, the cavalry, except one division, and the Fifth Corps moving by Prince Edward's Courthouse; the Sixth Corps, General Ord's command, and one division of cavalry led to Farmville, and the Second Corps went by the High Bridge road. It was soon found, that the enemy had crossed to the north side of the Appomatox, and had burned the railroad bridge. So close was the pursuit, however, that the Second Corps got possession of the common passage at High Bridge before the enemy could destroy it, and immediately that division crossed over the river. The Sixth Corps and a squadron of cavalry also pressed from Farmville to its support.

Four or five miles north of the latter place, Lee took up an intrenched position commanding a slope half a mile in extent, and over which an advance must be made. Without waiting the arrival of sufficient support, General Humphreys now resolved to turn that position. He was repulsed, however, and he lost 600 men in killed and wounded. Feeling that General Lee's chance of escape was utterly hopeless, on the 7th Lieutenant-General Grant addressed him a letter requiring surrender of the army of Northern Virginia, which Lee commanded. Meanwhile he had continued to retreat at nightfall. But no prospect of escape was presented, when Lee replied on the 8th to Grant's communication, asking on condition of its surrender what terms might be expected. On that same day Lieutenant-General Grant replied, that peace being his great desire, there was but one condition he would insist upon, namely: that the men and officers surrendered should be disqualified from taking up arms against the Government of the United States until properly exchanged. He promised to meet General Lee, or to

Celts," by a Member of the Michigan Bar, *sub voce*, Smyth (General Thomas A.)

[5] See "Personal Memoirs of P. H. Sheridan, General U. S. Army," vol. ii., where there is a detailed account of the battle at Sailors' Creek, with a Map of the battle-field, chap. vii., pp. 179 to 186.

designate officers to meet any officers he might name, for the same purpose, and at any point agreeable to him, with the object of arranging definitely those terms upon which a surrender of the Northern Virginia army might be received.

Early on the morning of the 8th the pursuit had been resumed. General Meade followed north of the Appomatox, and general Sheridan with all the cavalry pushed straight for Appomatox Station, followed by General Ord's command and by the Fifth Corps. During that day General Meade's advance had considerable fighting with the enemy's rear-guard, but it was unable to bring on a general engagement. General Sheridan struck the railroad at Appomatox station late in the evening, and drove the enemy thence, thus severing Lee's communication with Danville and intercepting his provision trains.[6] There in the advance Custer arrived at midnight, and attacked the Confederates, taking 25 pieces of artillery, a hospital-train and four trains of cars, loaded with supplies for Lee's army. Then Sheridan was fast coming up, while he sent word to Ord and Griffin to hasten and to prevent the enemy's escape. They accordingly made a forced march, and reached Appomatox station at daylight on the 9th of April. During the day previous, Lieutenant-General Grant had accompanied General Meade's column. About midnight, he received a communication from General Lee proposing to meet him on the old stage road to Richmond the next day, and between the picket lines of both armies.

Early on the morning of the 9th, General Grant returned to answer that however desiring peace, he had no authority to treat on that subject; yet if the south should agree to lay down arms, he had no doubt such an object could be attained. Immediately he started to join the column south of the Appomatox. On that morning, General Ord's command and the Fifth corps reached Appomatox station, just as the enemy under Gordon was making a desperate effort to break through the Federal Cavalry. The infantry was at once thrown in, and it was then found to be irresistible. Soon after a white flag was received, and a message requesting the suspension of hostilities pending negotiations for a surrender. General Robert E. Lee then acknowledged the receipt of General Grant's letter of the same date containing the terms of surrender offered to the army of Northern Virginia, and these were accepted with a promise to designate proper officers to carry them into effect.[7] The last hope of Confederate success had now vanished; and accordingly, leaving Longstreet in charge of his troops, Lee rode forward to Appomatox Courthouse, accompanied by his chief of staff, Colonel Marshall. Accompanied by Ord, Sheridan and their staffs, Grant and two of his aids entered a square building of brick, where Lee awaited their arrival. There they had a conference and General Grant wrote the terms he required: viz., rolls of all the officers and men to be

[6] See John R. G. Hassard's "History of the United States of America," chap. lvi., p 367.

[7] See "Personal Memoirs of P. H. Sheridan, General U. S. Army," vol. ii., chap. viii., pp. 187 to 204.

made in duplicate; the officers to give their individual paroles not to take up arms against the United States until properly exchanged; each regimental or company commander was to sign a like parole for his men; the arms, artillery and public property to be stacked, excepting the side-arms of their officers, the private horses and baggage; these conditions complied with, each officer and man should be permitted to return home, nor should they be disturbed by the United States authorities so long as their paroles were preserved, and those laws were in force wherever they resided. Moreover, the command of Major-General Gibbons, the Fifth Army Corps under Major-General Charles Griffin,[8] and McKenzie's cavalry, were designated to remain at Appomatox Courthouse until the paroling of the surrendered army was completed, and to take charge of the public property. The remainder of the army immediately returned to the vicinity of Burkesville.

General Lee's great influence throughout the whole South caused his example to be generally followed, when his surrender was certainly known. Already it had been understood, at a conference held on the 27th of March[9] between the President Abraham Lincoln, General Grant, Admiral Porter and General Sherman, that the President had authorised the latter to get the surrender of Johnston on any terms, as his great object was to have peace.[10] On the receipt of Lieutenant-General Grant's letter of April 5th, and on the morning of the 10th, General Sherman moved directly against General Johnston then at Smithfield, and who afterwards retreated rapidly—having burned his bridges—on and through Raleigh. While these were repairing, the news of General Lee's surrender reached Sherman on the 12th, and it was immediately communicated to the troops, who received it with wild rejoicing.[11] Even the inhabitants of the country, wearied with their long privations during the war, no longer concealed their desires for peace and shared in the general joy. However, General Sherman still feared that his opponent Johnston would continue his flight southwards, and disperse his forces into guerrilla bands that could not be followed, and that a partisan warfare might thus be indefinitely continued.[12]

General Sherman occupied Raleigh on the morning of the 13th. A correspondence had been opened between him and General Johnston, on the 11th; and on the 13th, the latter had written a communication which reached Sherman at Raleigh, and which contained overtures for a temporary suspension of active hostilities, the object being to permit

[8] He was of Irish descent, and born in Ohio, 1826. He served first in the war with Mexico in 1847. Afterwards in the Confederate Rebellion, he won distinction in the great battles at Antietam, Fredericksburg and Gettysburg; as also in all the engagements from the Wilderness to Five Forks. On this occasion, he received the arms and colours of the Northern Virginia Army. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," vol. ii., pp. 763, 764.

[9] It took place in the upper saloon of the steamer "City Queen," then lying in the James River.

[10] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xxi., chap. xcii., pp. 598, 599.

[11] See Cox's "March to the Sea," p. 213.

[12] Sherman's "Memoirs," Vol. ii. p. 344.

the "civil authorities to enter into the needful arrangements to terminate the existing war."[13] This despatch had been dictated by Jefferson Davis, who had then reached Greensboro', on his flight southwards. However inadmissible, and even offensive, such propositions were; yet anxious for peace, and incapable of discourtesy to a brave enemy, Sherman took no exception to such presumptuous language but returned for answer that he was fully empowered to arrange terms for a suspension of hostilities, and willing to confer with Johnston on the subject, while asking him to stay in his present position pending negotiations.[14] This letter was received on the 16th, and the Confederate general hurried on to Greensboro' to see Jefferson Davis, the real principal in such diplomacy; but finding he had left for Charlotte, Johnston arranged a meeting for noon the next day.

On the 18th, an agreement was come to, as Sherman had consulted all his general officers, and they had warmly shared his own prepossessions for a suspension of hostilities. Not being aware of those Governmental restrictions imposed on General Grant, respecting measures of civil jurisdiction, a memorandum or basis for peace was imprudently agreed to, and it was signed by both generals. Nevertheless it was subject to the President's approval. On that very morning, news had arrived of Lincoln's tragic death. For this calamity Johnston expressed his unfeigned sorrow, and he declared that it smote the South as deeply as it did the North. However, most astutely John C. Breckinridge and John H. Reagan[15] had prepared a written scheme of capitulation very extravagant in its demands. This was read by Johnston. Whereupon Sherman took his pen, and unwittingly wrote out conditions, in which were supposed the existence of civil powers on both sides to ratify terms; but these were certain to compromise all future relations of the several States with the National Government.[16]

Notwithstanding the fatality of President Lincoln's death, it was known that powers under the Constitution of the United States had provided for an immediate successor in the person of the Vice-President Andrew Johnson. When the text of Sherman's agreement arrived in Washington, it was at once seen to be a Treaty of Peace wholly inadmissible. It was disapproved by the President and his Cabinet on the 21st, when Lieutenant-General Grant was ordered to proceed and to direct operations against the enemy from General Sherman's head-

[13] See General Johnston's "Narrative of Military Operations," p. 400.

[14] See General Sherman's "Memoirs," Vol. ii., p. 347.

[15] He was born in Tennessee of Irish parentage, October 18th, 1818. His great grandfather, an Irishman by birth, was a soldier of the Pennsylvania line during the Revolution. He was dangerously wounded at the battle of Brandywine, and he participated in other battles during that war. He afterwards lived to a good old age, and died in East Tennessee. John H. Reagan was a prominent politician, and he was appointed Postmaster-General of the Southern Confederacy. See "Irish Celts," Art. Regan, (John H.)

[16] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. x., chap. xii., pp. 244 to 248.

quarters. Moreover, in terms of the sharpest censure, Mr. Stanton had printed in the public newspapers those reasons given by the Government for their disapproval. Besides, General Grant was ordered to give General Sherman notice of such resolution, and to resume hostilities against the enemy. Accordingly, that message was brought to him, then at Raleigh, on the morning of the 24th. With prompt obedience, although his personal susceptibilities were greatly wounded by the ungracious manner of his own treatment, Sherman sent word to Johnston that surrender of his immediate command was required on the Appomatox terms, pure and simple, and giving forty-eight hours' notice for the termination of their truce. Meantime, thinking the war was then virtually over, General Johnston had drawn from the Treasury agent in his camp 39,000 dollars in silver, which he distributed among the troops, not being able to hold the remainder longer under his command, when 8,000 left him and went to their respective homes.[17] He communicated to Davis the failure of his negotiations, and asked for further instructions. The Confederate President suggested, that he should disband the infantry, directing them to meet at some place indicated, as also to escape with the cavalry and light guns. At once General Johnston told General Breckinridge very plainly, that such a plan only contemplated the safety of high civil functionaries, without making provision for the safety of the people and the soldiers. He stated moreover that the generals believed their troops would not fight again, and he counselled the immediate flight of Jefferson Davis. Accordingly, he deliberately assumed the responsibility for ending the strife.[18] On the 25th, another meeting between Sherman and Johnston was arranged to take place, and on the following day at Bennett's House, near Durham Station, North Carolina. Although in Raleigh, General Grant declined to intervene personally in that negotiation. However as agreed to the meeting was held. This terminated in the surrender and disbandment of Johnston's army, upon substantially the same terms as those given to General Lee. It was endorsed by General Grant, on that same day; and soon afterwards he returned to Washington.[19]

Meanwhile, the expedition under command of Brevet Major-General James H. Wilson, consisting of twelve thousand five hundred mounted men, had been designed to destroy the Confederate military resources of Alabama, and to aid in the movements that Canby was then making against Mobile. At this time an infantry corps of about five thousand men and a cavalry force of seven thousand under Forrest were at Meridian, General Taylor being chief in command. Wilson was stationed at Eastport Miss., at the head of steamboat navigation, on the lower Tennessee. On the 23rd of February, General Thomas went thither to give him final instructions. Delayed owing to the condition of the roads, Wilson was

[17] See General Johnston's "Narrative of Military Operations, directed during the late war between the States," p. 410.

[18] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. x., chap. xii., pp. 251, 252.

[19] See Dr. John William Draper's

prevented by the rains until March 22nd. Then his troops with limited rations, and intending as much as possible to live off the country, moved in a general course south-east from Chickasaw Ala. On the 30th, he detached a brigade to Tuscaloosa to burn the public stores and bridges. It was then ordered to rejoin the main body near Selma; and on the 31st, near Montevallo, with the remainder of his force Wilson destroyed several iron works. On the 1st of April, the Federal leader encountered the enemy in force under Forrest near Ebenezer Church, and drove him in confusion through Plantersville. Three hundred prisoners and three guns were captured, when the central bridge over the Cahawba River was destroyed. On the 2nd, he attacked and captured the fortified city of Selma Ga.,[20] defended by Forrest with seven thousand men and thirty-two guns. He also destroyed the arsenal, armoury, naval foundry, machine shops and vast quantities of stores. He captured one hundred and fifty officers, and two thousand seven hundred other prisoners.[21] On the 4th, he captured and destroyed Tuscaloosa. On the 10th, he constructed a bridge and then crossed the Alabama River. After sending information of his operations to General Canby, he marched on Montgomery, the original seat of the Confederate Government. This place he occupied on the 14th,[22] the enemy having abandoned it. At that city, several locomotives and foundries, an armoury, with many stores and five steam-boats, fell into the hands of the Federals. A force marched thence and into Georgia direct to Columbus, while another moved on West Point. Both of these places were assaulted and captured on the 16th. At the former place, the Federals took fifteen hundred prisoners and fifty-two field guns. They destroyed two gun-boats, the navy-yard, foundries, arsenal, many factories and other public property.[23] At the latter place, they captured three hundred prisoners and four guns, while destroying nineteen locomotives and three hundred cars. On the 20th,[24] Wilson took possession of Macon, with sixty field guns, twelve hundred militia and five Generals, surrendered by General Howell Cobb. These successes practically opened to the United States troops the Alabama River, and enabled them to approach Mobile from the north. On the night of the 11th of May the city of Mobile was evacuated, and it was occupied by the Federal forces on the next morning. On the 14th day of May, General Richard Taylor surrendered to General Canby all the remaining rebel forces east

"History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xxi., chap. xcii., pp. 611, 612.

[20] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. vi., p. 552.

[21] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xxi., chap. lxxxviii., pp. 531, 532.

[22] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. vi., p. 552.

[23] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xxi., chap. lxxxviii., p. 533.

[24] This was the date of Wilson's appointment as Major-General of Volunteers, and as a reward for his previous distinguished military services. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia

of the Mississippi.[25] Under the terms of surrender made by General Richard Taylor to General S. Canby, General D. H. Maury and his forces at Mobile were paroled prisoners of war.[26]

The last conflict of that momentous Civil War occurred on the 13th of May, at Brazos Santiago on the Rio Grande. A small expedition had set out to surprise a Confederate camp, and in this attempt it was successful. However on returning, it was overtaken by a large force, and defeated with a loss of eighty men.

Soon after the surrender of Lee and Johnston in the East, Major-General Sheridan was placed in command of the military division at the Gulf.[27] He started by way of St. Louis to New Orleans, and soon had the Fourth and Twenty-fifth Army Corps placed under his command.[28] A force, sufficient to insure an easy triumph over the enemy under Kirby Smith west of the Mississippi, had been put in motion for Texas. However on the 26th day of May, and before the Federals could reach their destination, Smith surrendered his entire command to Major-General Canby. This surrender ended all military opposition to the Government.[29] Nevertheless, bad faith was exhibited in that transaction, by Kirby Smith first disbanding most of his army, and by permitting an indiscriminate plunder of public property. Many of those lately in arms against the Government had taken refuge upon the soil of Mexico, and carrying with them arms rightly belonging to the United States. Those arms had been previously given up by agreement. Among the refugees, moreover, were some of the leaders, who had surrendered in person.

The disturbed condition of affairs on the Rio Grande, caused orders for troops in Texas to continue unchanged. Complications of a hostile attitude towards France were then anticipated. Hood had been instructed to bring a new army from that State, to save the Confederate cause; but on his way, he heard of Lee's surrender. For many days, he tried to cross the Mississippi several times, while pursued by Federal cavalry. At last making a virtue of necessity, he surrendered to General John W. Davidson at Natchez, on the 31st of May.[30]

It has been unofficially stated, that in the Federal armies alone, more than one hundred and seventy-five thousand Irish troops,[31] in

of American Biography," Vol. vi., p. 552.

[25] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xxi., chap. xcii., p. 618.

[26] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. iv., p. 266

[27] See Chambers' "Encyclopædia, a Dictionary of Universal Knowledge," Vol. ix., Art. *Sheridan, (Philip Henry)*, p. 391, New Edition, 1892.

[28] See "Personal Memoirs of P. H. Sheridan," Vol. ii., chap. ix., pp 210 to 213.

[29] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sec. 21, chap. xcii., pp. 618, 619.

[30] See Hood's "Advance and Retreat," p. 311.

[31] In Fox's "History of Regimental Loss," it is recorded that 150,000 men born in Ireland fought on the Northern side alone. There is, however, in the Medical Statistics of the Provost Marshal General's Bureau

their distinctive national regiments or amalgamated with various commands, were scattered over the wide regions in which revolt had raised its flag. There were also large numbers enrolled on the Confederate side.[32] But the vast majority of Irish were arrayed, to fight the battles of freedom and the Union.

CHAPTER XLIII.

Assassination of President Lincoln—Fate of the Conspirators—Capture of Jefferson Davis—His Imprisonment and subsequent Release—Re-construction of the Southern States—The United States demand the French Evacuation of Mexico—Demands on the English Government for Compensation—Purchase of the North-Western Territory of Alaska from Russia—Indian Disturbances beyond the Mississippi.

WITH the virtual close of that gigantic domestic struggle, the career of President Lincoln also terminated. Long before this period, his enemies had employed menaces of which his friends gave him warning, in many instances; but being constitutionally brave, he gave little heed to information of that sort.[1] However, a murderous spirit was abroad; and especially after the re-election of Mr. Lincoln, a project of assassination, that had been entertained during the autumn and winter of 1864, at length ripened into action in the spring of the following year.

The chief director of this infamous plot was an actor, named John Wilkes Booth.[2] He had visited Canada and he consorted with rebel

at Washington, a table, which gives the best existing basis for a true estimate of the number of soldiers of different nationalities who served in the Union armies during the rebellion. It shows the order of superiority in stature of 501,080 men, of different nativities. Ireland's proportion in that number was 50,537, or a fraction over ten per cent. Taking these half million men—who were actually measured and examined—as a basis of calculation, we find that Ireland's contribution to the Northern army as 79,975, or 10·8 per cent. of the aggregate enlistments—2,778,304.

[32] These fought bravely, likewise, and under a belief, that the Southern Rebellion was for the maintenance of supposed State Rights and for an assumed justifiable cause. The interests and sophistry of politicians had greatly obscured the issue, and nearly all were enrolled under compulsion.

[1] In December, 1864, soon after his second re-election, an advertisement had appeared in a paper of Selma Ala., opening a subscription for funds to effect the assassination of Lincoln, Seward and Johnson before the coming inauguration. Even one Lieutenant W. Alston directed a letter to Jefferson Davis offering to "rid his country of some of her deadliest enemies by striking at the hearts' blood of those who seek to enchain her in slavery." The original of this is on a file in the office of the Judge Advocate-General at Washington. This shameless proposal was referred to the Secretary of War, by Davis's direction; and by Judge Campbell, Assistant Secretary for War it was sent to the Confederate Adjutant-General, indorsed "for attention." See Ben. Pitman's "Assassination of President Lincoln, and the Trial of the Conspirators," &c., pp. 51, 52. Cincinnati and New York, 1865, 8vo.

[2] See Pierre Larousse's "Grand Dictionnaire Universal du XIX Siecle," tome ii., Art. *Booth* (John Wilkes), p. 990.

emissaries there, at first conceiving the fantastic idea to capture the President and then take him to Richmond. Nothing occurred until the 4th of March, when Booth created a disturbance, by seeking to force his way through a line of policemen who were guarding the passage, but he did not succeed in that effort.[3] However, certain persons had engaged in a wicked conspiracy with him to murder the President, and also the Secretary of State Mr. Seward. Those were named Lewis Thornton Powell, alias Payne, a disbanded rebel soldier from Florida; George Atzerodt, formerly a coachmaker, but more recently a spy and a blockade runner of the Potomac; David E. Herold, a druggist's young clerk; Samuel Arnold and Michael O'Loughlin, Maryland Secessionists as also Confederate soldiers, and John Surratt. These were accustomed to assemble in Washington, at the small boarding-house of Mrs. Mary E. Surratt, the widowed mother of the last named, who owned a tavern at Surrattsville Maryland; but it was then managed by a man named Lloyd. There a quantity of ropes, carbines, ammunition and whiskey was kept, to be used for the abduction scheme. However, after the surrender of Lee, the design was changed to that of assassination. On the 11th of April, Mrs. Surratt, who seems to have been an active agent in the business, called at Lloyd's tavern, and told him to have the shooting irons in readiness. About the same time, Payne had been sent on horseback to the residence of Mr. Seward on Lafayette Square in Washington, as he was then confined to his chamber, owing to the fact, that a few days previously he had been thrown from his carriage, when his right arm and jaw were fractured. The intention was also to procure his assassination.

The 14th of April, which happened to be Good Friday, had been fixed by Booth to put his design into execution.[4] It was only on the noon of that day, he learned the President was announced in the newspapers to be present that very evening at Ford's Theatre, in order to gratify the officers and soldiers then thronging Washington. The day was one devoted to National rejoicing and thanksgiving. Meanwhile, preparations were made in feverish haste by the leading assassin, and Mrs. Surratt was despatched again to Lloyd's tavern to tell the keeper, the arms should probably be called for that very night. At a livery stable, Booth had hired a small fleet horse, which he left in charge of a boy at the back of the theatre. According to his intentions, the President and his wife, accompanied by two other friends Major Henry R. Rathbone and Miss Harris,[5] had gone to the theatre to witness a dramatic performance. Then Booth who was well acquainted with the fact, and who had a perfect knowledge of all the interior arrangements, watched his opportunity to approach that box occupied by the Presi

[3] See Pitman, "Assassination of President Lincoln," &c., p. 45.

[4] The details of this plot and the subsequent assassination are very lucidly set forth in Pierre Larousse's "Grand Dictionnaire Universal du XIX Siécle," Tome ii., *Art. Booth* (John Wilkes), pp. 990, 991.

[5] The step-son and daughter of Senator Ira Harris.

dential party. He showed a card to the attendant servant in the passage near the dress circle, and he was allowed to pass within; when noiselessly he opened the door, while the occupants of the box had their eyes fixed on the stage. Holding a pistol in one hand, and a knife in the other, he put the pistol to the President's head and fired; then dropping that weapon, he took the knife in his right hand, and when Major Rathbone sprang up to seize him, Booth inflicted a wide and deep wound on his left arm. Then vaulting lightly over the railing of the box, he landed on the stage, his spur catching however in the folds of the Union flag, with which the front of the compartment had been draped.[6] In executing that act, his leg had been broken; nevertheless, instantly rising he turned to the stupified audience, brandishing his dripping knife and shouting, "Sic semper Tyrannis."[7] He then fled rapidly across the stage, and he was soon out of sight behind the scenes. Great uproar and consternation ran through the building, when the cry went forth, "He has shot the President." Pursuit was attempted by some men, who had sprung on to the stage; but leaping speedily on his horse at the back door, Booth rode swiftly away in the light of the moon just risen, soon after ten o'clock.

The moment that shot had been fired, the President's head drooped forward slightly, and his eyes closed. Soon two army surgeons entered the box, and after a hasty examination of the wound, it was pronounced to be mortal. He was carried at once to a house across the street, and just opposite the the theatre.[8] From the first moment he seemed to have been unconscious; but, automatic moaning and difficult respiration continued throughout that night. Towards morning his pulse began to fail. Next day, the President died of his wound, at twenty-two minutes after seven a.m. Several of the great State officials were present, with many other friends. After death, a serene expression came over Abraham Lincoln's care-worn features, his grand career having thus come to a final close.[9]

About the same time when President Lincoln had been shot by Booth, Powell or Payne a man of powerful physique attempted the life of Mr. Secretary Seward, by endeavouring to force his way into the house, notwithstanding the resistance of his sons and other inmates. Nevertheless, he succeeded in reaching the Secretary's room, and inflicting three terrible wounds on his cheek and neck. Then the

[6] An accurate engraving of the stage and proscenium boxes in Ford's Theatre, as they appeared on the night of President Lincoln's assassination, as also a diagram of the house in which he died, are to be found in "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. x., chap. xiv., pp. 296, 297, 300.

[7] This was the State motto of Virginia.

[8] The foregoing particulars are more minutely recorded in Henry Jarvis Raymond's "Life and Public Services of Abraham Lincoln," 1865, 8vo.

[9] "La fin tragique de ce grand homme de bien, à qui revient l'honneur d'avoir aboli dàns son pays la plus monstreuse des iniquites sociales, l'esclavage, ne causa pas seulement d' unanimes regrets aux Etats-Unis; elle produisit une sensation ènorme en Europe."—Pierre Larousse's "Grand Dictionnaire Universel du XIX. Siècle, tome xii., Art. *Lincoln* (Abraham), p. 532.

would-be assassin fought his way out, against the efforts of four men,[10] all of whom he severely wounded. He reached the door unhurt, leaped on his horse, and rode leisurely away towards the eastern suburb of the city.[11]

The assassin Booth was pursued, but for several days he eluded capture, finding many sympathisers, who aided in screening him from justice.[12] However on the night of April 25th, Lieutenant E. P. Doherty[13] was guided by a disbanded Confederate soldier to the farm of a man named Garrett, where Booth and Herold were concealed. The capturing party tracked both to that barn, in which they sought shelter. When called upon to surrender Booth refused; but when Doherty threatened he would fire the barn, Herold came out and yielded. The barn was at length fired, and while it was burning Booth was shot in the neck, by a soldier who was present. He lingered about three hours in great pain, being conscious; but he was rendered nearly inarticulate. He died at seven o'clock the following morning.

By a military tribunal, in the months of May and June Booth's four chief confederates, who had been captured, were brought to trial in Washington. These were Herold, Atzerott, Payne, and Mrs. Surratt, charged with being "incited and encouraged" to treason and murder by Jefferson Davis and the Confederate emissaries in Canada.[14] This

[10] Two of these were Colonel Augustus and Frederick Seward, sons of the Secretary. Payne had left behind him a blood-stained knife and revolver—which he had beaten almost to pieces over the head of Frederick Seward—besides his hat, which fell off during his flight.

[11] For two days, he hid in the woods east of Washington. Then driven by hunger, he abandoned his horse and returned to Mrs. Surratt's house about midnight, when he knocked at the door. At that moment the house was in occupation of the officers, who had arrested all the inmates, and were about to take them to the office of the Provost-Marshall. He was also arrested. See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. x., chap. xv., pp. 303 to 306.

[12] Booth and Herold came at midnight to Mrs. Surratt's tavern, where they informed Lloyd about the President's murder. The excruciating pain of Booth's broken leg caused him to push on to the house of a reoel sympathizer, a surgeon named Samuel Mudd. He received them kindly, set Booth's leg, and gave him a room, where he rested until the afternoon. After parting with Mudd, they went to the residence of Samauel Cox, near Port Tobacco, and thence to that of Thomas Jones, who hid them near his house for a week, waiting for an opportunity to ferry them over the Potomac to the Virginian side. They succeeded in reaching the Rappahannock, and thence made their way to Port Royal.

[13] As indicated by the name, he was an Irishman.

[14] The evidence bearing on this case showed frequent communication between Canada and Richmond, and the Booth coterie in Washington, besides some tranactions in drafts at the Montreal Bank, where Jacob Thompson and Booth kept their accounts. Moreover, it was shown on the sworn testimony of a reputable witness, Lewis F. Bates, that on hearing of the assassination at Greensboro', Jefferson Davis expressed his gratification at the news. See "Pitman's Assassination of President Lincoln," &c., p. 46.

latter accusation was not clearly proved on the trial ;[15] but, other facts of complicity in the President's murder came out upon undoubted evidence.[16] All the four previously mentioned conspirators were condemned to be hanged on the 7th July, which sentence was duly carried into execution. That atrocious deed of violence spread horror and indignation, not only in Washington City, but generally throughout the whole Union. Even the Southern people shared to a certain degree, in lamentations over Lincoln's death ; for they knew his moderation and his earnest desire to gain them back to a sense of their duty, through forgiveness and conciliation.[17]

In the ordinary constitutional course, Andrew Johnson succeeded Abraham Lincoln as President of the United States, and the oath of office was administered to him on the 15th of April by Chief Justice Chase. The extreme Radicals in Congress had hoped from the new President a line of policy less conciliatory to the South than that pursued by Mr. Lincoln ;[18] but before a few months had passed away they were undeceived, and they soon learned, that violence of declarations was no guarantee for political consistency.

Already without arrest, Jefferson Davis had made his way into Georgia, notwithstanding a large reward offered for his apprehension, and as a reputed accomplice in the murder of President Lincoln. Hearing that Davis was trying to make his escape, General Wilson had sent two expeditions in pursuit from Macon—one to scour the left, and the other the right bank of the Ocmulgee River. One of the bands was directed by Lieutenant-Colonel Henry Harnden of the First Wisconsin Cavalry, and the other under Lieutenant-Colonel B. D. Pritchard commanding the Fourth Michigan Cavalry.[19] About midnight on May 7th, a negro came into the camp of Colonel Harnden at Dublin, in that State, with information about a party having eight wagons and passing by that town during the day. He had heard one of the gentlemen spoken of as President Davis, who was mounted on a fine bay horse, and a lady present was called Mrs. Davis ; while he stated, that the former had not crossed the river at the regular ferry with the rest of the party, but had gone about three miles lower down

[15] The charge objected to himself has been denied by Jefferson Davis ; but he admits, that some of his soldiers cheered on hearing of Lincoln's death. See "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., part iv., chap. liv., p. 683.

[16] Another of their active accomplices was John H. Surratt who escaped to Canada, and who was afterwards tracked to Egypt, where he was detected and brought back to Washington in 1867. Placed on trial for his life, it ended in a disagreement of the jury. Mudd, Arnold, and O'Loughlin were condemned to imprisonment for life at the Tortugas, although the term was subsequently shortened ; Spangler the scene-shifter at the theatre, was charged as an accomplice, and sentenced to six years in jail.

[17] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. x., chap. xvi., p. 315.

[18] See George W. Julian's "Political Recollections, 1842 to 1872," p. 255. Chicago, 1833, 12mo.

[19] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. x., chap. xiii., p. 269.

where he passed over in a small flat-boat, rejoining those with the wagons near the outskirts of that town. Thence all went together towards the south.[20]

At once Colonel Harnden set out in pursuit, but rain began to fall heavily, so that the tracks of the wagon wheels were soon obliterated in the sandy soil and among the desolate cypress swamps. The pursuing cavalry waded through water, sometimes up to the saddle-girths, and bivouacked on the borders of Gum Swamp, after a ride of forty miles that day, and through an almost trackless forest. Before daylight on the 9th their pursuit was resumed. In the afternoon, they met with another pursuing party under Colonel Pritchard, to whom the information already gained was given.[21] Accordingly the two detachments resolved to march on Irwinville, by different routes.

At 2 o'clock a.m. on the 10th of May, Prichard was the first to come within half a mile of the fugitives' encampment. It was found to have been pitched on both sides of the road; on the left hand were wagons, horses, tents and men, while on the right were two wall-tents fronting the road, but no guards were to be seen. Soon an order was given to move on stealthily and without noise to surprise the camp. Almost immediately, however, a sharp firing was heard. It turned out to be an accidental collision with the other cavalry party. Mistaking each other for opponents in the dark, an encounter took place during which unfortunately two men were killed and several wounded, before the exact state of affairs had been discovered. Meantime this incident had aroused the occupants of the tents from sleep,[22] just as the captors

[20] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii. sect. xxi. chap. xciiii., pp. 622, 623.

[21] "The fugitives' camp was in the dense pine woods a mile and a half north of Irwinville."—"Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. x., chap. xiii., p. 269.

[22] One of Davis's personal staff, Lieutenant Stuart, thus relates the incidents of his capture: "When the musketry firing was heard at dim grey dawn, it was supposed to be between (some) marauders and Mr. Davis's few camp defenders. Under this impression, Mr. Davis hurriedly put on his boots, and prepared to go out for the purpose of interposing saying, 'They will, at least as yet respect me.' As he got to the door, thus hastily equipped, and with this good intention of preventing an effusion of blood by an appeal, in the name of a fading but not wholly faded authority, he saw a few cavalry ride up the road and deploy in front. 'Ha, Federals!' was his exclamation 'Then you are captured,' cried Mrs. Davis with emotion. In a moment she caught an idea—a woman's idea—and as quickly as women execute their designs it was done. He slept in a wrapper—a loose one. It was yet around him. This she fastened ere he was aware of it, and then, bidding him adieu, urged him to go to the spring, a short distance off, where his horses and arms were. Strange as it may appear, there was not even a pistol in the tent. Davis felt that his only course was to reach his horse and arms, and complied. As he was leaving the door, followed by a servant with a water bucket, Miss Howell flung a shawl over his head. There was not time to remove it without exposure and embarrassment, and, as he had not far to go, he ran the chance exactly as it was devised for him." In some irreconcilable particulars, this does not accord with Jefferson Davis's own account of his capture, as given in

had gained upon them. Three persons in female attire, who had left one of the large tents, were seen moving towards the thick woods. A corporal who confronted them called out, "Halt, or I'll fire."[23] They halted, and were found to be Jefferson Davis, his wife and her sister. A black mantle was wrapped about his head, and a lady's water-proof cloak gathered at the waist was over a suit of confederate gray; a shawl was thrown over his head, and in his hand was a tin-pail. However, it was observed that Davis' high top-boots were not covered by his disguise.[24] His passion was then aroused, and he spoke with an air of affected domineering and disdain towards his captors.[25] At

"Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., Part iv., chap. liv., pp. 700 to 702.

[23] The following narrative of Jefferson Davis's capture is thus given by Captain G. W. Lawton of the 4th Michigan cavalry, in "The Atlantic Monthly," for September, 1865. "Andrew Bee, a private of Company L, went to the entrance of Davis's tent, and was met by Mrs. Davis 'bareheaded and barefoot' as he describes her, who, putting her hand on his arm, said: 'Please don't go in there till my daughter gets herself dressed.' Andrew thereupon drew back, and in a few minutes a young lady (Miss Howel) and another person, bent over as with age, wearing a lady's waterproof, gathered at the waist with a shawl drawn over the head, and carrying a tin-pail, appear, and asked to go to 'the run' for water. Mrs. Davis also appears, and says: 'For God's sake, let my old mother go to get some water!' No objections being made they passed out. But sharp eyes were upon the singular looking 'old mother.' Suddenly, Corporal Munyer of Company C, and others, at the same instant, discovered that the 'old mother' was wearing very heavy boots for an aged female, and the corporal exclaimed: 'That is not a woman! Don't you see the boots?' and spurring his horse forward, and cocking his carbine, compelled the withdrawal of the shawl, and discovered Jeff. Davis. As if stung by this discovery of his unmanliness, Jeff. struck an attitude, and cried out: 'Is there a man among you? If there is, let me see him!' 'Yes,' said the Corporal, 'I am one, and if you stir, I will blow your brains out!' 'I know my fate,' said Davis, 'and might as well die here.' But his wife threw her arms around his neck, and kept herself between him and the threatening corporal. No harm, however, was done to him, and he was generally kindly spoken to; he was only stripped of his female attire. As a man he was dressed in a complete suit of gray, a light felt hat, and high cavalry boots, with a gray beard of about six weeks growth covering his face. He said he thought our Government was too magnanimous to hunt women and children in that way. When Colonel Pritchard told him he would do the best he could for his comfort, he answered: 'I ask no favours of you.' To which surly reply the Colonel courteously responded, by assuring him of kind treatment. Arrangements were forthwith made to return to Macon."

[24] See Dr. John William Draper's "History of the American Civil War," Vol. iii., sect. xxi., chap. xciii., pp. 623 to 625. "

[25] See the report of Colonel Pritchard to Secretary Staunton, May 25th, 1865. He adds: "I ascertained that we had captured Jefferson Davis and family (a wife and four children); John H. Reagan, his Postmaster-General; Colonel Harrison and Lubbock, A.D.C. to Davis; Burton N. Harrison, his private Secretary; Major Maurin and Captain Moody, Lieutenant Hathaway, Jeff. D. Howell, midshipman in the rebel navy, and twelve private soldiers; Miss Maggie Howell, sister of Mrs. Davis; two waiting maids, one white and one black, and several other servants. We also captured five wagons, three ambulances, about fifteen horses,

Macon, the prisoners were very considerately treated by General Wilson; and thence they were sent to Augusta and Port Royal. At this latter place they were transferred to a sea-going vessel, which was brought to anchor in Hampton Roads.[26] Thence, Davis was conducted to Fortress Monroe, where he was closely confined, until the decision of the Cabinet could be further known in reference to him.[27]

The establishment of regular Governments in the Southern States was a matter that next engaged the attention of the President and Congress.[28] When the Senators and Representatives assembled in December, both Houses were overwhelmingly Republican. A Proclamation of amnesty had been issued May 29th 1865, to relieve those who had joined in the late Rebellion from any punishment, on account of the part they had taken in the former battles. However, fourteen specified classes were exempted. Soon theoretical divergencies of policy created violent opposition to Congress, on the part of the President.[29] Amendments to the Constitution had been adopted by both Houses to secure the coloured people in their civil freedom. To give them the full privileges of citizens and voters created much greater difficulty. However, the elections of 1866 were uniformly favourable to the Republicans, and gave them a two-third majority, both in the Senate and House of Representatives. Thus they were able to nullify the President's veto, which had been previously exercised. While opinions were divided regarding the mode to be adopted for reconstructing the Southern States governments, the President had resolved on appointing provisional Governors in each of those States, and they were to call Conventions of the people, for the purpose of restoring their relations to the Union. But it was easily inferred, that the coloured people there

and from twenty-five to thirty mules. The train was mostly loaded with commissary stores and private luggage of the party."

[26] Jefferson Davis then states: "One by one all my companions in misfortune were sent away, we knew not whither, leaving on the vessel only Mr. Clay and his wife, and myself and family. After some days' detention, Clay and myself were removed to Fortress Monroe, and there incarcerated in separate cells."—"Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., Part iv., chap. liv., p. 704.

[27] See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. x., chap. xiii., pp. 269 to 274.

[28] See Edward M'Pherson's "Political History of the United States during the Period of Reconstruction," Washington, 1871, 8vo.

[29] The Constitution of the United States had made no provision for the re-admission of any State withdrawing from the Union; and, as a State-right Democrat Mr. Johnson held, that while the leaders of rebellion were responsible for their action, the Southern States had never been out of the Union, and consequently, could freely resume their place, under such form of government as did not conflict with existing constitutional requirements. On the contrary the Republicans held, that the action of the seceded States had deprived them of their rights as members of the Union they had repudiated; that in any event, they had been conquered, and as such condition demanded, they should bend to the just decrees of the the conquerors; while at best, they stood in the category of territories seeking admission to the Union, in which case Congress could admit or reject them on its own terms.

should be debarred from all share in those deliberations, nor should their rights be in any manner respected by the dominant white men. In fact those State governments when organized passed most stringent laws in reference to the negroes. This plan was utterly repudiated by Congress,[30] and military Governors were appointed instead: Under their supervision, elections were to be held, so that the coloured freedmen should be protected in their powers of voting. Certain conditions were exacted, likewise, to ensure a thorough reconstruction of the Union, in which slavery was now totally abolished. Several difficulties and disturbances took place before these instructions could be carried into effect; the President giving much opposition to the action of the Senate and House of Representatives.[31] This difference of sentiment and action encouraged factious men in the South to ingulge in great disorders during the meetings and elections that were held. At length, new Constitutions were formed in accordance with provisions made by Congress, while Governors and Legislators were chosen to regulate the domestic concerns of the newly reconstructed States.

The President had manifested such an obstinate disposition to separate from the Republican party, and fearing that his administrative powers might be despotically exercised, a law was passed on March 2nd 1867 and called the Tenure-of-Office Act, which was intended to prevent his removing civil officers without the consent of the Senate. However in violation of this law, he removed Mr. Stanton from his post as Secretary of War on the 5th of August, and appointed General Grant to succeed. When Congress met it refused to ratify that act, when General Grant resigned, and Mr. Stanton again entered on the duties of his office. However, the President again removed him, and appointed to his office Lorenzo Thomas,[32] Adjutant-General of the United States Army. Stanton notified the Speaker of the House, refused to vacate, and Thomas did not enter on the office. Moreover, the Senate declared this act to be illegal. The House of Representatives now determined on impeaching President Johnson; and accordingly, on the 24th of February 1868, a resolution to that effect was passed. That celebrated trial was opened on the 5th of March, and it awakened universal interest. Afterwards, the President made a tour through the north-west, and delivered many intemperate and violent speeches to the crowds that assembled to meet him. He denied even the jurisdiction of Congress, because it had refused admission to Senators and Representatives from the South.[33] The

[30] See Chambers' "Encyclopædia, a Dictionary of Universal Knowledge," Vol. vi., Art. *Johnson, (Andrew)*, p. 345. New Edition, 1892.

[31] For a very instructive and interesting account of these proceedings, the reader is referred to the article RECONSTRUCTION, in the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iv., pp. 322 to 328.

[32] Born in Newcastle, Del., October 26, 1804. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. vi., p. 85.

[33] See Wilson's "History of Reconstruction, 1865-1870."

Secretary of the Navy, Gideon Wells, remained in President Johnson's Cabinet and supported his policy of reconstructing the Southern States. He therefore lost favour with the Republican party.[34]

Even while the South had not been quite subdued, but when that finale was fast approaching, Congress had passed a resolution against the re-establishment of a Monarchy in Mexico, on the 4th of April 1864. On the 6th of December, the American Secretary Seward had handed a note to the French ambassador, and couched in the same sense. From the commencement of 1865 more pressing became such messages. On the 6th of September, Seward forwarded a very urgent despatch to the American ambassador at Paris, and on the 4th of December still more significant were the words of President Johnson, who sent General Schofield to demand from Napoleon III. the speedy evacuation of French troops from Mexico. The Emperor had then seriously compromised himself; and in vain did he solicit from the United States an extension of time for the purpose. However, another imperious note was despatched by Seward, on the 22nd of February 1866, and the official *Moniteur* was then obliged to announce the complete evacuation of the French Army from Mexico, in the spring of 1867. Meantime dissentions, disorders, misgovernment and reverses had been increasing there among the French and Mexican Monarchists; while the adherents of Jaurez were greatly increasing in number and in enterprise. The Government and people of the United States were quite in sympathy with the latter belligerants. The unfortunate Maximilian was besieged in Queratero for two months, and obliged afterwards to yield on the 15th of May. Brought before a military tribunal, he and his generals Miramon and Mejia were condemned to death. On the 19th of June 1865, all three were shot, and with their disappearance every thought of establishing an Empire in Mexico vanished.[35] In the beginning of February 1867, the remnant of the French army disembarked at Vera Crux, and soon all the chief towns of Mexico passed over to the Republicans.

After a lapse of two years from his arrest, Jefferson Davis was brought to trial for the crime of treason at Richmond, before the United States Circuit Court for the District of Virginia. This trial resulted in a virtual acquittal, when he was liberated on bail[36] from his confinement in Fortress Munroe.[37] The victors behaved with remarkable moderation towards him and all others implicated in this great Rebellion. Proclamations of amnesty had been issued, to tone down the wounded pride

[34] See "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iv., p. 765.

[35] See "Histoire de France depuis 1787 jusqu'a nos Jours," par Henri Martin, tome v., chap. viii., pp. 305 to 310.

[36] His principal bondsmen were Horace Greely, Gerritt Smith and Cornelius Vanderbuilt.—See "Abraham Lincoln, a History," vol. x., chap. xiii., pp. 274, 275.

[37] See Dr. John J. Craven's "Prison Life of Jefferson Davis: embracing Details and Incidents in his Captivity, together with many Conversations on Topics of Great Public Interest." New York, 1866. 12mo.

of the South; and on the 25th of December 1868, President Johnson announced a full pardon, without any reservation. Thus was the ex-President of the Confederate States released from all penalties for his rebellion, except the disability to hold office imposed by the third section of the Fourteenth Amendment to the Constitution of the United States, and which Congress very properly refused to remove.[38]

The enormous expenditure of the Civil War had caused the accumulation of a large public debt which amounted to almost 2,800,000,000 dollars at the time peace was concluded. That paper money issued by the Government had been depreciated to only a third of its denomination, when realized in gold. On the 1st of July 1866, the United States national debt reached its maximum amount of 2,773,236,173 dollars.

During the Civil War, as several Confederate privateers had been fitted up in British ports, with assumed connivance of the English Government—then professing to have been a neutral power—claims for indemnification had been urged. Pending the term of President Lincoln's government, the American Minister at London frequently pressed a demand on the British Cabinet, for various depredations on American shipping and commerce.[39] For a long time, evasion had been tried. In a lengthy despatch [40] addressed to Mr. Adams, Earl Russell disclaimed the English Government being held responsible for all the depredations the Sea King or Shenandoah committed on the high seas. While Andrew Johnson was President, Great Britain refused to acknowledge her liability for those damages sustained through the privateer vessels of the South, and fitted out in her ports.

The depredations of various Indian tribes had in the western and south-western territories caused considerable trouble for some years. The Sioux and Cheyennes began hostilities in 1865; and the following year, Major-General Hancock having been assigned to command the department of the Missouri,[41] an expedition under his direction was then

[38] "Thus ended the public career of Jefferson Davis. He returned to his home in Mississippi, where he lived unmolested nearly a quarter of a century, after the downfall of his rebellion, emerging from his retirement only by an occasional letter or address. In some of these, as well as in his elaborate work entitled "The Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," very guarded undertones revealed an undying animosity to the United States, whose destiny he had sought to pervert, whose trusts he had betrayed, whose honors he had repaid by attempting its destruction, and whose clemency he appeared incapable of appreciating even in his defeat. He died at New Orleans on December 6th, 1889, while visiting that city."—"Abraham Lincoln, a History," Vol. x., chap. xiii., p 276.

[39] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. i., Art. *Alabama Claims*, pp. 154 to 156.

[40] Dated Foreign Office, November 3, 1865. See "Selections from Speeches of Earl Russell, 1817 to 1841, and from Despatches 1859 to 1865," with Introduction. Vol. ii., pp. 491 to 499. London, 1870. 8vo.

[41] See Chambers' "Encyclopædia, a Dictionary of Universal Knowledge," Vol. v., Art. *Hancock*, (*Winfield Scott.*) p. 538. New Edition, 1892.

fitted out, and he marched against them in 1867. Those disturbances were soon suppressed. On the 1st of March 1867, Nebraska [42] was admitted into the Union as the thirty-seventh State, with the proviso that no law should ever be passed in it denying the right of suffrage to any person because of his colour or race. This had been vetoed by the President, but the Bill was passed over his veto by the requisite two-thirds majority.

On the 30th of March 1867, the extreme north-western territory of Alaska was purchased from Russia by the United States, for the sum of 7,200,000 dollars. It is bounded on the north by the Arctic Ocean, on the east by the north-west Territories of Canada, and on the west and south by the Pacific Ocean and by Behring's Sea and Strait. It included also the Alexander, the Kadiak, the Aleutian, the Pribyloff and many other islands.[43] The territory is traversed by high mountain ranges, but notwithstanding its northern position, the climate is very much milder than that of the corresponding latitudes on the east coast of America. In 1868, General Custer [44] conducted a force across the Arkansas River. Afterwards, he encountered the Cheyenne Indians, on the 27th of November 1871, and gained an important victory over them in the battle of the Washita. Owing to their defeat, that entire tribe had been compelled to return to their reservation.[45] After considerable public discussion and display of party feeling, at length, on the 16th of May 1868, a test vote was taken in the United States Senate on the impeachment of Andrew Johnson, then President of the United States. Every Senator was in his seat at the time, but the motion failed,[46] and the President was acquitted.[47] However, during the remainder of his term, Andrew Johnson continued in opposition to the general policy of Congress.

[42] This territory had been previously organized in accordance with the Kansas-Nebraska Act, passed May 30th. 1854. Parts of Colorado and Dakota were included within its original boundaries. See Dr. L. de Colange's "National Gazetteer, a Geographical Dictionary of the United States," &c., p. 691.

[43] Its area measures 570,000 square miles, of which 31,200 are insular. See Lippincott's "Gazetteer of the World," a complete Pronouncing Gazetteer or Geographical Dictionary of the World, &c. Edited originally by Joseph Thomas, M.D., LL.D., p. 450. New revised edition. Philadelphia, 1893. Roy. 8vo.

[44] He had been mustered out of the volunteer service as Chief of Cavalry in February 1866; but he again applied for service, and was appointed Lieutenant-Colonel of the Seventh Cavalry July 28th of that same year.

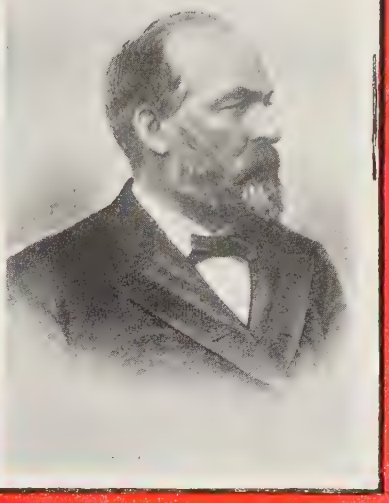
[45] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. ii., p. 44.

[46] Thirty-five Senators were for conviction, and nineteen for acquittal. A two-thirds majority was required for conviction, and the change of a single negative vote should have procured it.

[47] See Pierre Larousse's "Grand Dictionnaire Universel du XIX Siécle," &c., Tome ix., p. 1001.



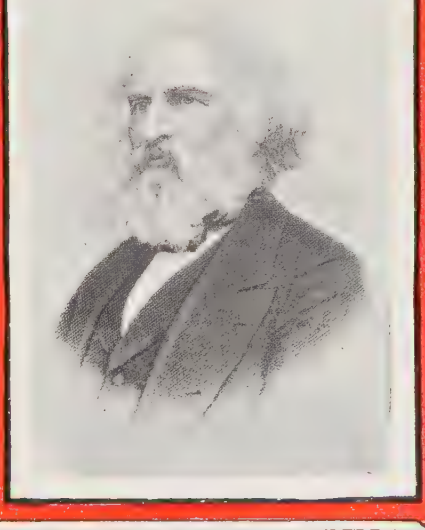
RUTHERFORD B. HAYES,
Nineteenth President of the U S



JAMES A GARFIELD,
Twentieth President of the U.S



CHESTER A. ARTHUR,
Twenty-first President of the U.S.



HENRY WADSWORTH LONGFELLOW,
American Poet.

CHAPTER XLIV.

General Ulysses S. Grant elected President—Settlement of the Alabama Claims—Re-election of President Grant—Foreign and Domestic Affairs—Centenary of American Independence—Rutherford B. Hayes elected President—Financial Equilibrium restored—James A. Garfield elected President—His Assassination—Chester A. Arthur succeeds—Election of Grover Cleveland as President in 1884—Benjamin Harrison elected President in 1888—Second Election of Grover Cleveland as President in 1892—The Great Columbian Exposition in Chicago—Subsequent Events.

A CONVENTION of the Republican party, assembled at Chicago, in May 1868. It offered the nomination to General Ulysses S. Grant for President, and to Schuyler Colfax[1] for Vice-President. The Democratic candidates opposed were Horatio Seymour of New York, and Frank P. Blair[2] of Missouri. The Republican candidates were subsequently elected towards the close of that year,[3] and on the 4th of March, 1869, they were duly inaugurated.[4] Soon General Grant made it known, that his chief object was to reduce the enormous debt contracted during the war as speedily as possible, and to resume specie payments. Heavy taxes were necessary for this purpose, and the people cheerfully assented. During his first term, also, Grant brought before Congress the subject of Civil Service reform. In March 1870, the Fifteenth Amendment to the Constitution of the United States was ratified by three-fourths of the requisite voting number; and means were afterwards adopted to protect the newly enfranchised coloured people in the South. Efforts were also made to improve the condition of the Indians, mainly through missionary work, effected by the prominent religious bodies.

The census of the United States, taken in the summer of 1870, reached to the number of 38,587,960 inhabitants;[5] of course, largely recruited by immigrants from Ireland,[6] England, and Scotland, as also from Germany and other European countries. The enumeration of emigrants from Ireland between the years 1851 and 1870,[7] and mostly

[1] He was born in New York City, March 23rd, 1823. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. i., pp. 687, 688.

[2] See *ibid.* pp. 280, 281.

[3] In the Electoral College the vote stood 214 to 80. See "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 255.

[4] See David N. Camp's "American Year Book and National Register for 1869;" Vol. i., pp. 265 to 267, and 801.

[5] See Lippincott's "Gazetteer of the World," p. 2682; new edition, 1893, Roy. 8vo.

[6] An idea of the vast accession of Irish emigrants to the great trans-Atlantic republic may be formed from the fact ascertained, that the total number of person living in the United States, and born in Ireland, was 1,855,779 in the year 1870, according to that general census.

[7] In the year 1851, the number of Irish emigrants was 179,507; in 1852, 190,322; in 1853, 173,148; in 1854,

bound for the United States, shows the rate of expatriation which served to impoverish the former and to enrich the latter country, by increasing its population and resources.[8] It has been computed, that 49,155 emigrants left Ireland in the first seven months of the year 1871, being less than that for a corresponding period in the previous year by 4,699. The decrease was most observable in Leinster, Munster, and Connaught; but, the total diminution was altered by an increased departure from Ulster.[9] In twenty years Ireland thus lost more than two millions of people; nor is it to be supposed the causes for emigrating, yet in operation, shall tend materially to diminish the progress of her depopulation for some coming years. Moreover, a very considerable number of those set down as English and Scotch in the enumeration may be regarded also as the children of Irish parents.

The inflexible determination manifested by President Grant and his Cabinet soon brought the matter of United States claims on the British Government to a crisis. In 1870 a treaty was concluded at Washington, and there it was stipulated, that the question should be decided by a tribunal of arbitrators appointed by both nations. After some arrangements, Commissioners met at Geneva in December 1871.[10] The following year in September, an award was made by that tribunal. The American

140,555; in 1855, 91,914; in 1856, 90,781; in 1857, 95 081; in 1858, 64,337; in 1859, 80,599; in 1860, 84,621; in 1861, 64,292; in 1862, 70,117; in 1863, 117,229; in 1864, 114,169; in 1865, 101,497; in 1866, 99,467; in 1867, 80,624; in 1868, 61,018; in 1869, 66,568. The foregoing enumeration of emigrants from Irish ports commenced on 1st May 1851. From that date until the 31st of July 1871, the returns were furnished annually by the constabulary, and published in "The Agricultural Statistics of Ireland," as obtained at the several Irish ports. During the intervening period, the vast number of 1,093,440 males and 968,969 females emigrated—in all, 2,062,409 persons left Ireland, and bound for foreign lands beyond the United Kingdom.

[8] The number of persons who emigrated from Queenstown in 1869, was 22,503; from Dublin, 10,748; from Belfast, 14,863; and from Londonderry, 8,238. The total number of alien emigrants who solely arrived in the port of New York, from May 5th 1847, to January 1st 1870, was 4,297,980. Of this number, Ireland furnished the largest proportion, calculated by nativity, and the figures are set down at 1,664,009. Next in numerical order stands Germany, with 1,636,254 emigrants; England furnished 539,668, and Scotland 111,238 while France contributed 77,200. The remainder belonged by birth to all other countries of the known world, excluding, however, the United States. See "Annual Report of the Commissioners of Emigration of the State of New York, for the Year ending December 31st 1869," pp. 144, 145. New York, 1870, 8vo., by James Lynch, Esq., President of the Irish Emigrant Society, New York. The number of Irish emigrants who arrived in the port of New York for 1870, amounted to 65,168. See p. 521. In addition, 39,304 landed there to the 30th of June 1871, as officially notified. The foregoing figures by no means include the total number of alien emigrants, who landed at other ports or who arrived in Canada and the United States, while making the latter their destination.

[9] See William Donnelly's "Agricultural Statistics of Ireland for 1871," pp. 7, 20.

[10] See Cushing's "Treaty of Washington; its Negotiation, Execution, and the Discussion relating thereto," New York, 1873, cr. 8vo.

Commissioners strongly urged the indebtedness of her Britannic Majesty's Government for not exercising sufficient vigilance and diligence in preventing great detriment to the commerce of the United States.[11] After some deliberation, that conference awarded to the United States government 15,500,000 dols. in gold, or 3,000,000 in British pounds sterling. However, those indirect damages produced by the Confederate cruisers were far beyond the amount granted by such award.[12] That sum agreed upon was promptly paid, however, and so the question was finally settled. The disputed matter of a right claimed by vessels belonging to the United States, to fish off the coasts in the British American possessions, had also been entertained by the plenipotentiaries at Washington. At length, a United Commission of both parties met at Halifax, and after considerable delay, it was decided that the United States should pay five and a half million of dollars, for the privilege of fishing during twelve years. To adjust the boundary line between the United States and British America, towards the north-west, was referred for arbitration to the Emperor of Germany. His decision favoured the claim of the United States for that portion of territory in dispute.

In 1872, General Grant's second term of candidature was contested by a party organized as the Liberal Republicans, who were dissatisfied with the policy of his administration. At a Convention held in May at Cincinnati, they nominated Horace Greely, editor and proprietor of the *New York Tribune*, as a candidate for the Presidency, and Benjamin Gratz Brown[13] of Missouri as a candidate for the Vice-Presidency. Soon afterwards, the Democratic National Convention assembled, and instead of naming their own distinct candidates, they resolved to support Greely and Brown. By a large majority, however, General Grant was re-elected President, and with him Henry Wilson[14] of Massachusetts was returned as Vice-President. The electoral vote for Grant and his colleague was 286; while 63 was the vote for other candidates; 17

[11] The claims presented for damages done by the several Confederate cruisers were as follows: — The Alabama, $7,050,293.76; the Boston, $400; the Chickamauga, $183,070.73; the Florida, $4,957,934.69; the Clarence, tender of the Florida, $66,736.10; the Tacony, tender of the Florida, $169,198.81; the Georgia, $431,160.72; the Jefferson Davis, $7,752; the Nashville, $108,433.95; the Retribution, $29,018.53; the Sallie, $5,540; the Shenandoah, $6,650,838.81; the Sumter, $179,697.67; the Tallahasse, $836,841.83. Total, $19,782,917.60. Miscellaneous, $479,033. Increased insurance, $6,146,219.71. Aggregate, $26,408,170.31.

[12] See Jefferson Davis, "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," Vol. ii., Part iv., chap. xxxi., pp. 283, 284.

[13] Born in Lexington, Ky., May 28th 1826. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. i., p. 403.

[14] Born in Farmington, N. H., February 16th 1812. He was the son of a farm-labourer, whose ancestors were from the north of Ireland, and he commenced life apprenticed to a farmer until he was twenty-one, not receiving more than twelve months schooling altogether. As an ardent abolitionist, his first appearance in public life was made, and afterwards he became a fluent speaker and a ready writer. See *Ibid.*, Vol. vi, pp. 548, 549.

votes not being counted.[15] During this second term of Grant as President, a financial panic prevailed and under which the country suffered for a time; but notwithstanding the proposals of Congress on the subject, he sternly resisted every measure tending to inflate the currency. The Modoc Indians of Oregon rose in arms in 1872 and 1873. General E. R. S. Canby had been placed in command over the department of Columbia; and he laboured actively to bring them to accept terms offered by Government. In company with two other officers, he met Captain Jack their leader on neutral ground, there to confer regarding a treaty of peace. During that parley with their chiefs, General Canby and the Commissioners were treacherously murdered before the escort could come to their rescue.[16]

Some difficulties arose between the United States and Spain, in consequence of an insurrection which broke out in Cuba. A Spanish man-of-war had seized the United States steamer "Virginius," in October 1873, it being supposed she had been employed to aid the Cuban insurgents. However, on the demand of the President, Spain surrendered that steamer. When General Grant became President, March 4th 1869, William T. Sherman was appointed General-in-Chief of the United States troops, while Philip H. Sheridan was nominated Lieutenant-General, with the understanding that these titles should disappear with the men holding them. The headquarters of the former were at Washington, while the latter commanded the western and south-western military divisions.[17] An Indian Chief of the Sioux, and known by the designation of Sitting Bull, caused great disquiet about this time in the western territories. The United States sent troops to repress the disorders occasioned by the Indians in those distant settlements. In 1876 General P. H. Sheridan ordered an expedition in three columns from distant points, under Generals Terry, Gibbon and Crook, to march against them. While leading General Terry's column, General Custer divided his regiment into three bodies near the Little Big Horn River, and pushed forward with five companies. On the 25th of June, Sitting Bull attacked and defeated him. He was killed together with 250 of his men after a heroic resistance.[18] Colorado, which had been organised as a territory, February 28th, 1861, became a new State by Act of Congress, March 3rd, 1875.[19] During this year also on the 19th of April, the President attended a grand centennial celebration of the old Congressional War, and which commemorated the commencement of the Revolution at Concord and Lexington. Later still followed his annual Message to Congress, referring in appropriate terms to the

[15] See "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 255.

[16] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. i., p. 518.

[17] At his own request, and in order to make Sheridan General-in-Chief, Sherman was placed on the retired list, but with full pay and emoluments, February 8th, 1884.

[18] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. ii., p. 502.

[19] See Lippincott's "Gazetteer of the World," p. 2685. New Edition, 1893.

growth of the United States from small beginnings to an era of universal freedom and prosperity at that particular time.

In 1876 the one hundredth anniversary of the Declaration of Independence was celebrated with great rejoicing throughout the United States. That year also was held a great International and Industrial Exhibition at Philadelphia, from May 10th to November 10th. At the appointed time, it was opened by the President with imposing ceremonies. Vast numbers of people attended, moreover, from the United States and from all parts of the world. That Exhibition proved to be in the highest degree successful. Towards the close of President Grant's administration, the House of Representatives had passed under the control of the Democratic Party, and much opposition to his Government was experienced, especially in the numerous investigations ordered regarding the management of certain departments. Some of the officials had been found faithless to their trust; but although his own integrity remained untarnished, yet it afforded opportunity for party politicians to denounce some of his measures and policy. However, President Grant deserved well of the Republic, not alone for his military but for his civic services, while guarding its dignity in intercourse with foreign nations, in preserving its peace at home, and in fulfilling strictly all its obligations towards every class of citizens and dependents.[20]

Another Presidential election took place during this year. The Republican Party in convention at Cincinnati, May 1876, nominated Rutherford B. Hayes of Ohio for President, and William A. Wheeler[21] of New York for Vice-President. The Democratic party in convention at St. Louis, Mo., nominated Governor Samuel J. Tilden[22] of New York for President, and Thomas A. Hendricks[23] of Indiana for Vice-President. This proved to be a very close contest, and it was a matter of dispute how the votes of certain States should be counted. Both parties clamed the returns as favourable to them. The Democratic ticket received a majority of the popular vote, but not a majority of the electoral. At last, a Commission was created by Congress to examine the returns. According to the ruling of that Commission, Messrs. Hayes and Wheeler obtained a majority of one. They were duly inaugurated March 4th 1877, as President and Vice-President.[24] The receipts of the United States Government for the year ending March 1st 1878, were 265,342,831 dollars; the expenditure was

[20] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., Art. GRANT, (*Ulysses Simpson*), p. 256.

[21] Born in Malone, Franklin County, N. York, June 30th 1819. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. vi., p. 445.

[22] A Life of Samuel J. Tilden has been written by Theodore P. Cook, and published in New York, 1876. His writings have been edited by John Bigelow, in two volumes, published 1885.

[23] He was born near Zanesville, Ohio, September 7th 1819. See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. iii., p. 316.

[24] See John R. G. Hassard's "History of the United States of America," chap. lvii., pp. 375, 376.

218,289,531 dollars; thus effecting a diminution of 46,744,013 dollars in the National Debt.[25] The first year of the Civil War specie payments had been suspended; but on the 1st of January 1879, they were resumed, and without any disturbance of the money market.[26] From the very outset of his administration, the President undertook to conciliate the white people of the Southern States, contrary to a strenuous opposition he experienced from recognized leaders of the Republican party in Congress. The various branches of the Government had been wisely and economically managed during his term of office, and the country was generally prosperous. On the first of June 1880, the population of the United States was returned as being 50,189,209; being an increase on the previous decennium period of 11,601,249; about one quarter of this excess having been due to immigration. Ireland furnished a large proportion of the immigrants, while Germans figure as a very numerous contingent. The Chinese also were reckoned in considerable numbers. By successful financial management, towards the close of President Hayes's administration, no less than 1,000,000,000 dollars of the public debt had been paid, and ever since it has been steadily diminishing. For the year ending March 1st 1881, the United States had a revenue of 356,386,715 dollars, and the expenditure was 257,323,527 dollars; while the public debt decreased by 115,155,808.[27] Its total decrease for the four previous years was 208,824,730 dollars, and in the annual charge for it, 17,557,708. The credit of the United States Government then became restored, and an equilibrium was established between the paper currency and gold.

The nominations for Presidential election in 1880 were James Abram Garfield of Ohio for President, and Chester A. Arthur[28] of New York for Vice-President, on behalf of the Republican party; while Major-General W. S. Hancock of Pennsylvania for President, and William H. English[29] of Indiana, for Vice President, were selected by the Democrats. The Republicans received 214 electoral votes; all the Northern States siding with them except California, which was divided; the Nevada, and New Jersey, including eleven votes from Georgia, not

[25] For the same period, the export returns for merchandise were 639,485,209 dollars; the exports of live stock were 4,205,893 dollars; the export values for other food were 269,752,809 dollars; the exports of specie were 47,103,365 dollars.

[26] See the "Encyclopædia Americana," vol. iii., p. 306.

[27] For the same period, the exports of merchandise were valued at 915,271,563 dollars; exports of live stock, 20,681,738 dollars; exports of other food, 456,244,111 dollars; and exports of specie, 16,028,803 dollars.

[28] The father of Chester A. Arthur, and named William, was born in Antrim, Ireland, in 1796, and he graduated in Belfast College. He was a Baptist minister after emigrating to the United States, and a man of fine literary attainments. His distinguished son, the twenty-first President of the United States, was born in Fairfield, Franklin County, Vt., October 5th, 1830. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. i., pp. 99, 107.

[29] He was born in Lexington, Scott County, Ind., August 27th, 1822. See *ibid.*, Vol. ii., p. 359.

being cast on the day appointed by law. The Democratic electoral vote counted 155. Objections were made to the votes of Georgia when the returns were opened, but the question whether they should be counted or not was never decided, nor was it deemed necessary they should, since they could not affect the general result nor displace the Republican majority. Accordingly, J. A, Garfield[30] was elected as the twentieth President of the United States by the Republican party, and Chester A. Arthur became Vice-President. Garfield was inaugurated President on the 4th of March 1881, nor was time afterwards allowed him to develop any particular line of policy. His term of administration was a brief one, for it lasted only six months and eighteen days. He was shot by an assassin named Charles Jules Guiteau on the 2nd of July, but he afterwards lingered for eighty days, in a painful struggle for life or death. However, the wound at last proved fatal. He died in Elberon New Jersey, September 19th 1881.[31] Then by the provision of the Constitution, the Vice-President[32] succeeded him in office, and performed its duties in an independent and praiseworthy manner; yet, the term of his administration was not marked by any very exciting public events.[33] He was the twenty-first President of the United States. His first message was explicit, judicious and reassuring; while his subsequent conservative administration of Government commanded universal confidence, preserved public order and promoted business activity. He exacted from the British Government a full recognition of the rights and immunities of naturalized American citizens of Irish origin, and all such who had been arrested as untried suspects, in Great Britan and Ireland, were on demand liberated. Useful treaties and conventions with foreign powers were likewise effected during his administration. Notice was given to England, under the joint-resolution of Congress of March 3rd 1883, regarding the termination of the fishery clauses in the Treaty of Washington. His Government, considered as a whole, was responsive to every national demand, and it stands substantially, in all its departments, without detriment of assault or criticism.[34]

In 1884 and on the 10th of July, Grover Cleveland[35] the Governor of New York State was selected as the candidate for President, at the

[30] He was born in Ohio, November 19th 1831. See Charles C. Coffin's "Life of General Garfield, Candidate for President." Boston: 1880. 12mo.

[31] See J. G. Blaine's "Twenty Years of Congress, from Lincoln to Garfield, with a Review of the Events which led to the Political Revolution," illustrated with full-page steel portraits of the various presidents, and numerous fine steel miniatures of eminent politicians. Norwich, Conn. 1884, 2 vols. 8vo.

[32] During the Confederate War he acted as Quarter-Master of the military forces in the State of New York. In 1871, he was appointed Collector of Customs in New York, by President Grant.

[33] See "Irish Celts," by a Member of the Michigan Bar. Art., *Arthur*, (*Chester A.*)

[34] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. i., pp. 99 to 106.

[35] He was born in Caldwell, Essex County, in the State of New Jersey, March 18th, 1837. See the "Encyclopædia Americana," Vol. ii., p. 141.

Democratic Convention which met in Chicago. Many of the independent Republicans also accepted him. Subsequently, Thomas A. Hendricks was nominated as Vice-President. However, before the election took place, James G. Blaine of Maine was in the field against Cleveland as the chief Republican candidate. Moreover, Benjamin F. Butler had been put forward by the newly-constituted Labour and Greenback party, and John P. St. John of Kansas, by another organization known as the Prohibition party. The total popular vote on the 4th of November stood: For Cleveland, 4,874,986; for Blaine, 4,851,981; for Butler, 175,370; for St. John, 150,369; blank, defective and scattering, 14,904. The electoral vote gave Cleveland a majority of thirty-seven.[36] He was inaugurated on the 4th of March 1885. In his address he urged the people of all parties to set aside political animosities, and to sustain the general policy of his Government. As a guide for foreign relations he proclaimed his adoption of the Monroe doctrine, and his approval of strict economy in administration of the finances. He declared, that the Indians in the territories should be protected and be elevated to citizenship, while all freed men should be secured in their social and political rights. He also stated that merit and competency alone should be recognized in the great body of officials, instead of party subserviency or the surrender of honest political opinion. He announced, moreover, in regard to official changes, that with the exception of heads of departments, foreign ministers, and other officers charged with administration of governmental policy, no removals should take place without cause.

These declarations brought him into conflict with many influential members of his own party. In his first message towards the close of that year, in opening the first session of the Forty-ninth Congress, the President recommended increased appropriations for the diplomatic and consular service, the reduction of the tariff on the necessaries of life, the abolition of duties on works of art, the suspension of compulsory silver coinage, the improvement of the navy, reform in the laws under which titles to the public lands are required from the Government, the appointment of six general Indian Commissioners, the extension of the principle of Civil Service reform, more stringent laws for the suppression of polygamy in Utah, and an Act to prohibit the immigration of Mormons. He also advocated an increase in the salaries of Commissioners, and the passage of a law to determine the order of presidential election in case of a vacancy. During his term of administration, the President rigorously enforced the expulsion of white intruders from lands reserved for the Indians, and he suppressed anti-Chinese disturbances in California and Oregon. Moreover in 1886, he recommended to Congress the propriety of creating a commission of labour to consist of three members, who should be permanent officers of the Government. In

[36] When the New York Legislature assembled, January 6th, 1885, Mr. Cleveland resigned the Governorship of that State, which he had held from the 1st of January, 1883, but he continued to reside in Albany.

connexion with other duties, they should have authority to settle by arbitration all disputes between capitalists and labourers concerning wages or employment, when called upon to do so by the interested parties.[37] A law came into force January 19th 1886, whereby it was enacted, that in case of removal, death, resignation or inability of both the President and Vice-President, the Secretary of State, and after him, other members of the Cabinet in their order, shall act as President until the disability of the President be removed or a President shall be elected. On the death of a Vice-President, the duties of his office should fall to the President *pro-tempore* of the Senate, who receives the salary of Vice-President.[38] In 1887, the seizure of Canadian fur-sealers by the United States led to a dispute with Great Britain, afterwards settled by arbitration.[39]

In 1888, at Chicago, the Republican Party in their National Convention selected for candidate Benjamin Harrison[40] who had served courageously in the Civil War as a volunteer,[41] and who afterwards was elected United States senator from Indiana. Levi P. Morton of New York was chosen for Vice-President.[42] On their part, the Democrats put forward Cleveland for re-election as the advocate of free trade and a moderate tariff. The policy of protection for United States manufactures was advocated by the Republicans, and Harrison regarded as their champion was elected, after a keen party contest. He was inaugurated as the twenty-third President, on the 4th of March, 1889. He was a strenuous advocate for a heavy protectionist duty on manufactured goods, imported from foreign countries into the United States.[43]

During the term of President Harrison, certain differences arose between the United States and Great Britain, regarding the seal-fisheries of Behring Sea. The claims of the former power were, that prior and down to the time of the Alaska cession to the United States, Russia asserted and exercised an exclusive right to the seal-fisheries in the waters of Behring Sea, and also asserted and exercised throughout

[37] See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. i., pp. 655. 656.

[38] See "The Stateman's Year Book for 1893," edited by J. Scott Keltie, United States, p. 1060. London, 1893. 8vo.

[39] See "The American Navy," by Charles Morris, Part i., chap. vi., p. 103.

[40] He was born at North Bend Hamilton County, in the State of Ohio, August 20th 1833. See Chambers's "Encyclopædia, a Dictionary of Universel Knowledge," Vol. v., p. 570.

[41] He raised a company in 1862, and served in it as second lieutenant. Afterwards he became colonel of the Seventieth Regiment of Indiana Volunteers, and in the first division of the Eleventh Army Corps he participated in Sherman's Atlanta Campaign. He was distinguished in the battles of Resaca and Peach Tree Creek. In December 1864, under General Thomas, he took part in the battle at Nashville, and in 1865, he was commissioned brevet Brigadier-general.

[42] See George A. Townsend's "Life of Hon. Levi P. Morton," Philadelphia, 1888. 12mo.

[43] See Major-general Lewis Wallace's "Life of General Ben Harrison," Philadelphia, 1888, 12mo.

that sea the right to prevent, by the employment when necessary of reasonable force, any invasion of such exclusive rights. That all the rights of Russia in respect to the seal fisheries in Behring Sea, east of the water boundary established by the Treaty of March 30th 1867, between that nation and the United States, as also all the power and authority, possessed and asserted by Russia to protect such rights, passed unimpaired to the United States. Compensation was likewise claimed from Great Britain for the amount of losses to the United States, owing to infringement of their rights by fishing vessels belonging to British subjects. North and South Dakota[44] were admitted as new States into the Union, on the 22nd of February 1889. Also, the territories of Washington[45] and Montana[46] became States, by an Act of Congress bearing the same date.[47] By Act of Congress, Idaho[48] was erected as a new State, on July 2nd 1890.[49] Soon afterwards an Act passed, through which Wyoming[50] was admitted into the Union, on July 11th 1890, as a new State.[51] Afterwards, the following territories remained to be incorporated as States, viz. :—New Mexico,[52] Utah,[53] Arizona,[54] Oklahoma,[55] Alaska,[56] and the Indian territory.

The aggregate population of the United States in June 1890 was returned as 62,622,250, of which 32,067,880 were males, and 30,554,370 females.[57] However, according to the subsequent corrected returns from the United States Census office for that year, the aggregate population was 62,840,535 souls.[58] A new political organization had been formed, with distinctive objects in view, and advocating a policy which began to receive some public attention. The Populist or People's party in the West was opposed to private banks, rail-road and corporate monopolies generally, desiring the Government to have control and ownership of all the means for transport, while demanding paternal or protecting

[44] Both of these States had been originally formed into a single territory from a part of Nebraska, and they were thus organised by an Act, dating March 2nd 1861.

[45] Washington was taken from Oregon, and organised as a separate territory, by Act of March 2nd 1853.

[46] The territory Montana had been created out of a part of Idaho, by Act of May 26th 1864.

[47] See Lippincott's "Gazetteer of the World," pp. 2682, 2683. New revised edition, 1893.

[48] It had been organized as a new territory out of a part of Washington Territory, on the 3rd of March 1863. See *ibid.*

[49] See *Ibid.*

[50] It had been struck off as a new territory, by Act of Congress, July 25th 1868, and taken from parts of Utah, Dakota and Idaho. See *ibid.*

[51] See *Ibid.*

[52] Organized as a territory, September 9th 1850. See *ibid.*

[53] Organized, September 9th 1850. See *ibid.*

[54] Out of part of Western New Mexico, Arizona was organized February 24th 1863. See *ibid.*

[55] Oklahoma was organized out of part of the Indian territory, and the Public Land Strip, May 2nd 1890. See *ibid.*

[56] Alaska was organized as a territory, July 27th 1868. See *ibid.*

[57] Of the total population, 52,372,703 were native-born and 9,249,547 foreign-born; while 54,983,890 were white, and 7,638,360 "coloured" people, in which category Chinese, Japanese and civilised Indians were included, as well as persons of African descent.

[58] See Lippincott's "Gazetteer of the World," pp. 2682, 2683.

legislation in the State and National spheres. At the close of 1891, the state of parties in the Senate was recognised as Republicans 47, and Democrats 39, while the People's party counted only 2 members. In the House of Representatives, there were 233 Democrats, 88 Republicans, and 9 of the People's party. An act of Congress was passed to enforce reciprocal commercial relations between the United States and Canada. This year also a party of United States sailors had been attacked in the port of Valparaiso by Chilian insurrectionists, which called for remonstrance from the United States minister Patrick Egan.[59] This event aroused a war spirit at first, but an apology from the Chilian authorities and an indemnity paid to the families of the victims quelled the hostile purpose.[60]

In June 1892, when the Democrats assembled in Convention at Chicago to choose a President, they selected as candidate the ex-President Grover Cleveland; and Adlai E. Stevenson of Illinois was their second choice for Vice-President.[61] The Republican Convention met at Minneapolis during the same month, and chose as their candidates President Harrison,[62] to fill a second term, and Whitelaw Reid[63] of New York for Vice-President. The Farmers' Alliance or People's Party named James B. Weaver[64] of Iowa, for President, and James G. Field[65] of Virginia for Vice-President; while the Prohibition Temperance Party selected for their candidates John Bidwell[66] of California, and James B. Cranfill of Texas.[67] At the subsequent election November 8th, the popular vote for Mr. Cleveland was 5,556,533; for Mr. Harrison 5,154,542; for Mr. Weaver, 1,122,045; and for Mr. Bidwell, 279,194, The number of votes in the Electoral College stood: For the Democratic nominees, 277; for the Republican, 145; and for the "Populist" Party only 22. Thus in all the forty-four States of the Union the results showed a general Democratic gain. Accordingly, Grover Cleveland was elected President, and Mr. Stevenson became Vice-President.[68] In

[59] He was a native of Ireland, who for alleged conspiracy against the English Government had been obliged to quit his native country.

[60] See "The American Navy," by Charles Morris, Part i., chap. vi., pp. 105, 106.

[61] See "The Annual Register for 1893," Part i., Foreign and Colonial History, chap. vii., p. 455.

[62] He was born in Christian Co., Ky., on the 29th of October, 1835.

[63] Born near Xenia Ohio, October 27th 1839. He had served in the Civil War, and afterwards he became a distinguished journalist and editor of the *New York Tribune*. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. v., p. 217.

[64] Born in Dayton Ohio, June 12th 1833. He served in the Civil War, and afterwards he practised law in the State of Iowa. See *Ibid.* Vol. vi., p. 401.

[65] Born in Walnut, Culepeper Co., Va., Feb. 24th 1826. He served with the Confederates during the war. See *ibid.*, Vol. ii., p. 449.

[66] Born in Chautaqua Co. N. Y., August 5th 1819. See *ibid.*, Vol. i., p. 258.

[67] He was born in Parker Co. Texas, September 12th 1858. He was editor of the *Baptist Standard*.

[68] As members of the Cabinet, Walter Gresham of Illinois was chosen Secretary of State; John G. Carlisle of Kentucky, Secretary of the Treasury; Hoke Smith of Georgia, Secretary of the Interior; J. Stirling

the following year on the 4th of March, and with a magnificent ceremonial at Washington, the usual inauguration took place, and the President then delivered his inaugural address. For a time, the American Minister at Honolulu had proclaimed a protectorate of the United States over the Hawaiin Islands,[69] where the reigning Queen Liliuokalani had been dethroned by revolutionists, on the 16th of January, 1893, and a provisional government was there formed. Nevertheless, doubts existed as to the authority and validity of that junta, while President Harrison maintained the minister and troops of the United States had not promoted the overthrow of the Queen's government. Accordingly, he had entered upon a treaty with commissioners representing the provisional government, for the annexation of the Hawaiin Islands to the territory of the United States, and on the 15th of February that treaty was presented for approval to the Senate. On the other hand, the Queen and her ministers protested, that when she had yielded to the provisional government, it meant rather to the superior force of the United States. President Cleveland withdrew the treaty from the Senate, until the vital question of fact should be ascertained; and on the 18th of December in a special message to Congress, he avowed his conviction that the unlawful government of Hawaii was owing to an armed invasion from the United States. Nevertheless, on the 4th of July, 1894, a Republic was proclaimed, having a President named Dole, and two Houses of Legislature. However, that proclamation of the American Minister was pending and subject to action of the United States Government at Washington. The protectorate had been cancelled on the 1st of April by the Cleveland administration, on the ground that the Government considered it to be no longer necessary, and on April 13th the United States forces in charge were withdrawn. Notwithstanding the revolutionists ultimately proved successful.

The other great event deserving attention in the United States—one indeed which created an interest throughout the whole civilized world—was the opening of the vast Columbian Exhibition in the City of Chicago. It had been designed to commemorate the four-hundredth discovery of America by Christopher Columbus, and therefore, it was so designated. For a few years previous, most extensive and elaborate preparations were made, while enormous expense was incurred[70] in order to render the World's Fair worthy of the great occasion. Accordingly, the formal ceremony of Inauguration took place on the 12th of October 1892; but, as the various buildings were not then ready for placing

Morton of Nebraska, Secretary of Agriculture; Hilary A. Herbert of Alabama, Secretary of the Navy; Daniel S. Lamont of New York, Secretary of War; Richard Olney of Massachusetts, Attorney-General, and Wilson S. Bissell of New York, Postmaster-General. See "The Annual Register for 1893," Part i., Foreign and Colonial History, chap. vii., pp. 455 to 459.

[69] First among Europeans, the Spaniards under Gaetano discovered the Hawaiin Islands in 1549. They were visited by the celebrated English navigator, Captain James Cook in 1788.

[70] Over 100,000,000 dollars had been

the numberless exhibits in a position for general inspection, Monday the 1st of May in the year 1893 was reserved for the great ceremonial. On that day, the President, Vice-President and Members of the Cabinet were present, together with a great number of Senators and Representative members from Congress, Governors and Members of the different State Legislatures, Mayors of cities and towns, various foreign Ministers and Commissioners, with a vast number of distinguished guests from the most distant places, ladies and gentlemen. In the great Administration Building, where President Cleveland and George R. Davies, Director-General of the Exposition, delivered appropriate and significant addresses, and in the grounds at Jackson Park—the centre of attraction—enormous crowds had assembled.[71]

The returns of the fiscal year, which ended on the 30th of June 1892, were satisfactory when published.[72] The message of President Cleveland, on December of that same year, recommended a repeal of the McKinley Tariff, with the removal of Customs' charges upon the necessaries of life, and the unrestricted admission of raw materials from abroad. However, the opposing parties of Democrats and Republicans, who held divergent views on this question, were engaged in earnest discussion for the greater part of the ensuing Session of Congress. This had been the chief topic of public interest for some time; and the enactment of that Customs' law had a varied influence on internal and external manufactures and commerce. Notwithstanding the obstructive efforts of those advocating protection for home industries, in the year following a modified reduction of the Tariff was agreed upon, and considerable abatements were made on certain imports from foreign countries.

expended on the various buildings, their fittings and arrangements.

[71] Not the least interesting portion of the World's Fair—especially for the inspection of Irish and Irish-American citizens—was that spot selected by the noble lady Isabel, Countess of Aberdeen, for the erection of the Irish Village, where a great number of specimens, representing native arts, trades and industries, and where particularly the process of manufacture and the products of peasant women, in characteristically designed cottages, were exhibited. She had long laboured, and with great zeal and ability, to render this enterprise a marked success. On the occasion of his official visit to Chicago, President Cleveland paid a visit to the Irish Village, where he was received with due courtesy and welcome by the noble Countess. Before quitting the grounds, the President received the Earl of Aberdeen then newly appointed Governor of Canada.

[72] It was then announced, that the receipts from Customs alone were 203,355,017 dollars, and internal revenue amounted to 161,027,624 dollars, while the total ordinary receipts were altogether 385,819,629 dollars. For the same period, the civil expenditure was 103,732,799 dollars, the military was 49,641,773 dollars, the naval was 30,136,084 dollars, for the Indian Service, 13,345,347 dollars; for pensions, 159,357,558 dollars, and for interest on the pubilc debt 27,264,392, dollars, the total amounting to 383,477,954 dollars. See the "Statesman's Year Book," Statistical and Historical Annual of the States of the World for the Year 1894. Edited by J. Scott Keltie. Part ii., Foreign Countries, United States, p. 1076.

CHAPTER XLV.

Republican Gains in the November Elections of 1894—The Venezuelan Boundary Question—Insurrection in Cuba—William McKinley elected President in 1896—His Cabinet and the State of Parties—Declaration of War against Spain—Commodore Dewey destroys the Spanish Fleet in the Philippine Islands—Blockade of its northern Ports and Invasion of Cuba—Conquest of the Island, Porto Rico and Manilla—Peace concluded between Spain and the United States—The President's Message.

A NUMBER of trade strikes characterised the year 1894, when many of these were attended with serious disturbances and loss of life, especially in Chicago and in other Western districts. Those riots and the unsettled state of the Tariff caused a great depression of enterprise and trade.[1] The November elections throughout the States completely and unexpectedly reversed the conditions of the Democratic and Republican parties. The Republicans carried all the Northern States contested, and by large majorities. Moreover, they materially reduced the Democratic vote in the Southern States. On the 28th of January 1895, President Cleveland sent a message to Congress, in which he dwelt chiefly on the drain of gold from the United States, and as stated owing to the operation of the existing currency laws. For the correction of alleged causes calculated to increase the financial difficulties and the national obligations, he offered some suggestions; while he asked the Congress to give such a subject immediate attention, and to deal with it by remedial legislation, rising above party spirit and other preconceived prejudices and opinions. In the commencement of that year the Democratic party was in a majority both in the Senate and House of Representatives, while the currency question and finance were the chief subjects under discussion during the session, which closed on the 4th of March.

A question of boundary between the Republic of Venezuela, in South America, and the Colony of British Guiana, had long been a subject of controversy to which the United States could not be indifferent in view of the traditional Monroe doctrine, and the fact, that for more than half a century, many earnest and persistent efforts had been made by Venezuela to establish a boundary by peaceable agreement or by arbitration, in reference to a disputed territory of indefinite but confessedly of very large extent. However, the government of Great Britain refused to accommodate matters, except upon the condition of Venezuela relinquishing a large portion of her claim, and conceding an

[1] See J. Scott Keltie's "Statesman's Year Book: Statistical and Historical Annual of the States of the World for the Year 1894." Part ii. Foreign Countries. United States, p. 1075. London, 1894, 8vo.

extensive share of the territory in dispute, supposed to contain gold to a large extent. Venezuela had frequently urged the Washington administration to interpose its good offices, towards effecting an arbitration, and the restoration of diplomatic relations, which had been interrupted between both powers. At length, Mr. Olney[2] American Secretary of State despatched a long communication, dated August 7th 1895, and addressed to Mr. Bayard[3] the Ambassador in London for presentation to Lord Salisbury, British Premier and Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs. In it he stated, when every new alleged instance of British aggression upon Venezuelan territory had been brought under its notice, the United States government had made it clear to Great Britain and to the world, that as the controversy was one in which both its honour and its interests were involved, a definite decision was required upon the point, whether Great Britain would consent or decline to submit the Venezuelan boundary question in its entirety to impartial arbitration. It was requested likewise, that the decision should be communicated at such an early date as might enable Mr. Cleveland to lay the whole subject before Congress in his next annual Message. Nevertheless, in very ambiguous and vague diplomatic words, Lord Salisbury impugned the Monroe doctrine, and its applicability to the existing state of affairs; while on the 26th of November he declared, that her Majesty's government could not "consent to entertain or to submit to the arbitration of another power, or of foreign jurists, however eminent, claims based on the extravagant pretentions of Spanish officials in the last century, and involving the transfer of large numbers of British subjects, who have for many years enjoyed the settled rule of a British colony to that government of a different race and language, whose political system is subject to frequent disturbances, and whose institutions as yet too often afford very inadequate protection to life and property." These very unsatisfactory replies caused the President, in his annual Message addressed to Congress on the 3rd of December, to disprove Lord Salisbury's view of the Monroe doctrine. Moreover, the English Prime Minister wrote to Mr. Olney on the 7th of December, refusing to submit the question to arbitration. In a subsequent Message, on the 17th of the same month, the President recommended that measures should be taken to determine with sufficient certainty the true divisional line between the Republic of Venezuela and of British Guiana. The Message and the documents accompanying it were sent to the Committee on Foreign Relations, and the President's recommendation was approved by both Houses of Congress. Subsequently,

[2] Richard Olney was born in Oxford Mass, September 15th 1835. In 1859 he was admitted to the bar in his native State, and in 1874 he served in the Massachusetts legislature. In 1895 he became Secretary of State in President Cleveland's Cabinet.

[3] Thomas Francis Bayard was born in Wilmington, Del. October 29th 1828, and he became a lawyer in 1851. In 1868 he was elected to the United States Senate, and in 1885 he was appointed Secretary of State. In 1893, he was appointed First Ambassador to Great Britain. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol. i., p. 199.

three Commissioners[4] were appointed by the Executive to investigate the subject carefully and judicially, giving due weight to all available records, facts and evidences, furnished in support of the respective claims. When their Report had been made, it was announced, that it became a duty of the United States, to resist by every means in their power, and as a wilful aggression upon their rightful interests, the appropriation by Great Britain of any lands, or the exercise of governmental jurisdiction over any territory, which had been determined as rightly belonging to Venezuela.

These proceedings were exceedingly distasteful to the English Ministry, and for some time newspaper rumours were industriously circulated in England that difficulties were likely to arise between both countries which might eventuate in war, and orders were said to have been given for a large increase of ships in the navy, as also for an augmentation of the land forces. However, such a scare was not really warranted by the pacific intentions and prudent policy of the English Cabinet. After a vain endeavour on the part of Lord Salisbury to have an English judicial representation on the subject of claims allowed, both Venezuela and Great Britain laid their respective statements before that Commission appointed by the United States Exhaustive researches into the question of rightful limits on either side ensued.

The long-continued misgovernmnt of her greatest dependency by Spain had produced a wide-spread discontent among the greater part even of her white population in the Island of Cuba.[5] Slavery had been there introduced, and the predominant influences of the African slave-trade were manifested not alone in the miserable condition of the oppressed negro race,[6] but also in the demoralization of their masters, and in the innumerable evils which had been effected in the social life as in the political affairs of that ill-governed Island.[7] Despotic military rule had long prevailed under a Captain-General. In 1762 the English captured Havana; about a year later it was surrendered to the Spaniards. In 1810, during the Peninsular War, Cuba was permitted to send two representatives to the Cortes of Cadiz. A constitution established in Spain enabled the island, in 1820, to return four representatives to the Cortes, but this privilege was suppressed by King Ferdinando VII., in 1823. Soon conspiracies and revolts began to prevail, the most formidable of which had been organized by General

[4] Their names were: David J. Brewer, one of the Justices of the United States Supreme Court (chairman); Andrew Dixon White, Daniel Coit Gilman, Richard H. Alvey, and Frederick R. Coudert.

[5] In 1492 Cuba had been discovered by Christopher Columbus. In 1511 Don Diego Velasquez sailed with four vessels and about 300 men from St. Domingo, and with diabolical cruelty towards the Cacique Hatuey and the native Indians, he effected the conquest of that Island. See Valdes' "Historia de Cuba."

[6] See D. Turnbull's "Cuba, with Notices of Porto-Rico and the Slave Trade"; London, 1840.

[7] That condition of affairs is particularly set forth by Dr. Richard Robert Madden, who resided there for upwards of three years, in his interesting work, "The Island of Cuba: its Resources and Prospects," published in London 1849.

Narciso Lopez,[8] in 1850. He sailed from New Orleans with 400 Americans and Irish-Americans, as also with 200 Cubans. Defeated in battle, he escaped to Key West, in Florida, where he planned another expedition; and on the 12th of August, 1851, having disembarked at Las Pozas, Pinar del Rio, the Spaniards engaged and defeated him. Being captured, he was executed as a common outlaw.[9]

Towards the close of 1868 another revolt took place, which with varying success lasted for ten years. Later still insurrections were planned, but they were speedily suppressed by the Spanish forces. Finally, a rebellion, which had long been threatening, broke out in the province of Santiago Cuba, in the beginning of 1895, when various filibustering expeditions had been fitted out on the United States coast and in South America. Under the leadership of Carlos M. de Cespedes,[10] the two Maceos,[11] Maximo Gomez,[12] and Calixto Garcia Yniguez,[13] bands of insurgents had been raised, and the Cuban Republic was accordingly proclaimed. The Captain-General Calleja demanded large reinforcements from Spain. Having vainly endeavoured to stem the tide of insurrection, he resigned at the end of March, when Marshal Martinez Campos, appointed his successor, brought out 7,000 regular troops from Spain as a reinforcement. Nevertheless, this number was found insufficient to prosecute the guerrilla warfare inaugurated by the rebels, while the tropical heat, yellow fever, dysentery and fatigue soon began to thin the Spanish ranks even more than did the desultory encounters of that campaign. However, fresh reinforcements arrived from Spain; the naval force was largely increased; and at the end of that year, she had nearly 100,000 troops in the island, besides several thousand volunteers.[14]

Towards the close of that year, the elections throughout the States resulted in large majorities for the Republicans; and when the first Session of the fifty-fourth Congress assembled on the 2nd of December,

[8] He was a native of Venezuela and had served under Bolivar; but afterwards he joined the Spanish army, and fought in the Carlist War. There he was made General of Division, and sent to Cuba, where he resigned his commission and subsequently revolted.

[9] See "The American-Spanish War," a History by the War Leaders. Chapter i. "History of former Cuban Wars," by Carlos Garcia Valez, Brigadier-General, pp. 17 to 26. This, one of the latest and best accounts of that war, from the American point of view, was published at Norwich, Conn., 1899, 8vo.

[10] He was a rich Cuban land owner who raised the standard of Cuban independence at Yara on the 10th of October, 1868. The abolition of slavery in the Island was proclaimed on the following 27th of December, when more than half the population joined in that revolution, which then became formidable, although it was not well organised, under the different independent bands and leaders. Nevertheless, the insurgents won several important battles before its suppression.

[11] Generals Antonio and José Maceo. The former was killed in a skirmish in the Havana province.

[12] During the ten years war, he was a distinguished General.

[13] He belonged to a prominent family of merchants, and he was a rich land proprietor.

[14] See "The Annual Register" for the year 1895. New series. Part I., chap. vii, pp. 394, 395.

the whole number of Senators was divided into 43 Republicans, 39 Democrats, and 6 Populists; while in the House of Representatives there were 245 Republicans, 104 Democrats, and 7 Populists. On the 4th of January 1896, the President signed a Proclamation admitting Utah as a State of the Union. The Behring Sea Treaty, negotiated between Mr. Olney Secretary of State, and Sir Julian Pauncefote the British Ambassador, at Washington, in reference to the Seal Fisheries, was ratified by the Senate. Meanwhile, the condition of Cuba had largely engaged the interest of United States' citizens, and their sympathies were generally with the avowed object of the insurbents to establish a Cuban Republic. Resolutions to accord them gelligerent rights passed the Senate in February, by the large majority of 64 to 6; and in the House of Representatives by a vote of 244 to 27, on April 6th, adopted them. Nevertheless, in August the President issued a Proclamation, which commanded the United States citizens to observe neutrality towards Cuba. Again, a Resolution was pressed on the Senate Committee of Foreign Relations to recognise the independence of the Republic of Cuba, and that the United States should use its friendly offices with the Spanish Government to bring the war to a close. Nevertheless, power to recognise the so-called Republic of Cuba rested solely with the Executive, as the Constitution did not vest any such authority in Congress.

A new organization advocating the free coinage of silver had now sprung into existence, and it was denominated the Silverite or Silver Party. During the year 1896, the currency question, and the subject of adopting bi-mettalism, or a solely gold standard, had created much divergency of opinion throughout the States. The party for the free coinage of silver towards the close of the year made a great effort to capture the presidency. However, the contest was fought chiefly, but not solely, on the old lines; the Republican candidate, William M'Kinley[15] of Ohio, as opposed to the Democratic William Jennings Bryan[16]

[15] The McKinlays came from Ireland to America about the middle of the eighteenth century, and from them descended William McKinley, born in Niles, Trumbull Co., Ohio, January 29th, 1843. He volunteered when the Confederate War broke out, and served gallantly in all the early engagements in West Virginia. Subsequently he rose from the rank of private to that of major-brevet at the close of the war, when he adopted the legal profession, and afterwards he was returned to Congress. See Robert P. Porter's "Life of Major McKinley," Cleveland, 1896, as also "Speeches and Addresses of William McKinley," compiled by Joseph P. Smith, New York, 1893.

[16] He came from an Irish ancestor, who settled in Virginia, at an early date, but he was born in Salem, Marion Co., Ill., March 19th, 1860. He was educated at Jacksonville, and afterwards he entered Illinois College. He embraced the legal profession. In 1887 he removed to Lincoln, Nebraska, where his oratorical powers were so highly appreciated, that he was induced to enter upon a political career. He was elected to Congress, where he actively supported the Democratic policy on the tariff. Afterwards he retired from the House of Representatives. In 1894 he became editor of the Omaha "World-Herald" in which he advocated the free coinage of silver See John S. Ogilvie's "Life and Speeches of William J. Bryan," New York, 1896.

of Nebraska, having carried the election by a large majority, on Tuesday, the 3rd of November.[17] Garret A. Hobart,[18] Republican of New Jersey, was elected Vice-President.

When the Second Session of the fifty-fourth Congress assembled on Monday December 7th, President Cleveland's Annual Message discussed the Cuban question, declaring that the Government had intimated to Spain, that if she would grant autonomy to Cuba, the United States should endeavour to find a guarantee. Brief allusion was made to the Venezuela boundary question as having been fairly settled, while the negotiations for a general arbitration treaty with Great Britain were stated to be far advanced. However, amendments afterwards proposed in the Senate Committee on Foreign Relations reduced the original terms of the treaty to a complete nullity. Notwithstanding, the Venezuela Arbitration Treaty was signed at Washington, February 2nd 1897,[19] and the final ratifications were exchanged on the 15th of June following, with the result, that Great Britain was obliged to relinquish the large territory to which she had preferred a claim.[20]

On the 4th of March 1897, Messrs. McKinley and Hobart were duly inaugurated as President and Vice-President respectively. The former delivered his address to a vast multitude from the great platform of the Capitol. In this, he gave special prominence to his protectionist views, deprecating any further increase of debt, and stating that a sufficient revenue ought to be raised by tariff on foreign products to serve American interests and labour. He advocated non-interference in the affairs of foreign governments, and arbitration for the settlement of international, local and individual differences. He also recommended a revision of the coinage, banking and currency laws. The following were his Cabinet nominations, confirmed by the Senate, viz. For Secretary of State, John Sherman[21] of Ohio; Secretary of the

[17] The total popular vote was 13,875,653: of these votes, Mr. McKinley received 7,123,234; Mr. Bryan 6,492,365; Mr. Levering, Prohibition candidate, 125,485 votes; General John M. Palmer, Gold Democratic Candidate, 125,037 votes. Of the electoral college votes, Mr. McKinley obtained 271, and Mr. Bryan 176, thus giving a Republican majority of 95 votes.

[18] Born in Long Branch, N.J., June 3rd, 1844. He applied himself to the practice of law in his native State, where he was elected to the House of Assembly in 1873, and from 1877 to 1882 he served as State Senator, presiding over the latter body during the last two years. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," vol. vi. Supplement, pp. 141, 142.

[19] "The arbitration it was thought would probably occupy about eighteen months."—"The Annual Register," for the year 1897. New Series, Part i. Foreign and Colonial History, chap. vii. America, sect. i. United States, p. 387.

[20] The contested lines of territory between Venezuela and Great Britain are very distinctly shown, with the delimitations fixed on a Map of the Venezuela-Guiana Boundary Award, 1899, prefixed to J. Scott Keltie's "Statesman's Year-Book" for 1900.

[21] Brother to the celebrated General William Tecumseh Sherman, and himself a distinguished statesman, born in Lancaster, Ohio, May 10th, 1823. In early life he took to engineering, but subsequently he began the study of law, and was called to the bar in 1844. Subsequently he entered Congress, where he had a prominent position as financier.

Treasury, Lynam J. Gage[22] of Illinois; Secretary of War, Russell A. Alger[23] of Michigan; Secretary of the Interior, Cornelius N. Bliss[24] of New York; Secretary of the Navy, John D. Long[25] of Massachusetts; Secretary of Agriculture, James Wilson[26] of Iowa; Attorney-General, Joseph McKenna[27] of California; and Postmaster-General, James A. Gary[28] of Maryland. In the Senate the nominal state of parties was as follows: 46 Republicans, 34 Democrats, 5 Populists, 3 Independents, and the two Neveda senators, the nucleus of the silver party. In the House of Representatives, there were 202 recognised Republicans, 130 Democrats, 21 Populists, 1 Fusionist, and 3 of the Silver party. A Special Session was called by the President to adjust and increase the tariff; and in April that Bill passed the House by 205 to 122 votes; in the Senate it was considerably modified in details; and being signed on the 24th of July by the President, the new tariff Bill was passed into law.

Meantime, the war between Spain and her rebellious colony continued, General Weyler having been sent out from Spain to conduct it, and Marshal Campos[29] having been recalled. Nevertheless, several of the provinces were in a state of revolt, and the plantations were devas-

On the resignation of Salmon P. Chase, Sherman was elected in his place in the Senate, 1861. As Secretary of the Treasury under President Hayes, he accumulated gold to such an extent until on the 10th of January, 1879, there was practically no demand for it in preference to the legal tender notes. Soon after the declaration of war against Spain he received the office of Secretary of State in May, 1898. Mr. Sherman has published "Selected Speeches and Reports on Finance and Taxation 1859-1878," New York, 1879, 8vo. See Rev. Sherlock A. Bronson's "John Sherman, what he has said and done: Life and Public Services," Columbus, Ohio, 1880.

[22] Born in Demyter, Madison Co., N.Y., June 28th, 1836. His after life was devoted to banking, until appointed Secretary of the Treasury in 1897.

[23] He was born in Lafayette, Medina Co., Ohio, February 27th, 1836. He was called to the bar in 1859. As a volunteer he served bravely in the Confederate War, and rose to the rank of Major-General. He was Governor of Michigan from 1885 to 1887.

[24] He was born in Fall River, Massachusetts, January 26th, 1833, and he followed mercantile pursuits to the date of his appointment, March 5th, 1897.

[25] He was born in Buckfield, Oxford Co., Maine, October 27th, 1838. He was admitted to the bar in 1861, and afterwards he embraced a political career, serving in Congress to the date of his appointment.

[26] He was born in Ayrshire, Scotland, August 16th, 1835. With his family he removed to Connecticut in 1852, and afterwards he went to Iowa in 1855, when he engaged in farming. From 1890 to 1897, he was professor of agriculture in the Agricultural College at Ames.

[27] Born in Philadelphia, August 10th, 1843. When 10 years old his parents moved to California, where he became a lawyer, and in 1892, he was appointed a U. S. circuit judge. In February, 1897, he was selected by President McKinley for a place in the Cabinet. John W. Griggs of New Jersey became Attorney-General on the promotion of Mr. McKenna later in the year to the vacancy caused by the retirement of Justice Field.

[28] He was born in Uncasville, Conn., October 22nd, 1833, and educated at Allegheny College, Pennsylvania. He removed to Maryland in 1840, and there engaged in manufacturing, banking and commercial pursuits.

[29] At Peralejo, on the 24th of December, 1895, he met a disastrous defeat from the hands of Gomez, one of the insurgent leaders.

tated by the rebels in various places throughout Cuba. Public feeling in the United States had become generally excited in sympathy with them; and in May a resolution was adopted in the Senate to recognise the Cubans as belligerents, by a vote of 41 to 14. However, this was opposed to the President's wishes, as he expressed himself in favour of mediation, but not of intervention. Moreover, during the summer, several war vessels were ordered to the Florida coast to enforce the neutrality laws, and to prevent filibustering expeditions from leaving the United States. This was found to be a work of no small difficulty, as popular feeling had been so greatly excited against the continuance of Spanish domination, and in favour of Cuban independence.

Finding their efforts to subdue the insurgents quite ineffectual, the new Spanish ministry, under Senor Sagasta,[30] resolved on granting autonomy to Cuba, and accordingly General Weyler,[31] whose military severities had rendered him highly unpopular in the island, was recalled to Spain. Marshal Blanco was then appointed Governor, and on his arrival at Havana, he issued a conciliatory proclamation to the Cubans on the 30th of October, in which he promised them self-government under the suzerainty of Spain. This offer was extended also to the adjoining island of Porto Rico. He declared, that the Cubans should enjoy all rights accorded by the Spanish constitution without limit of any kind. Notwithstanding, those proposals were rejected by the insurgents, while war between them and the Spanish authorities continued. When the fifty-fifth Congress met on Monday December 6th, much of the President s Message was devoted to the Cuban question, and in it he declared, that Spain should be allowed time to make a fair trial of her new policy, and if a righteous peace could not be secured, the United States reserved the need for future action. The President also dealt with the currency question, and recommended plans for protecting the gold reserve, by a reform of the national banks, which should not be permitted to issue notes below ten dollars in amount, and which issues they should be required to redeem in gold.

On the 15th of February 1898, the destruction—with great loss of life—of the United States battleship, Maine, while lying in the harbour of Havana,[32] awakened suspicion of its having been caused by a submarine mine, and great commotion was created among the people, when an investigation ordered by the government reported the explosion to have been due to external violence. This announcement aroused intense public indignation, and it afforded the pretext—whether justly or other-

[30] Prime Minister of Spain.

[31] Don Valeriano y Nicolan Weyler was born in Barcelona, Spain, February 6th, 1840. He entered the army while very young, and he was military attaché of Spain serving under General Sheridan during the American Civil War. In 1873, he took part in the Carlist War, and in 1889, he was appointed Captain-general of the Philippine Islands. In 1896, he was sent to Cuba to quell the outbreak of the insurgents there, but he was recalled in 1898.

[32] See "The American-Spanish War," a History by the War Leaders. chap. iii. The Destruction of the Maine, written by Lieut. Geo. F. W. Holman, U.S.N., pp. 91 to 102.

wise—for an outcry against the Spaniards, which soon forced attention on the government and both Houses of Congress.

After an earnest deliberation of nine days, at a conference on the 19th of April, the following joint resolutions were agreed to by the Senate[33] and House of Representatives[34]:—"*First*, that the people of the Island of Cuba are, and of right ought to be, free and independent. *Secondly*, that it is the duty of the United States to demand, and the government of the United States does hereby demand, that the government of Spain at once relinquish its authority and government in the Island of Cuba, and withdraw its land and naval forces from Cuba and Cuban waters. *Thirdly*, that the President of the United States be and hereby he is directed and empowered to use the entire land and naval forces of the United States, and to call into actual service of the United States the militia of the several States to such extent as may be necessary to carry these resolutions into effect. *Fourthly*, that the United States hereby disclaims any disposition or intention to exercise sovereignty, jurisdiction or control over said Island, except for the pacification thereof, and asserts its determination when that is accomplished to leave the government and control of the Island to its people." These resolutions were approved by the President on the next day, and were accepted by Spain as a formal declaration of war.

Immediately afterwards, the President proclaimed a blockade of the northern Cuban Coast, and called for volunteers, having sent a message to Congress on the 25th of April, recommending its adoption of the state of war, and obtaining approval to use all the armed forces of the nation for its prosecution. The initial call for 125,000 volunteers was instantly responded to, as also the second call of May 25th, for 75,000 additional volunteers; the regular army was increased, as also the navy, both in men and vessels; provision was made for coast and harbour defences; and all the scientific requirements for modern warfare were provided. A three per cent. popular loan was issued to defray the war expenses, of which $200,000,000 was offered and promptly taken, preference being given to the smaller bids, no single allotment exceeding $5,000.

As the outbreak of war had been anticipated, the United States was prepared in advance, and the first encounter took place on the 27th of April, when the blockading squadron was off the coast of Cuba. It made a reconnaisance in force at Matanzas,[35] shelled the harbour forts, and demolished several new works in course of construction. On the 22nd of April, Rear Admiral Sampson[36] with his fleet sailed from Key

[33] By a vote of 42 to 35.

[34] By a vote of 311 to 6.

[35] A city and commercial port on the north coast of Cuba, and 52 miles east of Havana. The city is situated on a gentle eminence over the harbour.

[36] William Thomas Sampson was born in Palmyra, Wayne Co. N.Y., February 9th, 1840. His father emigrated from the North of Ireland in 1836, and settled there, following the humble occupation of day-labourer on the Erie Canal. His son, William Thomas, was the eldest of eight children, and at first he had but a common school education. However, through the interest of Congressman E.

West Flor. with the view of discovering and engaging a Spanish fleet reported to have been destined for service in American waters. The batteries at Cardenas[37] were unsuccessfully attacked on the 11th of May, by the cruiser Wilmington and by the torpedo boat Winslow. These were repelled by the Spanish garrison.

From the distant Pacific soon came the intelligence that the American fleet, under Commodore George Dewey,[38] and lying for some weeks at Hong Kong, had proceeded to the Philippine Islands, belonging to Spain.[39] The Spanish fleet was then collected in the harbour of Manilla,[40] the capital of that group. Moving into the harbour at daybreak, on the 1st of May, after a few hours' engagement, Commodore Dewey effected the total destruction of the enemy's vessels, consisting of ten warships and a transport.[41] Not a single life was lost on board the American fleet; the wounded only numbered seven, nor was a single ship materially damaged. The land forces were organized at a later period, and sent from California in detachments, which were to act under the command of Major-General Merritt.[42] The troops were landed to take position near Manilla, which lay exposed before the guns of the army and the navy. After a resolute defence, the city was surrendered to the Americans, August 13th, when they took possession.[43] However, native insurgents took the place of the

D. Morgan he entered the naval academy in 1857, and graduated with distinction in 1861. In the following year he was created lieutenant. He served on board the Patapsco, when that vessel was blown up by a torpedo in Charleston harbour, January 15th, 1865. Distinguished for his scientific, mechanical, and naval acquirements, he was employed in various capacities by the United States Government. On the 26th of March, 1898, he was put in command of the North Atlantic fleet, and afterwards attained the rank of Rear-Admiral.

[37] A town 43 miles east of Mantanzas, on the north coast of Cuba.

[38] He was born in Montpellier, Vermont, 26th of December, 1837. At the age of fifteen he entered the Military Academy at Norwich, but afterwards he was transferred to the Naval Academy at Annapolis. He was assigned a midshipman on board the steam-frigate Wabash, and at the outbreak of the Civil War, in 1860, he was commissioned Lieutenant to serve with the Gulf squadron. He was on board the Mississippi, when the river so called was forced by the Federal fleet before the capture of New Orleans. During that war and afterwards he served in several capacities. On the 30th November 1897, he was assigned to sea-service, and detailed to the Asiatic squadron, of which he assumed command January 3rd 1898. See "Life of George Dewey, Rear Admiral of U. S. N., and Dewey Family History," by Adelbert M. Dewey and Louis Marinus Dewey, Westfield, Mass., 1898.

[39] See "The Spanish-American War," a History by the War Leaders, chap. iv. "The Naval Battle of Manilla Bay," by Lieut. C. G. Calkins, U. S. N., pp 103 to 128.

[40] The bay so called has a circuit of 45 leagues. Though regularly fortified, the city could not long be defended against any considerable and well organized force. The people of the Philippine Islands are both industrious and ingenious.

[41] See Thomas J. Vivian's "With Dewey at Manilla." New York, 1898.

[42] He had served with great distinction in many great battles during the Confederate War, and he was appointed Major-General in 1895.

[43] The articles of capitulation concluded with these words: "This city, its inhabitants, its churches, and religious worship, its educational establishments, and its private property of all descrip-

Spaniards throughout the islands, and required other expeditions, with considerable reinforcements, to ensure the absolute occupancy of the entire group. The native leader, Aguinaldo, who had already proclaimed himself president of the Philippine Republic, assumed control of an independent government, for which he had organized executive and legislative departments. This assumption of authority was repudiated by the United States General commanding, and steps were at once taken to inaugurate a government of military occupancy.[44]

While naval demonstrations were made at several exposed points on the Cuba coast, a special expedition was directed by the Admiral in chief command against Porto Rico.[45] On May 12th a squadron shelled San Juan,[46] but without any material result. Meantime, the Spaniards had assembled a powerful squadron at Cape Verde Islands before the outbreak of hostilities. It was under the command of Admiral Cervera, and for some time he was known to have been cruizing in the Caribbean Sea; his erratic movements caused much anxiety to the naval and military forces on board the American blockading ships. About the 19th of May, he entered the harbour of Santiago.[47] This fact had been ascertained by Admiral Sampson, who returned to Key West in his flag-ship, after a vain search off the northern shores of Cuba. A flying squadron under command of Commodore Schley[48] at once sailed with instructions to establish a blockade at Cienfuegos, it being supposed, that Cervera would land there to transport munitions of war by rail thence to Havana. Admiral Sampson, who had sailed from Key West on the 21st, sent despatches to Schley, that he should blockade Santiago, and although his fleet wanted a sufficient coal supply the order was obeyed. Sampson arrived off the mouth of that harbour on the 1st of June, and then assumed command of the combined fleet.

The insurrection in Cuba had been heroically carried on by Calixto Garcia especially in that eastern department. The strength of Spain lay chiefly in Havana and the western district, while the chief towns

tions, are placed under the special safeguard of the faith and honour of the American army."

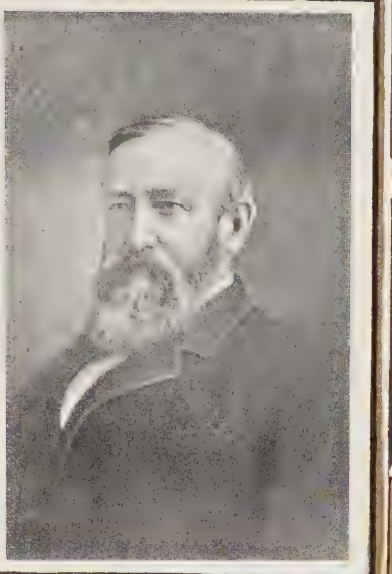
[44] See "The American-Spanish War," a History by the War Leaders, chap. xiii. "The Manilla Campaign," by Major-Gen. Wesley Merritt, U. S. A., pp. 263 to 279.

[45] An island in the West Indies, and the fourth in size of the Antilles, situated about 60 miles to the east of Hayti. The soil is rich and productive. It is beautifully diversified with woods, hills, and valleys, as also well watered with streams from the mountains.

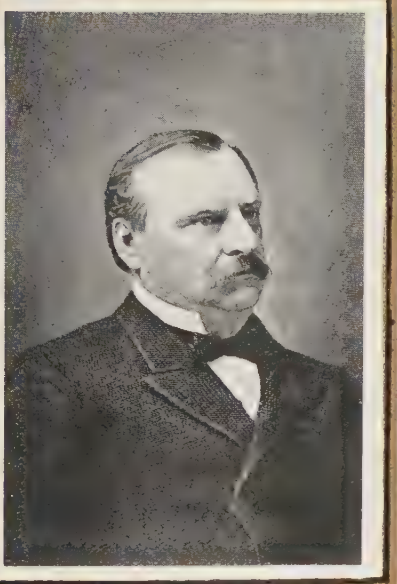
[46] The capital of Porto Rico, situated on a peninsula off the north coast, and having a good harbour.

[47] On the southern coast of Cuba.

[48] Winfield Scott Schley was born in Frederick Co. Maryland, October 9th 1839. In 1856 he was appointed a cadet, and he graduated in the U. S. Naval Academy. He served in several engagements during the Confederate War, and subsequently he was in various important positions. In 1888 he was promoted Captain of the Baltimore, and early in 1898 he attained the rank of Commodore. When war was declared against Spain, he was selected to command the flying squadron, with the Brooklyn as his flag-ship, and on it he remained during the continuance of hostilities. See Appleton's "Cyclopœdia of American Biography," Vol. VII. Supplement, p. 241.



BENJAMIN HARRISON
Twenty-third President of the U.S.



GROVER CLEVELAND
Twenty-second President of the U.S



GEORGE DEWEY,
Admiral of the U.S. Navy



WILLIAM McKINLEY,
Twenty-fourth President of the U.S

were held by strong garrisons. The Cubans in April and May were in possession of the open country and smaller villages, and now they had arranged to co-operate with the American army and navy expected in that quarter. Orders had been sent to the Spanish Commanders of the Manzanillo, Holguin, and Guantanamo divisions, that an endeavour must be made to relieve the blockaded city of Santiago. Meantime, communications had passed between the War Department of the United States and the Cuban leaders as to the respective parts that should be taken. The latter were directed to oppose a strong column of Spanish troops approaching from the direction of Manzanillo, and this service was very effectively performed, although it was not found practicable to prevent their junction with those in the beleaguered garrison.

On the 10th of June, a heavy protecting fire from the American fleet enabled 600 marines to land in Guantanamo bay, and after severe fighting they took possession of that station. The Spaniards made desperate attempts to dislodge them, but in vain. On the 16th, additional forces were landed, and these threw up entrenchments. In order to achieve any decisive advantage, it was necessary to land a considerable invading army, and accordingly under Major-General Shafter[49] such a force had been prepared. Under great difficulties the troops landed after his previous conference with the Cuban General Garcia, and about fifteen miles east of Santiago from the 22nd to the 24th of June. Then Shafter marched to invest that city. On the 24th the first serious engagement took place, the Spaniards offering a very stubborn opposition. For some weeks the Americans after landing occupied an entrenched position awaiting the unloading and transportation of subsistence stores. On the 30th of June, General Shafter personally reconnoitered the country about Santiago and completed his plan for attack. The position of El Caney north-east of Santiago was held in force by the Spaniards, and General Lawton's division[50] was ordered to begin the attack there early next morning. This was to receive support from other divisions. By nightfall the United States' forces had advanced within five miles of the city. On the 1st of July, the outposts were carried, after a sanguinary engagement resolutely contested by the Spaniards, and on the next day the investment was completed, the navy co-operating by shelling the town and coast forts. In like manner, the Spanish navy

[49] William Rufus Shafter was born in Galesburg, Kalamazoo Co. Mich, October 16th 1835. When the Confederate war broke out he enlisted and became First Lieutenant in the 7th Michigan infantry. He saw service in the eastern and middle states. He became Colonel of the 17th U. S. regiment of Colonial infantry in April 1864. On the 3rd of May 1893, he was promoted to the rank of Brigadier-General. On the 4th of May 1898 he was ranked Major-General of Volunteers, and assigned to command the troops sent out on the 14th of June against Eastern Cuba.

[50] He was born in Manhattan Ohio, March 17th 1843. He served as volunteer in the Confederate War, and attained the rank of Lieut.-Colonel. On the breaking out of war with Spain, he was made a Brigadier-General, May 4th 1898 and he was in command of the second division of the Fifth Army Corps during the Santiago Campaign.

sought to shell the American troops on the extreme right, while one thousand of Cervera's marines assisted in the trenches during the covering defence.[51] Overtures were made to the Spanish General Toral on the 3rd by General Shafter for surrender of the city, but those were rejected. The squadron directed by Commodore Schley bombarded the forts, which guarded the mouth of Santiago harbour.[52]

On the 3rd of July, about 9h. 35m. a.m., the Spanish fleet attempting to leave the harbour was met by the American squadron under command of Commodore Sampson. He had stationed the ships in a sort of semi-circle by day, about six miles off the harbour's mouth, and towards night he closed that circuit by a nearer approach, using search-lights to prevent the possibility of escape. When the leading Spanish vessel, the Maria Teresa, bearing the flag of Admiral Cervera, was observed steaming out of the channel, the Iowa gave the signal. The other blockading ships closed in and opened fire. At this time, Admiral Sampson had been temporarily absent, being on his way to hold a conference with General Shafter. The Spanish ships on emerging from the port in columns stood to the westward, using their broadsides and firing with great rapidity. About 10h. 25m.smoke and flames began to show from the Maria Teresa and the Oquendo, both turning and standing for the beach. At 11 o'clock, the Vizcaya turned in flames towards the shore. The Spanish torpedo boats Pluton was sunk and the Furor blown up, when the battle being now practically ended, the American boats were despatched to rescue the vanquished crews. The Colon endeavoured to escape, but being overhauled by the American ships, the captain then struck his colours and sank his vessel, at 1h. 15m. p.m.

After this engagement, which lasted nearly three hours, all the enemy's ships were destroyed, four hundred lives were lost, while the Admiral and over 1,300 of his men were taken prisoners. Only one man was killed on the American side, and one was seriously wounded. Although the ships were repeatedly struck, not a single vessel was materially damaged.[53] This crushing blow to the Spanish sea-forces in the very beginning of the war was a catastrophe which was irretrievable. After the destruction of Admiral Cervera's fleet, the Spanish General José Toral in command of the garrison held out for some days, until on the arrival of Major-General Miles with a large reinforcement of United States troops and without means for escape, after some protracted negotion, he surrendered Santiago and the whole eastern province of Cuba, with about 24,000 Spaniards, on the 14th of July. Major-General Shafter

[51] The American losses during the battles from July 1st to the 3rd, and in the actions around Santiago from the 10th to the 12th, were 22 officers killed and 222 enlisted men; 93 officers and 1,288 enlisted men wounded.

[52] See the maps and plans, illustrating the Spanish-American War, in Vice-Admiral P. H. Colomb's "Naval Warfare: its ruling Principles and Practice historically treated."—London, Roy. 8vo.

[53] See "The American-Spanish War," a History by the War Leaders. Chap. vii. The Naval Battle of Santiago, by Capt. Robley D. Evans, U.S.A., pp. 154 to 164.

entered the city on the 17th, and afterwards devoted himself to the restoration of order in the newly-conquered territory.[54]

Meanwhile General Miles had been engaged in organizing an expedition for the occupation of Porto Rico, and he arrived at Santiago on the 11th of July. On the 25th, with a considerable body of troops conveyed by a fleet under Captain Higginson, he landed at Guancia. Reinforcements that soon afterwards arrived brought the American army to about 17,000 men. On the 27th he entered Ponce, one of the most important ports in the island. Thence General Miles directed his operations, and after some successful encounters with the Spaniards, in a short time the whole island was reduced to submission. At most of the places the Americans were joyfully received by the inhabitants, who expressed gratitude for their deliverance from Spanish rule.[55]

The annihilation of Admiral Cervera's fleet, followed by the capitulation of Santiago, convinced the Spanish Government that it could not longer hope to continue the struggle with success. Accordingly, the French ambassador M. Cambon, allowed by his government to act during the war as Spain's friendly representative, made overtures for peace; and on the 26th of July, the Duke of Almovodar the Spanish Minister of State, invited the United States to set forth the terms on which peace could be made. On the 30th of July, a reply was received, and those terms were announced. After some hesitation, they were embodied in a protocol, accepted by the Spanish Ministry, and signed by M. Cambon as their commissioner, as also by the Secretary of State for the Union at Washington, on the 12th of August. It was arranged, that Spain should relinquish all claim of sovereignty over and title to Cuba; that she should cede to the United States the island of Porto Rico and other islands then under Spanish sovereignty in the West Indies, as also an island in the Ladrones[56] to be selected by the Washington government. A joint commission was to arrange for the evacuation of Cuba, Porto Rico, and other Spanish islands in the West Indies; commissioners on each side were to meet at Paris not later than October 1st, to consider and decide on a definite treaty of peace. The sixth and last article provided that on the signature of the protocol, hostilities should cease, and notification thereof be given as soon as possible to the commanders of the respective military and naval forces. No indemnity was demanded from Spain for war expenses. Moreover, it was determined, that the United States should occupy and hold the

[54] See *Ibid* Chap. ix. The Santiago Campaign, by Major-General Wm. R. Shafter, U.S.V., Commanding-General, pp. 179 to 198.

[55] See *ibid.*, chap. x. "Miles's Campaign in Puerto Rico," By Captain Henry B. Whitney, U.S.A., assistant Adjutant-General, pp. 199 to 218.

[56] The Ladrones, or Marianne Archipelago, extend from the southern extremity of China into the northern Pacific Ocean, and are situated between 11° and 21° N. lat., and nearly upon the meridian of 140° E. long. The group contains a great number of small islands, with a few of greater importance. Thase islands in general bear a great resemblance to the Philippines. See

city of Manilla, pending the conclusion of a treaty to settle the control, disposition and government of the Philippines.

The fertile, thickly-wooded and well-watered Island of Guam, the largest in the Marianne or Ladrone Archipelago, was ceded by Spain in 1898,[57] and it will probably be chiefly used by the United States as a coaling station for the navy. In 1898 also the annexation of Hawaii, and the acquisition of territory through war with Spain, brought new and great responsibilities upon the United States.[58] In accordance with a resolution of Congress July 7th, the Hawaiin islands were formally annexed to the United States, and called the Territory of Hawaii on the 12th of August. For military purposes the islands have been attached to the department of California.[59] In all the encounters of the Spanish-American war, the land forces of the United States lost in killed 280, and in wounded 1,557; the navy lost in killed 17, and in wounded 68. During the entire campaign by land and sea, with the exception of the Merrimac's mysterious destruction, not a single ship of war, transport, gun, flag or prisoner was lost or taken by the enemy. Over 100,000 volunteers were mustered out of service, and the corresponding number of generals and general staff officers were honourably discharged before that year had closed.

Pursuant to the protocol, William R. Day,[60] Cushman K. Davis,[61] William P. Frye,[62] George Gray,[63] and Whitelaw Reid,[64] were selected as Commissioners of Peace for the United States. They met five similarly constituted Commissioners on the part of Spain,[65] at Paris on the 1st of October. After some discussion, the articles were agreed upon,[66] military occupation and government of Cuba, Porto Rico and the Philippines being continued, when they had been evacuated by the Spaniards. The Treaty of Peace was signed by the Commissioners of the United States and of Spain at Paris, on the 10th of December 1898. During the continuance of the war, the military preparations had been considered as greatly inadequate to the objects desired, and especially the commissariat and sanitary management in the camps was found to be defective; wherefore yielding to complaints throughout the country, the President appointed a War Inquiry Commission to investigate and discover the defects of organization and administration.[67]

James Bell's "System of Geography, Popular and Scientific," Vol. vi., Australia, chap. xi, p. 491.

[57] See J. Scott Keltie's "Statesman's Year Book for 1900," Part ii., United States Dependencies, p. 1200.

[58] See the "Annual Register for the year 1898," Part i., Foreign and Colonial History. United States, chap. vii., p. 361.

[59] See J. Scott Keltie's "Statesman's Year Book for 1900," Part ii., United States Dependencies, p. 1193.

[60] Secretary of State.

[61] Senator from Minnesota.

[62] Senator from Maine.

[63] Senator from Delaware.

[64] From New York.

[65] These were Senors Montero-Rios, Abarzuza, De Villaurrutia, De Garnica and General Cerero.

[66] The United States Commissioners would not consent to assume any part of the Cuban debt, or to give up the Government funds in the Cuban State banks.

[67] During the fiscal year ending June 30, 1898, 229,299 immigrants arrived in

Taxes had been imposed to cover the cost of the Spanish War, and these levies resulted in large accumulations of money to the Treasury.

The third and final session of the fifty-fifth Congress began Monday, December 5th, and on that day, President McKinley's annual Message was read in both Houses. He reviewed the causes and events of the War with Spain, declaring also that it should be necessary to direct the people of Cuba to form a government for themselves eventually, and that in the meantime a military occupation would be continued until complete tranquillity had been established in the island. He desired close and reciprocal commercial relations established between Cuba and the United States. As to the construction of a Nicaragua Canal, he regarded it as indispensable, and that the United States should have complete control over it. He asked for authority to appoint a Commission to study the commercial and industrial conditions of China in relation to United States' interests. He earnestly hoped for the removal of all sources of irritation and discord between the Republic and Canada. The President said there was obvious need for legislation on the currency question,[68] and that the new external relations of the country demanded a prompt adoption of maritime policy, by the addition of three new battle-ships and twelve cruizers to the Navy, as also an increase of the Army to 100,000 men. The foreign commerce of 1898 was phenomenal, while the exportation of field and factory products exceeded in value that of any previous year, and the grand total of exports was the largest ever recorded. For the first time in the history of foreign commerce the exports of domestic manufactures were greater than the imports of foreign manufactures. The total exports were double the imports, a condition of affairs hitherto unknown, the trade balance in favour of the United States being more than twice as great as that in any former year. The President and his Cabinet announced an intention of retaining control over the Philippines under the guise of protection;[69] while the Democratic party declared opposition to annexation and a foreign expansion policy.[70] The Secretary of the Treasury submitted to the House of Representatives estimates of expenditure for the financial year ending June 1900, amounting to $631,081,994; and a Bill to define and fix a standard of value maintaining parity of all money forms issued and coined in the United States was introduced.

the United States. The revenue from all sources was $494,333,953,75, while the expenditure was $532,381,201,35, showing a deficit of $38,047,247,60.

[68] He urged, that the Secretary of the Treasury should be empowered by all possible means to support the existing gold standard, and to maintain parity in the value of gold and silver coins.

[69] It was announced, that the number of United States officers and men then in the Philippine Islands was over 65,500. See Hazell's "Annual for 1901, a Cyclopædic Record of Men and Topics of the Day." Vol. xvi., p. 659, London, 1901, 8vo.

[70] See the "Annual Register for the year 1898." Part i., Foreign and Colonial History, chap. vii., pp. 361 to 370.

CHAPTER XLVI.

State of Parties at the Opening of Congress in 1899—Treaty of Peace with Spain ratified by the United States Senate—The Venezuelan Arbitrators' Award—Temporary and provisional Boundary Line between Alaska and Canada—The Island of Tutuila and other Islands of the Samoan Group ceded to the United States—The President's Message—Death of Vice-President Hobart—Regulations for Cuba and the Philippine Islands—Revocation of the Clayton-Bulwer Treaty by the Senate—Pacific Proposals of United States Government for Peace between Great Britain and the Boer Republics rejected by the English Ministry—McKinley's re-election as President, and subsequent Message on December 4th, 1900—The Nicaragua Canal—Capture of Aguinaldo—Submission of the Philippine Chiefs—President M'Kinley's Assassination—Theodore Roosevelt succeeds as President—His Inaugural Message—Conclusion.

AT the opening of the United States Congress in 1899, the Republicans had a small majority in the Senate[1], but a large one in the House of Representatives.[2] The Republican Senator from Maine, William F. Frye was President *pro tempore* of the Senate,[3] and Thomas B. Read, also from Maine, was Speaker of the House of Representatives. A Bill passed the latter House for permission to raise a regular army of 100,000 men; but, in the Senate, an amendment was proposed by the Hon. Mr. Gorman to reduce the strength of the army after July 1st, 1901, to its numbers before the Spanish-American War—about 27,000. The Bill finally passed the Senate by 55 votes to 13. Among the Bills which failed to become Acts was one to establish a territorial government in Hawaii. The military Court of Inquiry met at Washington, D.C., on the 17th of February, to examine the charges preferred respecting the supply of improper food to troops operating in Cuba and Porto Rico during the Spanish War. The Report was submitted to the President in due course, and it censured General Miles for not instantly taking the most effective measures to correct the wrong, as also the Commissary-General and Assistant-Commissary-General for buying enormous quantities of food, untried as to quality and unknown; but further proceedings were not taken, notwithstanding very general popular condemnation of the Court's finding. By statutory limitation, on March 4th, the fifty-fifth Congress expired at noon.

The Treaty of Peace with Spain was ratified by the United Stater Senate on February 6th, 1899, but only on April 11th were the ratifications exchanged and certified. Meantime the Philippinos, under the leadership of Aguinaldo, began a war of resistance, and threatened to

[1] The Senate was composed of 46 Republicans, 34 Democrats, and 10 Independents, not belonging to either party.

[2] The House of Representatives was composed of 246 Republicans, 134 Democrats, including 15 classed as Fusionists, and 16 Independents.

[3] In consequence of the Vice-President's death, which happened within the year.

continue it at all costs until complete independence was secured. In January the President had issued a Commission[4] to visit the Philippines and to report on a future government for the Islands. In the month of April their proclamation appeared in eleven articles, which announced that the United States Government aimed to promote the well-being, prosperity, and happiness of the Philippine people, their elevation and advancement, their civil rights to be guaranteed and protected, and their religious freedom to be assured. However, on the 15th of that month the Philippinos issued a reply, in which they repudiated American protection and proclaimed their firm resolve to fight for a distinctive independence. Meantime, the war continued, and several engagements took place between them and the United States troops. From Manilla General Otis,[5] who had chief direction of the movements, sent General Henry Lawton, the second in command, on an expedition in April and May, during which he had twenty-two engagements, and captured twenty-two towns, yet without achieving any very decisive results. In September Admiral Dewey was recalled, and on his arrival at New York he was received with great demonstrations of respect and rejoicing, which were renewed when he visited Washington, where distinguished honours were accorded him by the President and by Congress.

In the month of July reciprocity treaties in relation to Jamaica, Bermuda and Trinidad were signed by France, Great Britain, and the United States. Vexatious questions arose, through Great Britain's action in respect of neutral cargoes, not contraband in their own nature, and shipped to Portuguese South Africa, on the score of their probable or ultimate destination being the Boer States. Such consignments in British ships, by which alone direct trade was kept up between American ports and Southern Africa were seized in application of the Municipal Law, prohibiting a British vessel from trading with the enemy without regard to any contraband character of goods carried, while cargoes shipped to Delagoa Bay in neutral bottoms were arrested, on the ground of their alleged destination being an enemy's country. To this proceeding, objection was taken by the United States, when the British Government agreed to purchase outright all such goods shown to be the actual property of the American citizens. Thus, the difficulty was tided over, but this compromise gave great dissatisfaction and offence to the people generally, because for a money consideration the Government submitted to the English pretension, that they have any

[4] It consisted of the following members, John G. Schurman, Dean C. Worcester, Charles Denby, Admiral George Dewey and General E. S. Otis.

[5] Elwell Stephen Otis was born in Frederick City Md. March 25th 1838. Having been admitted to the bar he volunteered in 1862 as captain in the 140th New York Infantry, of which regiment he became colonel in 1864. He served afterwards in the regular army, chiefly in the Western territories. In May 1898, he was sent as second in command to the Philippines. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography," Vol iv., p. 605.

right as belligerents to prevent the trade of neutrals with a neutral territory, and because so nearly trenching on the former abandoned claim of search.

The Venezuelan arbitrators delivered their award on October 3rd, 1899. It practically confirmed the line drawn on Schomburgk's Map; but to secure the internal navigation it gave Venezuela, Barima Point, at the mouth of the Orinoco River, and also a tract of territory to the west of the Wenamu River, and west of a line drawn from Mount Venamo to Mount Rovaima.[6] In October, also, temporary arrangements were made to mark certain provisional boundary points around the head of the Lynn Canal, in the disputed territorial line between Alaska and Canada. Pending its final settlement, a "modus vivendi" which had approval of the United States was accepted by the Dominion Government, who provided rules and regulations for securing to their citizens the benefit of a reciprocal stipulation, that the citizens and subjects of either power, found by that arrangement within the temporary jurisdiction of the other, shall suffer no diminution of their rights and privileges hitherto enjoyed. In July of the year following, these provisional arrangements were completed, but the final boundaries had still to be determined between Great Britain and the United States.

For many years American influence had been prevalent in Samoa,[7] as in 1872 the fine harbour of Pago Pago, in Tutuila,[8] had been ceded to the United States for a naval and coaling station. This cession was confirmed in 1878; freedom of trade and extra territorial jurisdiction in Samoa being granted. In the year 1889, a conference between the representatives of the United States, Germany, and Great Britain was held at Berlin. This was followed by a treaty recognizing the Samoan Islands as a neutral territory with an independent Government, the native laws and customs being allowed, while for civil and criminal causes in which foreigners were concerned a Supreme Court of Justice

[6] This tract had been marked by Schomburgk as British. See the "Annual Register for the year 1899. Part i, Foreign and Colonial History, America, chap. vii., p. 403.

[7] The Samoans or Navigators' Islands are a group in the South Pacific between 169° 25′ and 172° 40′ W. longitude and 13° 30′ and 14° 30′ S. Latitude. They are all lofty, and seem to have been of volcanic origin. Some of them are among the largest and finest islands in the Southern Ocean. The easternmost of the group, Opoun, Lione and Fanfoue appear to have been first discovered by Roggewin and Bauman in 1721. In 1766, Bougainville saw another, and because the inhabitants were so skilful in rigging and sailing small craft, he gave the cluster the name of the Navigators' Isles. In 1787, La Perouse discovered the two westernmost islands, Ojolava and Pola, each of which is nearly forty miles in length. The natives are very intelligent, and many of the islands are remarkable for their fertility, abounding in tropical fruits and nutricious roots.—"Gazateer of the World," Vol. x.,pp. 473, 474.

[8] This island is one of the group, about seventeen miles in length, by five in width, and it is inhabited by a numerous population. Captain Wilkes describes the men as remarkably tall, with intelligent and pleasing countenances; while the women are domestic and virtuous.

was established, and over which an American was to be the presiding judge. In 1898 disturbances arose regarding a regal native right of succession, and in 1899 the kingship was abolished. On the 14th of November of that year, an Anglo-German agreement renounced in favour of the United States all rights over the Island of Tutuila and other islands of the Samoan group east of 171 degrees longitude east of Greenwich ; the islands west of that meridian having been assigned to Germany. In February, 1900, the United States appointed a naval governor for Tutuila.[9]

The first session of the fifty-sixth Congress began December, 4th,[10] the Republican party having a majority in both Houses.[11] At the opening of this Congress the President's cabinet was composed as follows: John Hay[12] of Ohio, Secretary of State; Lyman J. Gage[13] of Illinois, Secretary of the Treasury; Elihu Root[14] of New York, Secretary of War; John W. Griggs[15] of New Jersey, Attorney-General; Charles E. Smith[16] of Pennsylvania, Postmaster-General; John D.

[9] See J. Scott Keltie's "Statesman's Year Book for 1900." United States Dependencies. pp. 1200, 1201.

[10] David B. Henderson, Republican of Iowa, was elected Speaker in the House of Representatives; and owing to the vacancy caused by the Vice-President's death, William P. Frye, Republican of Maine, became President *pro tempore* of the Senate.

[11] The respective parties stood as follows: In the Senate—Republicans 55; Democrats 26; Populists 5; Independent 1; vacancies 3. In the House of Representatives—Republicans 186, Democrats 160, Populists 7, Silver Party 2, Vacancies 2.

[12] Born in Salem, Indiana, October 8th 1838, and graduated at Brown University in 1858. He studied law at Springfield, Illinois, and came to Washington as Assistant Secretary to President Lincoln, with whom he continued to the period of Lincoln's death. He was appointed Secretary to various foreign legations, and Assistant Secretary of State, November 1st 1879. He was appointed Ambassador Extraordinary and Plenipotentiary to Great Britain, March 19th 1897, and retired September 19th 1898, having been made Secretary of State on the day following. See "Official Congressional Directory for Use of the United States Congress," p. 208. Fifty-sixth Congress. Second Session, beginning December 3rd, 1900. Washington, 1901, 8vo.

[13] Born in Deruyter, Madison Co. N.Y. June 28th 1836. His career was devoted to the banking business, notably in Chicago, Illinois. Having been invited to accept the portfolio of the United States Treasury, he resigned the presidency of a bank. March 5th 1897, to enter on his duties as Secretary of the Treasury. See *ibid.*, p. 209.

[14] Born in Clinton Oneida Co. N.Y. February 15th 1845. He became a lawyer in New York City, and was appointed Secretary of War August 1st 1899. See *ibid.* p. 215.

[15] He was born at Newton, N.Y. July 10th 1849. He became a lawyer but afterwards entered upon a political career in his native State, and he was elected Governor of N.Y. November 1895. He was appointed by President McKinley Attorney General to succeed Hon. Joseph McKenna, who resigned to accept a seat on the Bench of the United States Supreme Court. The appointment was confirmed by the Senate January 25th 1898. See *ibid.* p. 217.

[16] He was born in Mansfield Connecticut in 1842. When a child he moved to Albany, N.Y. There he became connected with the public press and followed a political course. He was appointed Minister to Russia by President Harrison in 1890. He was confirmed as Postmaster-General, April 21st, 1898. See *ibid.* p. 218.

Long[17] of Massachusetts, Secretary of the Navy; Ethan A. Hitchcock[18] of Missouri, Secretary of the Interior; and James Wilson[19] of Iowa, Secretary of Agriculture. On the 5th, the President's Message was read, and it was a lengthy document. The chief heads of interest were an allusion to an irreconcilable difference of views entertained between Great Britain and the United States, regarding a definite delimitation of the Alaskan boundary, and his urging the necessity for a ship canal to unite the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans. The President reiterated, that after the full establishment of peace in Cuba, the island should only be held by the United States in trust for the inhabitants; and as to the Philippines, the President opposed a suggestion, that the United States should give the islands independence while retaining a protectorate, but he stated that they could be abandoned. He did not recommend any final form of Government, and declared, that the truest kindness to the insurgents should be the swift and effective defeat of their leader. By the definitive treaty with Spain, Cuba was declared to be an independant state, but to be held in military occupation by the United States, under a Governor-General, who controls all branches of administration civil and military from Havana. Military governors had been appointed for each of its six provinces, who received instructions from him. A Supreme Court of Judicature had been established, while in the municipalities, Cuban Mayors and Aldermen were appointed. So long as occupation lasted the United States Government assumed and discharged obligations connected with the protection of life and property. In like manner, Porto Rico was under military rule, but legislation was in progress for the establishment of representative governments in both islands.[20]

According to the Report of the Secretary of the Treasury, the revenue for the year ending June 1899 was $610,982,094, while the expenditure was $700,093,564, showing a deficiency of $89,111,559, as one of the results of the Spanish war. The commerce of this year was marked by notable characteristics, viz. a continuation of the previous year's phenomenal exports, a moderate increase in importations, while the com-

[17] Born in Buckfield, Oxford Co. Maine, October 27th 1838. He practised law, and addicted himself to a political life. He was appointed and confirmed Secretary of the Navy, March 5th 1897. See *ibid.* p. 219.

[18] He was a great-grandson of Ethan Allen of Vermont, and born in Mobile Alabama September 19th 1835. He embraced a mercantile career. In August 1897, he was appointed Envoy Extraordinary and Minister Plenipotentiary to Russia, and the following year he was made Ambassador at St. Petersburg. December 21st 1898, he was nominated and confirmed Secretary of the Interior. See *ibid.* pp. 223, 224.

[19] He was born in Ayrshire, Scotland August 16th 1835, and he emigrated to the United States in 1852 settling with his parents in Connecticut. In 1855 he went to Iowa, where he engaged in farming, and was afterwards elected to the State Legislature and to Congress. He was confirmed Secretary of Agriculture, March 5th 1897. See *ibid.* p. 227.

[20] See J. Scott Keltie's "Statesman's Year Book for the year 1900," United States Dependencies, pp. 1196 to 1198.

bined imports and exports formed the largest total of foreign commerce ever shown by a single year in the United States.[21] During the fiscal year 311,715 immigrants arrived at the ports of the United States and Canada, as an accession to the population. In his annual Report the Secretary of the Navy recommended the construction of three armed cruisers each of 13,000 tons, three protected cruisers of 8,000 tons each, and twelve gunboats each of 900 tons. The Secretary of War urged the importance of a cable between San Francisco and Manila to touch at Hawaii, Wake Island and Guam[22] in the new Pacific possessions. A currency bill which embodied the President's recommendations on that subject passed in the House of Representatives by 190 votes to 150 during the month of December.[23]

On the 21st of November, Vice-President Hobart died at Paterson, New Jersey. The United States land forces, with co-operation of the Navy obtained some victories over the Philippinos, but on the 19th of December, General Lawton was killed in an attack on San Mateo. While under Spanish rule, the free-thinkers who formed a majority of the Spanish Ministers seized a considerable amount of property[24] belonging to the Church in Cuba. Bishops and priests protested, but the pillage went on all the same. The American Government, however, having become heirs of Spain, decided on having the matter judicially investigated. A Commission, consisting of three judges of the Supreme Court appointed to decide the controversy, unanimously gave it as their opinion in a preliminary report, that the Government of Spain had unjustly seized Church property in Cuba, and devoted it to public uses. The Commission also reported, that by virtue of subsequent agreements the title to this property was acknowledged to be vested in the Church, and while the Government was to continue using certain portions of property, the Church was to be paid an annual rental for the same. The Commission decided, that justice demanded the property, then in the possession of the Cuban Government, should be restored, and that the Church should be compensated for its use since January 1st, 1899, the date of American occupation. During the reconstruction of Government in Cuba, considerable indignation was aroused by the promulgation of a decree by the United States Governor-General Brooke, declaring civil marriage compulsory in every case, and as being sufficient to establish a legal union. Strong protest was raised by both Cuban and

[21] See the "Annual Register for the year 1899." Part ii. Foreign and Colonial History, chap. vii., p. 392.

[22] Guam or San Juan, an island in the North Pacific Ocean, the largest and most southerly in the Marianne Archipelago is about one hundred miles in circumference. The climate is salubrious and the soil fertile. It was discovered by Magalhaens in 1521. The inhabitants are chiefly descended from people brought by the Spaniards thither from Mexico and the Philippines. The chief place is San Ignazio-de-Agana, which has a good harbour. See "Gazatteer of the World," Vol. vi., p. 722.

[23] See the "Annual Register for the year 1899. Part ii. Foreign History, chap. vii, pp. 386 to 393.

[24] Estimated at several millions of dollars.

American Catholics, with the result, that the decree was ordered to be set aside by the President and his cabinet. General Brooke was recalled, and he was succeeded in office by Mr. Wood. Towards the close of 1900, the Governor-General, Mr. Wood, issued another decree which afforded the fullest recognition to the legality of religious marriages.

Meanwhile, in view of constructing a ship-canal across the Isthmus of Panama,[25] the United States had sent Commissioners, accompanied by a staff of engineers, to make the necessary surveys, and to report on the most feasible or approved route, with the estimated cost of construction. With Nicaragua, the United States had entered into a treaty for the protection of the isthmus from outward aggression;[26] while choice of a United States engineer[27] as umpire, to run the disputed line between Costa Rica and Nicaragua, settled the question to the satisfaction of both contestants. Accordingly, a Bill[28] was introduced to the House of Representatives to provide for the construction of a canal to connect the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans. A thorough investigation having been made not only of the Nicaragua and Panama routes, but of other possible routes, keeping in mind the industrial,

[25] In 1513 the Isthmus of Panama was crossed by Balboa a Spaniard from the Atlantic to the Pacific; soon afterwards its strategic and commercial advantages were understood, while its possession was an object of eager desire, especially on the part of Spain and Great Britain. The history of the Scotch colony in connection with it is well known, and also its failure, mainly owing to English jealousy, and opposition of the East India Company. Later still the project of having a ship-canal or rail-road to connect both oceans had nearly caused a rupture between England and the United States on the subject of control over transit. This dispute was thought to have been settled by the famous Clayton-Bulwer treaty, hastily and ambiguously drawn up, and signed on the 19th of April 1850. Exclusive control over the projected ship-canal was abandoned by both parties; but controversies regarding the interpretation of that treaty continued to rage for years between both Governments. In 1880, Congress passed a joint resolution calling on the President to take steps for the abrogation of the Clayton-Bulwer treaty. Afterwards in 1894, a complication took place between Great Britain and Nicaragua, when British influence on the coast entirely disappeared. See Professor Keasby's "Nicaraguan Canal and the Monroe Doctrine," New York, 8vo.

[26] This was numbered 2538.

[27] General E. P. Alexander.

[28] In 1868, the United States and Nicaragua exchanged ratifications of a Treaty of friendship, commerce and navigation. The Sixteenth Article contained the following stipulation: "The Republic of Nicaragua agrees that, should it become necessary at any time to employ military forces for the security and protection of persons and property passing over any of the routes aforesaid, it will employ the requisite force for that purpose; but upon failure to do this from any cause whatever, the Government of the United States may, with the consent or at the request of the Government of Nicaragua, or of the Minister thereof at Washington, or of the competent, legally appointed local authorities, civil or military, may employ such force for this and for no other purpose; and when, in the opinion of the Government of Nicaragua, the necessity ceases such force shall be immediately withdrawn. In the exceptional case, however, of unforseen or imminent danger to the lives or property of citizens of the United States the forces of said Republic are authorised to act for their protection without such consent having been previously obtained."

commercial, and military value of an inter-oceanic canal, and also the rights, privileges, and franchises necessary to be secured for the construction of a canal under the control, management, and ownership of the United States, the Commission made a preliminary report. This estimated cost [29] was much in excess of any heretofore made, and it was chiefly due to increased dimensions of width, depth, locks, harbours, and other features not heretofore considered. The Bill was laid before the Committee on Interstate and Foreign Commerce, who referred it back, with sundry amendments.[30] An elaborate argument was entered upon to show that the conditions which existed when the Clayton-Bulwer treaty had been made, were since materially changed, and that it should be abrogated.

Interviews and correspondence on this subject took place between the United States Secretary of State and the British Ambassador at Washington. Negotiations had been entered upon between Mr. Hay, the Secretary of State, and Lord Pauncefote, the British Ambassador, regarding modifications of the Clayton-Bulwer treaty, and to settle preliminaries for the construction and maintenance of the Isthmian ship-canal. After several conferences, a sort of provisional and temporary compromise had been arrived at, containing some concessions to England, which that Power accepted. However, articles of the treaty had still to be submitted to the United States Senate for final confirmation. A convention abrogating the Clayton-Bulwer treaty, so far as that document gave Great Britain the *locus standi* of objecting to the construction of the Nicaragua canal was signed by Lord Pauncefote and Mr. Hay on the 5th of February, 1900. The United States conditionally undertook to maintain the neutrality of the proposed canal, and to keep it perpetually open, in time of war as in time of peace, to the vessels of commerce and of war belonging to all nations on conditions of entire equality. The term for ratification of the treaty was extended to March, 1901. When this agreement came before the Senate Committee on Foreign Relations, it reported on the 9th of March, 1900, a rejection of the Nicaragua Convention.[31] When the Hay-Pauncefote's arrangements came for the Senate's final consideration, the Committee on Foreign Relations recommended an amendment which was proposed by Senator Davis, and which reserved to the United States a right of fortifying the canal, and of assuming

[29] The Nicaragua route—about 186 miles from ocean to ocean—was estimated to cost 200,540,000 dols. The Commission also estimated the cost of a canal by the Panama route at 142,342,579 dols., according to one route, or 156,378,258, according to another route. As between the Nicaragua and Panama route the Commission sums up a number of advantages favourable to the former.

[30] This is Report No. 351 from the Committee on Interstate and Foreign Commerce Canal to connect the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans, February 17th 1900, committed to the Committee of the Whole House on the State of the Union and ordered to be printed. Fifty-sixth Congress, First Session.

[31] See "Hazell's Annual for 1901," a Cyclopædic Record of Men and Topics of the Day, Vol. xvi., p. 659.

complete control over it. This proposition was adopted by a very large majority, 65 votes to 17, on Thursday, December 13th.

A commission had been appointed in January 1900, to report on the question of civil government for the Philippine Islands, and it recommended the nomination of an American Governor with American provincial governors, the Governor-General to be assisted by a Council of Natives and Americans. It proposed also to provide a Legislative Assembly, partly nominated and partly elected, whose acts should be subject to veto by the United States Government. With a sub-division of the Islands, natives as well as Americans were to be eligible for administrative positions.[32] It was officially announced likewise, that in their operations against China, all the great Powers had given definite assurances, that the United States treaty rights with China should remain secure in Chinese territory acquired, or to be acquired, by those nations.[33]

Pursuant to the temporary arrangements of October, 1899, a joint survey was made by the United States and the Dominion Government of Canada this year regarding the boundary line of Alaska. Under the Russo-American treaty for the cession of Alaska, the United States claimed marking the boundary line to the west where it follows the one hundred and forty-first meridian.

In the early part of that year many members of the Senate and House of Representatives, representing the general state of feeling for the Boers at war with England in defence of their Republics, had put considerable pressure on the Government to intervene. Accordingly the President of the United States expressed a hope to Lord Salisbury that a way would be found to bring about peace, and said he would be happy in any friendly manner to aid in bringing about such a desirable result. In reply Lord Salisbury sent a telegram requesting that the sincere acknowledgement of the British Government might be conveyed to the Government of the United States for the friendly tone of their communication, and adding that the British Government did "not propose to accept the intervention of any Power in the South African War."[34] At a subsequent date, the Boer delegates in starting from the Hague for America announced, that they were going to present the unjust and unprovoked aggression on the liberties and rights of their independent Republics, and to appeal for assistance to the Government and people of the United States to arbitrate for the restoration of peace on reasonable conditions. On the 15th of May, the delegates arrived in New York, where they were received with great demonstrations of popular rejoicing.

[32] See J. Scott Keltie's "Statesman's Year Book for 1900." Part ii. United States Dependencies, pp. 1198, 1199.

[33] See Hazell's "Annual for 1901,' a Cyclopædic Record of Men and Topics of the Day, Vol. xvi., p. 659. 659.

[34] For particulars regarding the causes that gave rise to this most eventful and historic struggle the reader is referred to W. E. Garrett Fisher's "Transvaal and the Boers," C. P. Lucas' "History of South Africa to the Jameson Raid."

On the 21st, they had an interview with Mr. Hay, by whom they were informed that the President had no choice but to persist in a policy of strict neutrality between Great Britain and the Boer Republics. At a private interview with the delegates on the day following the President himself confirmed that statement.[35]

By the unanimous vote of 926 delegates, the Republican Convention at New York, on the 21st of June, re-nominated Mr. McKinley for the Presidency, Colonel Theodore Roosevelt being selected a candidate for the Vice-Presidency.[36] The Democratic Convention assembled at Kansas City, July 4th, and nominated Mr. Bryan for their presidential candidate, Mr. Adlai Stevenson being their choice as candidate for Vice-President. The Silver Republican Convention, the Monetary League and the Populist Convention also nominated Mr. Bryan. The Prohibitionists and other parties of lesser strength, nominated other candidates.

On Tuesday, November 6th, 1900, the Presidential election took place, and it resulted in a large majority for Mr. McKinley; although Mr. Bryan gained heavily in some of the most populous States. Various commercial conventions and arrangements with foreign countries took place during this year. A supplemental treaty was negociated with Spain, by which she ceded all claim of title to certain Islands named, and all islands belonging to the Philippine Archipelago, lying outside the lines described in the third article of the previous treaty She agreed, that all such islands should be comprehended in the cession as fully as if they had been expressly included within these lines. In consideration for this surrender, the United States guaranteed payment to Spain the amount of one hundred thousand dollars.

On Monday, December 3rd, 1900, the President's Annual Message was delivered,[37] and alluded to the United States in relation to Chinese

[35] See Captain A. T. Mahon's "Story of the War in South Africa," and James Bryce's "Impressions of South Africa," revised Third edition.

[36] Of mingled Dutch, Irish, Scotch and French Huguenot ancestry. Theodore Roosevelt was born in New York City, October 27th 1858. He studied at Harvard University, and entered on the legal course, but soon he embraced a political career, serving in the New York Legislature of 1883, 1884 and 1885. From the office of police commissioner he was called by President McKinley in 1897 to be Assistant Secretary of the Navy. At the outbreak of the Spanish War he organised a regiment of Western men known as Roosevelt's Rough Riders, who took a prominent part in the subsequent campaign. At the end of the war, he received the Republican nomination of Governor for New York and was elected. See Appleton's "Cyclopædia of American Biography" Supplement. Vol. vii. pp. 232, 233.

[37] The complete text of this Message shall be found in the "Congressional Record," officially published in Washington, D.C. Vol. xxxiv, No. 1. Fifty-sixth Congress, Second Session, Monday, December 3rd, 1900, pp, 2 to 13.

affairs,[38] to the Transvaal War in South Africa,[39] and to the temporary boundary line between Alaska and Canada,[40] with the flourishing condition of trade, manufactures, and commerce, which the Republic then enjoyed. He recommended the reduction of International revenue taxes to the extent of $30,000,000. He urged Congress to aid the merchant marine and to remedy such evils as might be found to exist in combinations of capital organized into trusts.

The Secretary of the Treasury, Mr. Gage, presented the annual Report on Finances as eminently favourable, the Revenue of the Government amounting to 669,595,431 dollars, and the expenditure to 590,068,371 dollars, showing a surplus of 79,527,060 dollars, compared with the fiscal year '99; the receipts for 1900 increased by 58,613,426 dollars; and there was a decrease in the expenditure of 117,358,388 dollars.[41] The grand total of imports and exports for the first time in the history of the country exceeded two billions of dollars. The exports were greater than ever before, the total for the fiscal year ending June 30th 1900 being 1,394,483,082 dollars, an increase over 1899 of 167,459,780 dollars; while the imports amounted to 849,941,184 dollars, an increase of 152,792,695 dollars. This increase was largely in materials for manufacture, while manufactured goods formed a larger proportion than in any previous year of United States exports, besides they continued to form an increasing percentage of rapidly growing trade and commerce.[42]

[38] In principle the Russian proposition looking to the restoration of the Chinese Imperial Power in Peking, was accepted, with demand for punishment of certain high officials who were deemed culpable for the massacre of foreigners, as also indemnity for wrongs and loss of property sustained by citizens of the United States.

[39] This Message states in reference to South Africa: "Appropriate representations on our part resulted in the British Government agreeing to purchase outright all such goods shown to be the actual property of American citizens; thus closing the incident to the satisfaction of the immediately interested parties, although unfortunately, without a broad settlement of the question of neutrals' right to send goods not contraband *per se* to a neutral port adjacent to a belligerent area."

[40] The President contemplated a new convention, for a joint determination of the one hundred and forty-first meridian by telegraphic observations, as the sidereal methods heretofore followed proved discrepant at several points on the line.

[41] In the fiscal year 1901 the Revenue is estimated on the basis of existing laws at 687,773,253 dollars, and the expenditure at 607,773,253 dollars, leaving a surplus of 80,000,000 dollars. It was estimated that upon the basis of existing laws the Revenue of the Government for the fiscal year 1902 should be 716,633,042 dollars; and the appropriations, exclusive of a sinking fund, should be 690,374,804 dollars, or an estimated surplus of 26,258,237 dollars.

[42] The Report continues: "The total exports of the year were valued at 1,394 million dollars, of which 1,370 million dollars were of domestic production. Of this vast sum manufacturers formed 31.65 per cent. against 17.87 per cent. in 1890. The total exportation of manufactures during the year 1900 was 433 million dollars, an increase of nearly 100 millions, of 27 per cent. compared with 1899. Agricultural products also

Over 448,000 immigrants arrived in the United States within the year.[43]

On account of the great expenditure required for increase of the army navy, and coast defences, as also for other public improvements, Congress declined making an appropriation for constructing the Nicaraguan Canal. This latter enterprise was deferred to the decision of a future Congress. Meanwhile, the Convention assembled at Havana held views divergent from those entertained by the Washington Cabinet, in reference to the formation of an independent State Constitution; and in consequence, it was decided in May, 1901, that terms required prior to the relinquishment of Cuban control by the United States had not been fulfilled.

After many guerilla skirmishes with the United States troops, Emilio Aguinaldo, then driven for refuge to the island of Luzon, sent a message for reinforcements to his General, Urbana Lacuna, on the 12th of January, 1901. This letter fell into the hands of the American Colonel Funston, who contrived an ingenious plan for his capture. On the 20th of March following, a pretended reply was returned from Lacuna actually bearing his seal, and stating that the latter had sent as a reinforcement one of his best guerilla companies under Colonel Tal Placido and Captain Segovia, both of whom were recommended to his consideration for services rendered. With this letter, Colonel Funston sent a body of his own soldiers, dressed in the uniform of the Filipino army, to Aguinaldo's headquarters in the village of Paldnan, where the newcomers surrounded the house of that chief, who, with his troops, had been thus deceived. Having been taken completely by surprise, after a vain effort at resistance,[44] the leader, his officers, and men were made prisoners.[45] A number of important papers were likewise seized. Nevertheless, resistance to the Americans was still continued by the insurgents under the leadership of General Cailles. But even he, on the 24th of June, formally surrendered with his staff and 650 men at the American headquarters of General Sumner at Laguna.[46] How-

show a gratifying gain, the total for the year being 835 million dollars against 884 millions in 1899. Our commerce with the island territories which have been brought into closer relationship with the United States by the events of the past two years, also shows rapid growth, despite the fact that in Cuba and the Philippines production, and consequently purchasing power, have been partially interrupted by war conditions."

[43] The Commissioner General of Immigration reported that during the year there were 448,572 alien immigrants; 425,372 of whom arrived through the ports of the United States, and 23,000 through Canada. The number of Irish immigrants for the year was 35,730. See "Statistical Abstract of the United States" 1900. Immigration, No. 123, p. 398. Washington: Government Printing Office 1901. 8vo.

[44] In a vain attempt to break through the enemy's lines an insurgent Major was killed.

[45] Such is the substantive account of this transaction as given more in detail by Emilio Aguinaldo himself in an article contributed to "Pearson's Magazine" for September 1901.

[46] This is a province in the island of Lucon in the Philippine Archipelago. One of the best accounts regarding the history, condition, and resources of these

ever, the state of popular revolt was far from being appeased, and difficulties for the settlement of a Philippine constitution still remain for the United States.

While President M'Kinley had been on a visit to the Pan-American Exhibition at Buffalo, on the 6th of September, an Anarchist assailant drew a revolver on him and fired two shots, one bullet of which lodged against the breast-bone and was soon extracted, but the other entered the abdomen and could not be found after a surgical operation. Covered with blood, the President fell desperately wounded into the arms of surrounding friends, while the would-be assassin was at once seized by the indignant bystanders, and was only rescued from their summary vengeance by interposition of the police, who with difficulty succeeded in locking him up for the purpose of further examination.[47] With alternate fears and hopes for his recovery, the President lingered on for a week, when he expired early on Saturday morning, September 14th, to the great regret, not only of the people of the United States, but to those of the most distant nations.[48] Immediately afterwards, the Vice-President, Theodore Roosevelt, in accordance with provision made by the Constitution, became the succeeding President, and took the usual oath of office.

The First Session of the Fifty-seventh Congress opened on Tuesday, December 3rd, with President Roosevelt's Message to Congress.[49] It opened with a reference to the assassination of his predecessor in office, to whose high qualities a warm tribute was paid. It stated, that no matter called more urgently for the wisest thought of Congress than the treatment of Anarchists. By international treaties, all civilized powers should declare the crimes of Anarchists offences against the Law of Nations, like piracy and the slave trade; so that the Federal Government might with the fullest efficacy deal sternly with such miscreants. The message next referred to the abounding prosperity of the country, and suggested a resolute practical effort to correct the evils of over-speculation and over-capitalization, and to ensure a knowledge of facts regarding the working of corporations and trusts, so that the fullest publicity be given to their resources, objects and methods, with supervision and reasonable control, on the part of Government, to inspect and examine their interstate business. The Message suggested the creation of a new Cabinet office known as a Secretaryship for Commerce and Industries, to deal with commerce in the broadest sense; also, a strengthening of the immigration laws, with a view of excluding those persons

islands is that recently published in London and intituled "The Inhabitants of the Philippines," 1900, 8vo.

[47] In regular course of law, the infamous assassin Czolgosz was tried, found guilty, and executed.

[48] The remains were afterwards brought to Washington, where solemn funeral ceremonies were performed in the Capital previous to their transfer to the family vault at Canton, Ohio.

[49] The following epitome of the chief topics on which it treats is summarised from an attentive perusal of the document in question, and which appeared in the official "Congressional Record," Vol. xxxv., No. 2, pp. 25 to 36. Washington, Tuesday, December 3, 1901.

who belonged to the criminal class, and especially Anarchists; with a close supervision of steamship companies bringing undesirable immigrants.

The President condemned sweeping revisions of tariff as tending to produce conditions closely approaching to panic, and advised the supplementary system of reciprocal benefit and obligation, on the principle that reciprocity must be treated as the hand-maiden of protection. The condition of the merchant marine called for immediate remedy. The inequalities in the cost for maintenance of foreign vessels and the cost of building American ships should be remedied, and American goods should be carried more generally in American-built ships. The gold standard of money maintained at a parity with all forms of circulating medium in use is claimed as judicious; and the Government bonds in price were flattering to the public credit. Strict economy in expenditure of the revenue is recommended, and to be confined to the genuine needs of the Commonwealth. Remedial laws for railroads, for planting and protection of forests, for irrigation and reclamation of arid lands are to be desired. The territory of Hawaii should be developed on the traditional American lines, by having it a region settled by a community that should themselves till the farms they own. Porto Rico is reported as thriving, and its affairs as being administered efficiently and honestly. It had the gift of free access for its products to the United States markets; but it needed legislation concerning its public lands. There was vital need for a substantial reduction of the duties on imports from Cuba, while such progress had been made towards putting the independent government of the island on a firm footing, that it was hoped she should be mistress of her own destinies before the close of that Session of Congress. It was hoped to make the Filipinos fit for self-government, but to leave the islands then should mean their fall into anarchy. At present, it was feared to give them an independence for which they were unfit, thereby inviting re-action and disaster. Legislation was invited to introduce there industrial enterprises. Not alone for commercial but for political and military considerations should a telegraphic cable be constructed to Hawaii and the Philippines, and from these to other points in Asia. The Isthmus Canal is emphatically a work which it was the country's interest to begin and complete as soon as possible; and its importance to the Nation was by no means limited merely to its material effects upon commerce. The old Clayton-Bulwer Treaty being abrogated, the United States alone shall do the work of building, and assume the responsibility of safeguarding the canal, and shall regulate all its concerns. Its neutral use by all nations shall be preserved on terms of equality, without the guaranty or interference of any outside power.

The United States desire self-respecting peace and sincere friendship with all other nations. The Hague Peace Conference gave definite expression to the hope, that all civilised peoples should realise the wicked folly of war, which could generally be avoided by fair arbitration. The Monroe Doctrine should be the cardinal feature of the foreign policy in

all the nations of North and South America. It is simply a long step towards assuring the universal peace of the world, by securing the possibility of permanent peace in the Western hemisphere. The doctrine has nothing to do with the commercial relations of any American Power, but it is really a guarantee for the commercial independence of Americans. They do not wish to see any old-world military domination grow up on their continent, or be compelled themselves to become a military Power. Attention is specially called to the necessity for increasing the number of war-ships, as a sure means for maintaining peace in the Western Hemisphere, and also to preserve an insistence of the Monroe Doctrine. Good ships and good guns should be provided, with four thousand additional seamen and one thousand additional marines; officers and men to be kept as much as possible on the blue water, engaged in manœuvring and cruising, with constant gun-practice. The Naval Militia forces were State organisations for coast service, and should receive encouragement from the General Government. A National Naval Reserve, organised and trained under direction of the Navy Department, and subject to the call of the Chief Executive when war became imminent, was likewise recommended. It was deemed unnecessary to increase the army; but to keep it at the highest point of efficiency, a general staff should be created, promotion in it to be the reward of individual efficiency and merit, as also redounding to the good of the service. In the Civil Service, likewise, a man's own character, capacity and suitability for his post should be solely regarded, independent of his political, social, or personal influence. Other recommendations were made regarding the Indians, domestic exposition art, science, education, public libraries, agriculture and the postal department. Owing to the rapid growth of the United States' power and interests in the Pacific, whatever happened in China must be of the keenest concern. Government advocated the open door, and claimed parity of treatment, under conventions throughout the Empire, for her trade and citizens with those of all other Powers. It behoved the United States to foster feelings of goodwill, and leave no effort untried to work out the great policy of full and fair intercourse between China and the nations, on a footing of equal rights and advantages for all. In fine, the Pan-American Congress, then assembled in the Mexican capital, convoked at the invitation of Mexico, and attended by the United States' delegates, with most liberal instructions to co-operate, promised general advantages in their domestic and foreign relations to the great family of American commonwealths.

The Secretary of the Treasury, Mr. Gage, reported, that both the total exports and excess of exports over imports were greater than in any preceding year; that during the past year, the immigration had been of a better class, and that the energies of the nation bent towards the increase of foreign trade and national prestige. The establishment of a complete American mail-service to Europe, Asia, South America, and Australia should in itself furnish an American system of communi-

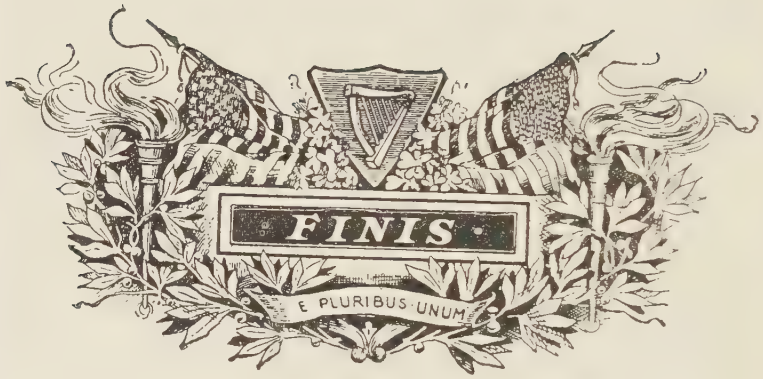
cation by sea, and likewise should be the means for transporting increasing home produce to foreign markets. The report concluded by advocating banking reforms.[50] In like manner, the reports of the respective Secretaries of the other departments were of an interesting character, and found to give very general satisfaction,[51] while their suggestions and recommendations are most likely to claim a due share of public consideration and embodiment in future administrative proceedings.

As we bring this History to a close, the United States have general satisfactory relations with foreign powers; while their domestic affairs and internal administration are conducted in a manner to secure confidence and respect from the entire community irrespective of differences in race, creed, party, or class. Great social and political evolutions have occurred since their Independence has been proclaimed and their Constitution has been established; while admirable and elastic forms of National, State, Municipal, and Local Government, are found to harmonize in a most remarkable manner with the varied circumstances of time and transition. Expansion and progress, materially, intellectually and morally, have impressed on the people a sense of freedom, security, and happiness not hitherto fully realized in the older countries of Europe; and still destined most probably to work with other influences for the spreading of enlightenment and civilization among generations yet unborn, and whose records shall furnish future subjects for the brightest and most instructive pages of Universal History.

[50] The revenues from all sources by warrants for the financial year, ended June 30 last, were 699,316,530 dollars, and the expenditure 621,598,546 dollars, showing a surplus of 77,717 984 dollars, compared with the financial year of 1900. The receipts for 1901 increased 29,721,099 dollars, and there was an increase of 22,253,561 dollars in expenditure.

[51] The details on which they are chiefly based may be read in the "Statistical Abstract of the United States, 1900." The financial year's returns always close on the 30th of June succeeding the previous date.

THE END.


FINIS
E PLURIBUS UNUM

APPENDIX.

APPENDIX.

Page

No. 1.—Colonial Delegates' Address to the Irish People, issued on the 10th of May, 1775, and engrossed on the 28th July, 1775 ... i

No. 2.—Declaration of Independence, proclaimed July 4th, 1776 ... v

No. 3—Constitution of the United States viii

No. 4.—Congressional Resolution of December 29th, 1780 xx

No. 5.—Presidents of the Continental Congress and of the Congress of the Confederation, 1775-1788 xx

No. 6.—Presidents, Vice-Presidents, and Cabinet Officers from the adoption of the Constitution to the present Time xx

No. 7.—The Twelfth Census of the United States xxvi

No. 8—Area of each State and Territory in the United States, Date of Organization of Territories, and of Admission of New States into the Union xxviii

Index xxvi

APPENDIX.

No. 1.—Colonial Delegates' Address to the Irish People, issued on the 10th of May, 1775, and engrossed on the 28th of July, 1775.

"TO THE PEOPLE OF IRELAND."

From the delegates appointed by the United Colonies of New Hampshire, Massachusetts Bay, Rhode Island, and the Providence Plantations, Connecticut, New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, and the lower countries on Delaware, Maryland, Virginia, North Carolina, and South Carolina, in general Congress at Philadelphia, on the 10th day of May, 1775.

"FRIENDS AND FELLOW SUBJECTS—As the important contest into which we have been driven is now become interesting to every European State, and particularly affects the members of the British Empire, we think it our duty to address you on the subject. We are desirous, as is natural to injured innocence, of possessing the good opinion of the virtuous and humane. We are peculiarly desirous of furnishing you with a true state of our motives and objects, the better to enable you to judge of our conduct with accuracy, and determine the merits on the controversy with impartiality and precision.

However incredible it may appear that at this enlightened period the leaders of a nation, which in every age has sacrificed hecatombs of her bravest patriots on the altars of liberty, should presume gravely to assert, and by force of arms attempt to establish, an arbitrary sway over the lives, liberties, and property of their fellow-subjects in America, it is, nevertheless, a most deplorable and indisputable truth.

These colonies have, from the time of their first settlement, for near two centuries peaceably enjoyed those very rights of which the Ministry have for ten years past endeavoured by fraud and by violence to deprive them. At the conclusion of the last war, the genius of England and the spirit of wisdom, as if offended at the ungrateful treatment of their sons, withdrew from the British councils and left that nation a prey to a race of Ministers with whom ancient English honesty and benevolence disdained to dwell. From that period jealousy, discontent, oppression and discord have raged among all his Majesty's subjects, and filled every part of his dominions with distress and complaint.

Not content with our purchasing of Britain at her own price clothing and a thousand other articles used by near three millions of people on this vast continent; not satisfied with the amazing profits arising from the monopoly of our trade, without giving us either time to breathe after a long though glorious war, or the least credit for the blood and treasure we have expended in it; notwithstanding the zeal we have manifested

for the service of our Sovereign and the warmest attachment to the Constitution of Britain and the people of England, a black and horrid design was formed to convert us from freedom into slaves, from subjects into vassals, and from friends into enemies.

Taxes, for the first time since we landed on the American shores, were, without our consent, imposed on us ; an unconstitutional edict, to compel us to furnish necessaries for a standing army that we wished to see disbanded, was issued, and the Legislature of New York suspended for refusing to comply with it. Our ancient and inestimable right of trial by jury was, in many instances, abolished, and the common law of the land made to give place to Admiralty jurisdiction. Judges were rendered, by the tenure of their commissions, entirely dependent on the will of a Minister. New crimes were arbitrarily created, and new courts, unknown to the Constitution, instituted. Wicked and insidious Governors have been set over us, and dutiful petitions for the removal of even the notoriously infamous Governor Hutchinson were branded with the opprobrious appellation of scandalous and defamatory. Hardy attempts have been made, under colour of Parliamentary authority, to seize Americans and carry them to Great Britain to be tried for offences committed in the colonies. Ancient charters have no longer remained sacred ; that of the Massachusetts Bay was violated, and their form of Government essentially mutilated and transformed. On pretence of punishing a violation of some private property, committed by a few disguised individuals, the populous and flourishing town of Boston was surrounded by fleets and armies, its trade destroyed, its port blocked up, and thirty thousand citizens subjected to all the miseries attending so sudden a convulsion in their commercial metropolis ; and to remove every obstacle to the rigorous execution of this system of oppression, an Act of Parliament was passed, evidently calculated to indemnify those who might, in the prosecution of it, even imbrue their hands in the blood of the inhabitants.

Though pressed by such an accumulation of undeserved injuries, America still remembered her duty to her Sovereign. A congress consisting of deputies from twelve united colonies assembled. They in the most respectful terms laid their grievances at the foot of the throne and implored his Majesty's interposition on their behalf. They also agreed to suspend all trade with Great Britain, Ireland, and the West Indies, hoping by this peaceable mode of opposition to obtain that justice from the British Ministry which had been so long solicited in vain. And here permit us to assure you that it was with the utmost reluctance we could prevail upon ourselves to cease our commercial connection with your island. Your Parliament had done us no wrong. You had been friendly to the rights of mankind, and we acknowledged with pleasure and gratitude that your nation has produced patriots who have nobly distinguished themselves in the cause of humanity and America. On the other hand, we are not ignorant that the labour and manufactures of Ireland, like those of the silk-worm, were of little moment to herself, but served only to give luxury to those who neither toil nor spin. We perceived that if we continued our commerce with you, our agreement not to import from Britain would be fruitless, and were therefore compelled to adopt a measure to which nothing but absolute necessity would have reconciled us. It gave us, however, some consolation to reflect that should it occasion much distress, the fertile regions of America would afford you a safe asylum from poverty, and in time from oppression also—an asylum

in which many thousands of your countrymen have found hospitality, peace, and affluence, and become united to us by all the ties of consanguinity, mutual interest, and affection. Nor did Congress stop here. Flattered by a pleasing expectation, that the justice and humanity which had so long characterised the English nation would, on proper application, afford us relief, they represented their grievances in an affectionate address to their brethren in Britain, that entreated their aid and interposition in behalf of these Colonies.

The more fully to evince their respect for their Sovereign, the unhappy people of Boston were requested by Congress to submit with patience to their fate, and all America united in a resolution to abstain from every species of violence. During this period the devoted town suffered unspeakably. Its inhabitants were insulted and their property violated. Still relying on the clemency and justice of his Majesty and the nation, they permitted a few regiments to take possession of their town, to surround it with fortifications, and to cut off all intercourse between them and their friends in the country.

With anxious expectation did all America await the event of their petition—all America laments its fate. Their prince was deaf to their complaints, and vain were all attempts to impress him with a sense of the suffering of his American subjects, of the cruelty of their taskmasters, and of the many plagues which impended over his domains. Instead of directions for a candid inquiry into our grievances, insult was added to oppression, and our long forbearance rewarded with the imputation of cowardice. Our trade with foreign States was prohibited, and an Act of Parliament passed to prevent our even fishing on our coasts. Our peaceful assemblies, for the purpose of consulting the common good, were declared seditious, and our asserting the very rights which placed the crown of Great Britain on the heads of three successive princes of the House of Hanover styled rebellious. Orders were given to reinforce the troops in America. The wild and barbarous savages of the wilderness have been solicited by gifts to take up the hatchet against us and instigated to deluge our settlements with the blood of innocent and defenceless women and children; the whole community was, moreover, alarmed with horrors of domestic insurrections—refinements in paternal cruelty at which the genius of Britain must blush; refinements which admit not of being even recited without horror and practised without infamy! We should be happy were these dark machinations the mere suggestions of suspicion! We are sorry to declare, that we are possessed of the most authentic and indubitable evidence of reality.

The Ministry, bent on pulling down the pillars of the Constitution endeavoured to erect the standard of despotism in America, and if successful, Britain and Ireland may shudder at the consequences.

Three of the most experienced generals are sent to wage war with their fellow-subjects; and America is amazed to find the name of Howe in the catalogue of her enemies. She loved his brother.

Despairing of driving the colonists to resistance by any other means than actual hostility, a detachment of the army at Boston marched into the country in all the array of war, and, unprovoked, fired upon and killed several of the inhabitants. The neighbouring farmers suddenly assembled and repelled the attack. From this all communications between the town and country were intercepted. The citizens petitioned the general for permission to leave the town, and he promised on sur-

in direct object the establishment of an absolute tyranny over these States. To prove this, let facts be submitted to a candid world.

He has refused his assent to laws, the most wholesome and necessary for the public good.

He has forbidden his governors to pass laws of immediate and pressing importance, unless suspended in their operation till his assent should be obtained; and when so suspended, he has utterly neglected to attend to them.

He has refused to pass other laws for the accommodation of large districts of people, unless those people would relinquish the right of representation in the Legislature, a right inestimable to them, and formidable to tyrants only.

He has called together legislative bodies at places unusual, uncomfortable, and distant from the depository of their public records, for the sole purpose of fatiguing them into compliance with his measures.

He has dissolved representative houses repeatedly, for opposing, with manly firmness, his invasions on the rights of the people.

He has refused, for a long time after such dissolutions, to cause others to be elected, whereby the legislative powers, incapable of annihilation, have returned to the people at large for their exercise; the State remaining in the meantime exposed to all the danger of invasion from without and convulsions within.

He has endeavoured to prevent the population of these States; for that purpose obstructing the laws of naturalisation of foreigners, refusing to pass others to encourage their migration hither, and raising the conditions of new appropriations of lands

He has obstructed the administration of justice, by refusing his assent to laws for establishing judiciary powers.

He has made judges dependent on his will alone, for the tenure of their offices, and the amount and payment of their salaries.

He has erected a multitude of new offices, and sent hither swarms of officers to harrass our people, and eat out their substance.

He has kept among us, in times of peace, standing armies without the consent of our Legislatures.

He has affected to render the military independent of, and superior to, the civil power.

He has combined with others to subject us to a jurisdiction, foreign to our constitution, and unacknowledged by our laws, giving his assent to their acts of pretended legislation:

For quartering large bodies of armed troops among us:

For protecting them, by a mock trial, from punishment for any murders which they should commit on the inhabitants of these States:

For cutting off our trade with all parts of the world:

For imposing taxes on us without our consent:

For depriving us, in many cases, of the benefits of trial by jury:

For transporting us beyond seas to be tried for pretended offences.

For abolishing the free system of English laws in a neighbouring province, establishing therein an arbitrary government and enlarging its boundaries, so as to render it at once an example and fit instrument for introducing the same absolute rule into these colonies:

For taking away our charters abolishing our most valuable laws, and altering fundamentally the forms of our governments:

For suspending our own Legislatures, and declaring themselves invested with power to legislate for us in all cases whatsoever.

He has abdicated government here, by declaring us out of his protection, and waging war against us.

He has plundered our seas, ravaged our coasts, burnt our towns, and destroyed the lives of our people.

He is, at this time, transporting large armies of foreign mercenaries, to complete the work of death, desolation, and tyranny, already begun with circumstances of cruelty and perfidy, scarcely paralleled in the most barbarous ages, and totally unworthy the head of a civilised nation.

He has constrained our fellow-citizens, taken captive on the high seas, to bear arms against their country, to become the executioners of their friends and brethren, or to fall themselves by their hands.

He has excited domestic insurrection amongst us, and has endeavoured to bring on the inhabitants of our frontiers the merciless Indian savages, whose known rule of warfare is an undistinguished destruction of all ages, sexes, and conditions.

In every stage of these oppressions, we have petitioned for redress in the most humble terms—our repeated petitions have been answered only by repeated injury. A prince, whose character is thus marked by every act, which may define a tyrant, is unfit to be the ruler of a free people.

Nor have we been wanting in attention to our British brethren. We have warned them from time to time of attempts made by their Legislature to extend an unwarrantable jurisdiction over us. We have reminded them of the circumstances of our emigration and settlement here. We have appealed to their native justice and magnanimity, and we have conjured them, by the ties of our common kindred, to disavow these usurpations, which would inevitably interrupt our connexions and correspondence. They too have been deaf to the voice of justice and of consanguinity. We must, therefore, acquiesce in the necessity which denounces our separation, and hold them, as we hold the rest of mankind, enemies in war, in peace, friends.

We, therefore, the representatives of the United States of America, in general Congress assembled, appealing to the Supreme Judge of the world for the rectitude of our intentions, do, in the name, and by authority, of the good people of these colonies, solemnly publish and declare, that these united colonies are, and of right ought to be, FREE and INDEPENDENT STATES; that they are absolved from all allegiance to the British Crown; and that all political connection between them and the State of Great Britain is, and ought to be, totally dissolved; and that, as free and independent States, they have full power to levy war, conclude peace, contract alliances, establish commerce, and to do all other acts and things which independent States may of right do. And for the support of this declaration, with a firm reliance on the protection of Divine Providence, we mutually pledge to each other our lives, our fortunes, and our sacred honour.

[Here follow the signatures for the respective colonies, as found in the text of this work, chap. xii.]

No. 3.—Constitution of the United States.

PREAMBLE.

We, the people of the United States, in order to form a more perfect union, establish justice, ensure domestic tranquility, provide for the common defence, promote the general welfare, and secure the blessings of liberty to ourselves and our posterity, do ordain and establish this Constitution for the United States of America.

Article I.—The Legislative Department.

Section 1. All legislative powers herein granted shall be vested in a Congress of the United States, which shall consist of a Senate and House of Representatives.

Section 2. The House of Representatives shall be composed of members chosen every second year by the people of the several States, and the electors in each State shall have the qualifications requisite for electors of the most numerous branch of the State Legislature.

No person shall be a representative who shall not have attained to the age of twenty-five years, and been seven years a citizen of the United States, and who shall not, when elected, be an inhabitant of that State in which he shall be chosen.

Representatives and direct taxes shall be apportioned among the several States which may be included within this Union, according to their respective numbers, which shall be determined by adding to the whole number of free persons, including those bound to service for a term of years and excluding Indians not taxed, three-fifths of all other persons. The actual enumeration shall be made within three years after the first meeting of the Congress of the United States, and within every subsequent term of ten years, in such manner as they shall by law direct. The number of representatives shall not exceed one for every thirty thousand, but each State shall have at least one representative; and until such enumeration shall be made the State of New Hampshire shall be entitled to choose three; Massachusetts, eight; Rhode Island and Providence Plantations, one; Connecticut, five; New York, six; New Jersey, four; Pennslyvania, eight; Delaware, one; Maryland, six; Virginia, ten; North Carolina, five; South Carolina, five; and Georgia, three.

When vacancies happen in the representation from any State, the Executive authority thereof shall issue writs of election to fill such vacancies.

The House of Representatives shall choose their Speaker and other officers, and shall have the sole power of impeachment.

Section 3. The Senate of the United States shall be composed of two Senators from each State, chosen by the Legislature thereof, for six years; and each senator shall have one vote.

Immediately after they shall be assembled in consequence of the first election, they shall be divided as equally as may be into three classes. The seats of the Senators of the first class shall be vacated at the expiration of the second year; of the second class at the expiration of the fourth year; and of the third class at the expiration of the sixth year; so that

one-third may be chosen every second year; and if vacancies happen by resignation or otherwise, during the recess of the Legislature of any State, the executive thereof may make temporary appointments until the next meeting of the Legislature, which shall then fill such vacancies.

No person shall be a Senator who shall not have attained to the age of thirty years, and been nine years a citizen of the United States, and who shall not, when elected, be an inhabitant of that State for which he shall be chosen.

The Vice-President of the United States shall be President of the Senate, but shall have no vote, unless they be equally divided.

The Senate shall choose their other officers, and also a president *pro tempore*, in the absence of the Vice-President, or when he shall exercise the office of President of the United States.

The Senate shall have the sole power to try all impeachments. When sitting for that purpose, they shall be on oath or affirmation. When the President of the United States is tried, the Chief Justice shall preside; and no person shall be convicted without the concurrence of two-thirds of the members present.

Judgment in cases of impeachment shall not extend further than to removal from office, and disqualification to hold and enjoy any office of honour, trust, or profit under the United States; but the party convicted shall nevertheless be liable and subject to indictment, trial, judgment, and punishment, according to law.

Section 4. The times, places, and manner of holding elections for Senators and Representatives shall be prescribed in each State by the Legislature thereof; but the Congress may at any time, by law, make or alter such regulations, except as to the places of choosing Senators.

The Congress shall assemble at least once in every year, and such meeting shall be on the first Monday in December, unless they shall by law appoint a different day.

Section 5. Each house shall be the judge of the elections, returns, and qualifications of its own members, and a majority of each shall constitute a quorum to do business; but a smaller number may adjourn from day to day, and may be authorized to compel the attendance of absent members, in such manner, and under such penalties, as each house may provide.

Each house may determine the rules of its proceedings, punish its members for disorderly behaviour, and, with the concurrence of two-thirds, expel a member.

Each house shall keep a journal of its proceedings, and from time to time publish the same, excepting such parts as may in their judgment require secrecy, and the yeas and nays of the members of either house on any question shall, at the desire of one-fifth of those present, be entered on the journal.

Neither House, during the session of Congress, shall, without the consent of the other, adjourn for more than three days, nor to any other place than that in which the two houses shall be sitting.

Section 6. The Senators and Representatives shall receive a compensation for their services, to be ascertained by law, and paid out of the Treasury of the United States. They shall, in all cases except treason, felony, and breach of the peace, be privileged from arrest during their attendance at the session of their respective houses, and in going to and returning from same; and for any speech or debate in either house they shall not be questioned in any other place.

No Senator or Representative shall, during the time for which he was elected, be appointed to any civil office under the authority of the United States which shall have been created, or the emoluments whereof shall have been increased during such time; and no person holding any office under the United States shall be a member of either house during his continuance in office.

Section 7. All bills for raising revenue shall originate in the House of Representatives; but the Senate may propose or concur with amendments as on other bills.

Every bill which shall have passed the House of Representatives and the Senate shall, before it becomes a law, be presented to the President of the United States; if he approve, he shall sign it; but if not, he shall return it, with his objections, to that house in which it shall have originated, who shall enter the objections at large on their journal, and proceed to reconsider it. If, after such reconsideration, two-thirds of that house shall agree to pass the bill, it shall be sent, together with the objections, to the other house, by which it shall likewise be reconsidered, and if approved by two-thirds of that house, it shall become a law. But in all such cases the votes of both houses shall be determined by yeas and nays, and the names of the persons voting for and against the bill shall be entered on the journal of each house respectively. If any bill shall not be returned by the President within ten days (Sundays excepted) after it shall have been presented to him, the same shall be a law, in like manner as if he had signed it, unless the Congress by their adjournment prevent its return, in which case it shall not be a law.

Every order, resolution, or vote to which the concurrence of the Senate and House of Representatives may be necessary (except on a question of adjournment) shall be presented to the President of the United States; and, before the same shall take effect, shall be approved by him or, being disapproved by him, shall be repassed by two-thirds of the Senate and House of Representatives, according to the rules and limitations prescribed in the case of a bill.

Section 8. The Congress shall have power—

To lay and collect taxes, duties, imposts, and excises, to pay the debts and provide for the common defence and general welfare of the United States; but all duties, imposts, and excises shall be uniform throughout the United States;

To borrow money on the credit of the United States;

To regulate commerce with foreign nations, and among the several States, and with the Indian tribes;

To establish a uniform rule of naturalization, and uniform laws on the subject of bankruptcies throughout the United States;

To coin money, regulate the value thereof and of foreign coin, and fix the standard of weights and measures;

To provide for the punishment of counterfeiting the securities and current coin of the United States;

To establish post offices and post roads;

To promote the progress of science and useful arts by securing, for limited times, to authors and inventors the exclusive right to their respective writings and discoveries;

To constitute tribunals inferior to the Supreme Court;

To define and punish piracies and felonies committed on the high seas, and offences against the law of nations;

To declare war, grant letters of marque and reprisal, and make rules concerning captures on land and water ;

To raise and support armies, but no appropriation of money to that use shall be for a longer term than two years ;

To provide and maintain a navy ;

To make rules for the government and regulation of the land and naval forces ;

To provide for calling forth the militia to execute the laws of the Union, suppress insurrections, and repel invasions ;

To provide for organising, arming, and discipling the militia, and for governing such part of them as may be employed in the service of the United States, reserving to the States respectively the appointment of the officers, and the authority of training the militia according to the discipline prescribed by Congress ;

To exercise exclusive legislation in all cases whatsoever over such district (not exceeding ten miles square) as may, by cession of particular States, and the acceptance of Congress, become the seat of the Government of the United States, and to exercise like authority over all places purchased by the consent of the Legislature of the State in which the same shall be, for the erection of forts, magazines, arsenals, dockyards, and other needful buildings ; and

To make all laws which shall be necessary and proper for carrying into execution the foregoing powers, and all other powers vested by this Constitution in the government of the United States or in any department or office thereof.

Section 9. The migration or importation of such persons as any of the States now existing shall think proper to admit shall not be prohibited by the Congress prior to the year one thousand eight hundred and eight, but a tax or duty may be imposed on such importation, not exceeding ten dollars for each person.

The privilege of the writ of Habeas Corpus shall not be suspended unless when, in cases of rebellion or invasion, the public safety may require it.

No bill of attainder or ex-post facto law shall be passed.

No capitation or other direct tax shall be laid, unless in proportion to the census or enumeration hereinbefore directed to be taken.

No tax or duty shall be laid on articles exported from any State.

No preference shall be given by any regulation of commerce or revenue to the ports of one State over those of another ; nor shall vessels bound to, or from, one State be obliged to enter, clear, or pay duties in another.

No money shall be drawn from the Treasury but in consequence of appropriations made by law ; and a regular statement and account of the receipts and expenditures of all public money shall be published from time to time.

No title of nobility shall be granted by the United States ; and no person holding any office of profit or trust under them shall, without the consent of the Congress, accept of any present, emolument, office, or title, of any kind whatever, from any king, prince, or foreign state.

Section 10. No State shall enter into any treaty, alliance, or confederation ; grant letters of marque and reprisal ; coin money ; emit bills of credit ; make anything but gold and silver coin a tender in payment

of debts; pass any bill of attainder; ex-post-facto law, or law imparing the obligation of contracts, or grant any title of nobility.

No State shall, without the consent of the Congress, lay any imposts or duties on imports or exports, except what may be absolutely necessary for executing its inspection laws; and the net produce of all duties and imposts laid by any State on imports or exports shall be for the use of the Treasury of the United States; and all such laws shall be subject to the revision and control of the Congress.

No State shall, without the consent of Congress, lay any duty of tonnage, keep troops or ships-of-war in time of peace, enter into any agreement or compact with another State, or with a foreign power, or engage in war, unless actually invaded, or in such imminent danger as will not admit of delay.

Article II.—The Executive Department.

Section 1. The executive power shall be vested in a President of the United States of America. He shall hold his office during the term of four years, and, together with the Vice-President, chosen for the same term, be elected as follows:

Each State shall appoint, in such manner as the Legislature thereof may direct, a number of electors, equal to the whole number of senators and representatives to which the State may be entitled in the Congress; but no senator or representative, or person holding an office of trust or profit under the United States, shall be appointed an elector.

[*The electors shall meet in their respective States, and vote by ballot for two persons, of whom one at least shall not be an inhabitant of the same State with themselves; and they shall make a list of all the persons voted for, and of the number of votes for each, which list they shall sign and certify, and transmit sealed to the seat of the government of the United States, directed to the President of the Senate. The President of the Senate shall, in the presence of the Senate and House of Representatives, open all the certificates, and the votes shall then be counted. The person having the greatest number of votes shall be the President, if such number be a majority of the whole number of electors appointed; and if there be more than one who have such a majority, and have an equal number of votes, then the House of Representatives shall immediately choose by ballot one of them for President; and if no person have a majority then from the five highest on the list the said House shall, in like manner, choose the President. But in choosing the President the votes shall be taken by States, the representation from each State having one vote; a quorum for this purpose shall consist of a member or members from two-thirds of the Senate, and a majority of all the States shall be necessary to a choice. In every case, after the choice of the President, the person having the greatest number of votes of the electors shall be the Vice-President. But if there should remain two or more who have equal votes, the Senate shall choose from them by ballot the Vice-President.]

The Congress may determine the time of choosing the electors, and the day on which they shall give their votes; which day shall be the same throughout the United States.

* This clause has been superseded by the Twelfth Amendment of the original Constitution.

No person, except a natural-born citizen, or a citizen of the United States at the time of the adoption of this Constitution, shall be eligible to the office of President; neither shall any person be eligible to that office who shall not have attained the age of thirty-five years and been fourteen years a resident within the United States.

In case of the removal of the President from office, or of his death, resignation, or inability to discharge the powers and duties of the said office, the same shall devolve on the Vice-President, and the Congress may by law provide for the case of removal, death, resignation, or inability both of the President and Vice-President, declaring what officer shall then act as President; and such officer shall act accordingly until the disability be removed, or a President shall be elected.

The President shall, at stated times, receive for his services a compensation which shall neither be increased nor diminished during the period from which he shall have been elected, and he shall not receive within that period any other emolument from the United States, or any of them.

Before he enter on the execution of his office he shall take the following oath or affirmation: "I do solemnly swear (or affirm) that I will faithfully execute the office of President of the United States, and will, to the best of my ability, preserve, protect, and defend the Constitution of the United States."

Section 2. The President shall be commander-in-chief of the army and navy of the United States, and of the militia of the several States, when called into the actual service of the United States; he may require the opinion, in writing, of the principal officer in each of the executive departments, upon any subject relating to the duties of their respective offices; and he shall have power to grant reprieves; and pardons for offences against the United States, except in cases of impeachment.

He shall have power, by and with the advice and consent of the Senate, to make treaties, provided two-thirds of the senators present concur; and he shall nominate, and, by and with the advice and consent of the Senate, shall appoint ambassadors, other public ministers and consuls, judges of the Supreme Court, and all other officers of the United States whose appointments are not herein otherwise provided for, and which shall be established by law; but the Congress may by law vest the appointment of such inferior officers as they think proper in the President alone, in the courts of law, or in the heads of departments.

The President shall have power to fill up all vacancies that may happen during the recess of the Senate, by granting commissions which shall expire at the end of their next session.

Section 3. He shall, from time to time, give to the Congress information of the State of the Union, and recommend to their consideration such measures as he shall judge necessary and expedient; he may, on extraordinary occasions, convene both houses, or either of them, and in case of disagreement between them with respect to the time of adjournment, he may adjourn them to such time as he shall think proper; he shall receive ambassadors and other public ministers; he shall take care that the laws be faithfully executed, and shall commission all the officers of the United States.

Section 4. The President, Vice-President, and all civil officers of the United States shall be removed from office on impeachment for, and conviction of, treason, bribery, or other high crimes and misdemeanors.

Article III.—The Judicial Department.

Section 1. The judicial power of the United States shall be vested in one Supreme Court, and in such inferior courts as the Congress may from time to time ordain and establish. The judges, both of the Supreme and Inferior Courts, shall hold their offices during good behaviour, and shall, at stated times, receive for their services a compensation which shall not be diminished during their continuance in office.

Section 2. The judicial power shall extend to all cases, in law and equity, arising under this Constitution, the laws of the United States, and treaties made, or which shall be made, under their authority; to all cases affecting ambassadors, other public ministers, and consuls; to all cases of admiralty and maritime jurisdiction; to controversies to which the United States shall be a party; to controversies between two or more States; between a State and citizens of another State; between citizens of different States; between citizens of the same State claiming lands under grants of different States, and between a State, or the citizens thereof, and foreign States, citizens, or subjects.

In all cases affecting ambassadors, other public ministers, and consuls, and those in which a State shall be party, the Supreme Court shall have original jurisdiction. In all the other cases before mentioned, the Supreme Court shall have appellate jurisdiction, both as to law and fact, with such exceptions and under such regulations as the Congress shall make.

The trial of all crimes, except in cases of impeachment, shall be by jury; and such trial shall be held in the State where the said crimes shall have been committed; but when not committed within any State, the trial shall be at such place or places as the Congress may by law have directed.

Section 3. Treason against the United States shall consist only in levying war against them, or in adhering to their enemies, giving them aid and comfort.

No person shall be convicted of treason, unless on the testimony of two witnesses to the same overt act, or on confession in open Court.

The Congress shall have power to declare the punishment of treason, but no attainder of treason shall work corruption of blood or forfeiture, except during the life of the person attainted.

Article IV.—Miscellaneous Provisions.

Section 1. Full faith and credit shall be given in each State to the public acts, records, and judicial proceedings of every other State; and the Congress may by general laws prescribe the manner in which such acts, records, and proceedings shall be proved, and the effect thereof.

Section 2. The citizens of each State shall be entitled to all privileges and immunities of citizens in the several States.

A person charged in any State with treason, felony, or other crime, who shall flee from justice, and be found in another State, shall, on demand of the executive authority of the State from which he fled, be delivered up to be removed to the State having jurisdiction of the crime.

No person held to service or labour in any State, under the laws

thereof, escaping into another, shall, in consequence of any law therein, be discharged from such service or labour, but shall be delivered up on claim of the party to whom such service or labour may be due.

Section 3. New States may be admitted by the Congress into this Union ; but no new State shall be formed or erected within the jurisdiction of any other State, nor any State be formed by the junction of two or more States, or parts of States, without the consent of the Legislatures of the States concerned, as well as of the Congress.

The Congress shall have power to dispose of and make all needful rules and regulations respecting the territory or other property belonging to the United States ; and nothing in this Constitution shall be so construed as to prejudice any claims of the United States or of any particular State.

Section 4. The United States shall guarantee to every State in this Union a republican form of government, and shall protect each of them against invasion, and on application of the legislature or of the executive (when the legislature cannot be convened) against domestic violence.

Article V.—Powers of Amendment.

The Congress, whenever two-thirds of both houses shall deem it necessary, shall propose amendments to this Constitution, or, on the application of the legislatures of two-thirds of the several States, shall call a convention for proposing amendments, which, in either case, shall be valid to all intents and purposes as part of this Constitution, when ratified by the legislatures of three-fourths of the several States, or by conventions in three-fourths thereof, as the one or the other mode of ratification may be proposed by the Congress ; provided that no amendment which may be made prior to the year one-thousand eight hundred and eight shall in any manner affect the first and fourth clauses in the ninth section of the first article ; and that no State, without its consent, shall be deprived of its equal suffrage in the Senate.

Article VI.—Public Debt, Supremacy of the Constitution, Oath of Office, Religious Test.

All debts contracted, and engagements entered into, before the adoption of this Constitution, shall be as valid against the United States under this Constitution as under the confederation.

This Constitution, and the laws of the United States which shall be made in pursuance thereof, and all treaties made, or which shall be made, under the authority of the United States, shall be the supreme law of the land ; and the judges in every State shall be bound thereby, anything in the Constitution or laws of any State to the contrary notwithstanding.

The Senators and Representatives before mentioned, and the members of the several State legislatures, and all executive and judicial officers, both of the United States and of the several States, shall be bound by oath or affirmation to support this Constitution ; but no religious test shall ever be required as a qualification to any office or public trust under the United States.

Article VII.—Ratification of the Constitution.

The ratification of the conventions of nine States shall be sufficient for the establishment of this Constitution between the States so ratifying the same.

Done in convention, by the unanimous consent of the States present, the seventeenth day of September, in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and eighty-seven, and of the Independence of the United States of America the twelfth.

In witness whereof we have hereunto subscribed our names.

George Washington.

President and Deputy from Virginia

(Signed by Deputies from all the States except Rhode Island.)

The Constitution was adopted by the Convention, September 17, 1787, and was ratified by conventions of the several States at the following dates, viz.:—

Delaware	December 7, 1787.	Maryland,	April, 28, 1788.
Pennsylvania,	December 12, 1787.	South Carolina,	May 23, 1788.
New Jersey,	December 18, 1787.	New Hampshire,	June 21, 1788.
Georgia,	January 2, 1788.	Virginia,	June 26, 1788.
Connecticut,	January 9, 1788.	New York,	July 26, 1788.
Massachusetts,	February 6, 1788.	North Carolina,	Nov. 21, 1789.

Rhode Island, May 29, 1790.

Articles in addition to, and Amendment of the Constitution of the United States.

Proposed by Congress, and ratified by the Legislatures of the several States pursuant to the Fifth Article of the foregoing Constitution.

Article I.—Freedom of Religion.

The first ten articles were proposed by Congress in 1789, and declared adopted in 1791.

Congress shall make no law respecting an estalishment of religion, or prohibiting the exercise thereof; or abridging the freedom of speech, or of the press, or of the right of the people peaceably to assemble, and to petition the government for a redress of grievances.

Article II.—Right to Bear Arms.

A well-regulated militia being necessary to the security of a free State, the right of the people to keep and bear arms shall not be infringed.

ARTICLE III.—QUARTERING SOLDIERS ON CITIZENS.

No soldier shall, in the time of peace, be quartered in any house without the consent of the owner, nor in time of war, but in a manner to be prescribed by law.

ARTICLE IV.—SEARCH WARRANTS.

The right of the people to be secure in their persons, houses, papers, and effects, against unreasonable searches and seizures, shall not be violated, and no warrants shall issue but upon probable cause, supported by oath or affirmation, and particularly describing the place to be searched and the persons, or things to be seized.

ARTICLE V.—TRIAL FOR CRIME.

No person shall be held to answer for a capital or otherwise infamous crime, unless on a presentment or indictment of a grand jury, except in cases arising in the land or naval forces, or in the militia, when in actual service in time of war or public danger; nor shall any person be subject for the same offence to be twice put in jeopardy of life or limb, nor shall be compelled in any criminal case to be a witness against himself, nor be deprived of life, liberty, or property without due process of law; nor shall private property be taken for public use without just compensation.

ARTICLE VI.—RIGHTS OF ACCUSED PERSONS.

In all criminal prosecutions the accused shall enjoy the right to a speedy and public trial, by an impartial jury of the State and district wherein the crime shall have been committed, which district shall have been previously ascertained by law, and to be informed of the nature and cause of the accusation; to be confronted with the witnesses against him; to have compulsory process for obtaining witnesses in his favour; and to have the assistance of counsel for his defence.

ARTICLE VII.—SUITS AT COMMON LAW.

In suits of common law, where the value in controversy shall exceed twenty dollars, the right of trial by jury shall be preserved, and no fact tried by a jury shall be otherwise re-examined in any court of the United States than according to the rules of the common law.

ARTICLE VIII.—EXCESSIVE BAIL.

Excessive bail shall not be required, nor excessive fines imposed, nor cruel and unusual punishments inflicted.

ARTICLE IX.—RIGHTS RETAINED BY THE PEOPLE.

The enumeration in the Constitution of certain rights shall not be construed to deny or disparage others retained by the people.

Article X.—Reserved Rights of the States.

The powers not delegated to the United States by the Constitution, nor prohibited by it to the States, are reserved to the States respectively or to the people.

Article XI.—Restriction on the Judicial Power.

Proposed by Congress in 1794 and declared adopted in 1798.

The judicial power of the United States shall not be construed to extend to any suit in law or equity commenced or prosecuted against one of the United States by citizens of another State, or by citizens or subjects of any foreign State.

Article XII.—Method of Electing a President.

Proposed by Congress and declared adopted in 1804.

The electors shall meet at their respective States, and vote by ballot for President and Vice-President, one of whom, at least, shall not be an inhabitant of the same State with themselves; they shall name in their ballots the person voted for as President, and in distinct ballots the person voted for as Vice-President, and they shall make distinct lists of all persons voted for as President, and of all persons, voted for as Vice-President, and of the number of votes for each, which lists they shall sign and certify, and transmit sealed to the seat of the government of the United States, directed to the President of the Senate. The President of the Senate shall, in presence of the Senate and House of Representatives, open all the certificates, and the votes shall then be counted. The person having the greatest number of votes for President shall be the President, if such number be a majority of the whole number of electors appointed; and if no person have such majority, then from the persons having the highest numbers, not exceeding three, on the list of those voted for as President, the House of Representatives shall choose immediately, by ballot, the President. But in choosing the President, the votes shall be taken by States, the representation from each State having one vote; a quorum for this purpose shall consist of a member or members from two-thirds of the States, and a majority of all the States shall be necessary to a choice. And if the House of Representatives shall not choose a President whenever the right of choice shall devolve upon them, before the fourth day of March next following, then the Vice-President shall act as President, as in the case of the death or other constitutional disability of the President. The person having the greatest number of votes as Vice-President shall be the Vice-President, if such number have a majority of the whole number of electors appointed; and if no person have a majority, then from the two highest numbers on the list the Senate shall choose the Vice-President; a quorum for the purpose shall consist of two-thirds of the whole number of senators, and a majority of the whole number shall be necessary to a choice. But no person constitutionally ineligible to the office of President shall be eligible to that of Vice-President of the United States

ARTICLE XIII.—SLAVERY.

Proposed by Congress in 1865, and declared adopted December, 1865.

Section 1. Neither slavery nor involuntary servitude, except as a punishment for crime whereof the party shall have been duly convicted, shall exist within the United States, or any place subject to their jurisdiction.

Section 2. Congress shall have power to enforce this Article by appropriate legislation.

ARTICLE XIV.—CIVIL RIGHTS.

Declared adopted, July 28, 1868.

Section 1. All persons born or naturalized in the United States and subject to the jurisdiction thereof are citizens of the United States and of the State wherein they reside. No State shall make or enforce any law which shall abridge the privileges or immunities of citizens of the United States; nor shall any State deprive any person of life, liberty, or property, without due process of law; nor deny to any person within its jurisdiction the equal protection of the laws.

Section 2. Representatives shall be appointed among the several States according to their respective numbers, counting the whole number of persons in each State, excluding Indians not taxed; but when the right to vote at any election for the choice of electors for President and Vice-President of the United States, representatives in Congress, the executive and judicial officers of a State, or the members of the Legislature thereof, is denied to any of the male inhabitants of such State (being twenty-one years of age and citizens of the United States), or in any way abridged, except for participation in rebellion or other crime, the basis of representation therein shall be reduced in the proportion which the number of such male citizens shall bear to the whole number of male citizens twenty-one years of age in said State.

Section 3. No person shall be a Senator or Representative in Congress, or Elector, or President, or Vice-President, or hold any office, civil or military, under the United States, or under any State, who, having previously taken an oath as a member of Congress, or as an officer of the United States, or as a member of any State Legislature, or as an executive or judicial officer of any State, to support the Constitution of the United States shall have engaged in insurrection or rebellion against the same, or given aid or comfort to the enemies thereof; but Congress may, by a vote of two-thirds of each House, remove such disability.

Section 4. The validity of the public debt of the United States, authorised by law, including debts incurred for payment of pensions and bounties, for services in suppressing insurrection or rebellion, shall not be questioned; but neither the United States or any State shall assume or pay any debt or obligation incurred in aid of insurrection or rebellion against the United States, or any claim for the loss or emancipation of any slave. But all such debts, obligations, and claims shall be held illegal and void.

Section 5. The Congress shall have power to enforce, by appropriate legislation, the provisions of this Article.

ARTICLE XV.—CIVIL RIGHTS.

Declared adopted March 30, 1870.

Section 1. The right of the citizens of the United States to vote shall not be denied or abridged by the United States, or by any State, on account of race, colour, or previous condition of servitude.

Section 2. The Congress shall have power to enforce this Article by appropriate legislation.

No. 4.—Congressional Resolution of December 29th, 1780.

A resolution of Congress, to which the name of Charles Thompson, Secretary, is attached, was issued on the 29th of December, 1780, that two hundred correct copies of the Declaration of Independence, the Articles of Confederation and Perpetual Union, the Alliances between these United States and his Most Christian Majesty, with the Constitutions or Forms of Government of the several States should be published. Accordingly, this valuable historic record was printed and published in Philadelphia. When American Independence had been obtained, in 1782, an edition was printed in London. The following year this was printed in Dublin, with this title:—"The Constitutions of the several Independent States of America; the Declaration of Independence; the Articles of Confederation between the said States; and the Treaties between his Most Christian Majesty and the United States of America." Published by order of Congress. London printed from the original Philadelphia edition, with an advertisement by the London editor. And Dublin, reprinted for Messrs. Gilbert, Price, Walker, White, Beatty, Byrne, and Cash, 1783. The latter edition—the only one seen and consulted by the writer—has the original Resolution of Congress, with the editor's advertisement prefixed, to an 8vo. volume of 254 well printed pages.

No. 5.—Presidents of the Continental Congress and of the Congress of the Confederation, 1775–1788.

1775. Peyton Randolph, Va.
1775. John Hancock, Mass.
1777. Henry Laurens, S.C.
1778. John Jay, N.Y.
1779. Samuel Huntington, Conn.
1781. Thomas M'Kean, Del.
1781. John Hanson, Md.
1782. Elias Boudinot, N.J.
1783. Thomas Mifflin, Pa.
1784. Richard H. Lee, Va.
1786. Nathaniel Gorham, Mass.
1787. Arthur St. Clair, Pa.
1788. Cyrus Griffin, Va.

No. 6.—Presidents, Vice-Presidents, and Cabinet Officers from the adoption of the Constitution to the present time.

1789.

GEORGE WASHINGTON, Pres.
Thomas Jefferson, Sec. State.
Samuel Osgood, } Post.-Gen.
Timothy Pickering, }
John Adams, V.-Pres.
Alexander Hamilton, Sec. Treas.
Henry Knox, Sec. War.
Edmund Randolph, Att.-Gen.

1793.

GEORGE WASHINGTON, Pres.
Thomas Jefferson, Edmund Randolph, Timothy Pickering, } Sec. State
Edmund Randolph, William Bradford, Charles Lee, } Att. Gen.

John Adams, V.-Pres.
Alexander Hamilton, Oliver Wolcott, } Sec. Treas.
Henry Knox, Timothy Pickering, James M'Henry, } Sec. War.
Joseph Habersham, Timothy Pickering, } Post.-Gen.

1797.

JOHN ADAMS, Pres.
Timothy Pickering, John Marshall, } Sec. State.
Oliver Wolcott, Samuel Dexter, } Sec. Treas.

Thomas Jefferson, V.-Pres.
James M'Henry, Samuel Dexter, } Sec. War.
Benjamin Stoddert, Sec. Navy.
Charles Lee, Att.-Gen.
Joseph Habersham, Post.-Gen.

1801.

THOMAS JEFFERSON, Pres.
James Madison, Sec. State.
Henry Dearborn, Sec. War.
Levi Lincoln, Att.-Gen.
Joseph Hebersham, Gideon Granger, } Post.-Gen.

Aaron Burr, V.-Pres.
Samuel Dexter, Albert Gallatin, } Sec. Treas.
Benjamin Stoddert, Robert Smith, } Sec. Navy.

1805.

THOMAS JEFFERSON, Pres.
James Madison, Sec. State.
Albert Gallatin, Sec. Treas.
Henry Dearborn, William Eustis, } Sec. War.
Gideon Granger, Post.-Gen.

George Clinton, V.-Pres.
Robert Smith, J. Crowinshield, } Sec. Navy.
Levi Lincoln, Robert Smith, J. Breckenridge, Cæsar A. Rodney, } Att.-Gen.

1809.

JAMES MADISON, Pres.
Robert Smyth, James Monroe, } Sec. State.
William Eustis, Sec. War.
Cæsar A. Rodney, Att.-Gen.

George Clinton, V.-Pres.
Albert Gallatin, Sec. Treas.
Paul Hamilton, Sec. Navy.
Gideon Granger, Post.-Gen.

1813.

JAMES MADISON, Pres.
James Monroe, Sec. State.
G. W. Campbell, A. J. Dallas, Wm. H. Crawford, } Sec. Treas.
W. Jones, B. W. Crowninshield, } Sec. Navy.

Elbridge Gerry, V.-Pres.
J. Armstrong, James Monroe, } Sec. War.
W. Pinkney, Richard Rush, } Att.-Gen.
Gidgeon Granger, B. J. Meigs, } Post.-Gen.

1817.

JAMES MONROE, Pres.
John Quincy Adams, Sec. State.
John C. Calhoun, Sec. War.
William Wirt, Att.-Gen.
R. J. Meigs, Post.-Gen.

Daniel D. Tompkins, V.-Pres.
William H. Crawford, Sec. Treas.
B. W. Crowinshield, S. Thompson, } Sec. Navy

1821.

JAMES MONROE, Pres.
John Q. Adams, Sec. State.
William H. Crawford, Sec. Treas.
William Wirt, Att.-Gen.
R. J. Meigs, J. M'Lean, } Post.-Gen.

Daniel D. Tompkins, V.-Pres.
John C. Calhoun, Sec. War.
Samuel S. Southard, S. Thompson, } Sec. Navy.

1825.

JOHN Q. ADAMS, Pres.
Henry Clay, Sec. State.
James Barbour, P. B. Porter, } Sec. War.
Samuel L. Southard, Sec. Navy.

John C. Calhoun, V.-Pres.
Richard Rush, Sec. Treas.
William Wirt, Att.-Gen.
P. M'Lean, Post.-Gen.

1829.

ANDREW JACKSON, Pres.
Martin Van Buren, Edward Livingston, } Sec. State.
John H. Eaton, Lewis Cass, } Sec. War.
John M'P. Berrien, Roger B. Taney, } Att.-Gen.

John C. Calhoun, V.-Pres.
Samuel D. Ingram, Louis M'Lean, } Sec. Treas.
John Branch, Levi Woodbury, } Sec. Navy.
William T. Barry, Post.-Gen.

1833.

ANDREW JACKSON, Pres.
Edward Livingston, Louis M'Lean, John Forsyth, } Sec. State.
Lewis Cass, B. F. Butler, } Sec. War.
Levi Woodbury, Mahlon Dickerson, } Sec. Navy.

Martin Van Buren, V.-Pres.
Roger B. Taney, B. F. Butler, } Att.-Gen.
Louis M'Lane, William J. Duane, Roger B. Taney, Levi Woodbury, } Sec. Treas.
William T. Barry, Amos Kendall, } Post.-Gen.

1837.

MARTIN VAN BUREN, Pres.
John Forsyth, Sec. State.
Joel R. Poinsett, Sec. War.
B. F. Butler, Felix Grundy, Henry D. Gilpin, } Att.-Gen.

Richard M. Johnson, V.-Pres.
Levi Woodbury, Sec Treas.
Mahlom Dickerson, James K. Paulding, } Sec. Navy.
Amos Kendall, John M. Niles, } Post.-Gen.

1841.

WM. H. HARRISON, Pres.
Daniel Webster, Sec. State.
Thomas Ewing, Sec. Treas.
John Bell, Sec. War.

John Tyler, V.-Pres.
John J. Crittenden, Att.-Gen.
George E. Badger, Sec. Navy.
Francis Granger, Post.-Gen.

1841.

JOHN TYLER, Pres.
Daniel Webster, Hugh S. Legaré, Abel P. Upshur, John C. Calhoun, } Sec. State.
Thomas Ewing, Walter Forward, John C. Spencer, George M. Bibb, } Sec. Treas.
John Bell, James M. Porter, John C. Spencer, William Wilkins, } Sec. War.

John J. Crittenden, Hugh S. Legaré, } Att.-Gen.
John Nelson, George E. Badger, Abel P. Upshur, David Henshaw, Thomas Gilmer, John Y. Mason, } Sec. Navy.
Francis Granger, Charles A. Wickliff } Post.-Gen.

1845.

JAMES K. POLK, Pres.
James Buchanan, Sec. State.
John Y. Mason, Nathan Clifford, Isaac Toucey, } Att.-Gen.
Cave Johnson, Post.-Gen.

George M. Dallas, V.-Pres.
Robert J. Walker, Sec. Treas.
George Bancroft, John Y. Mason, } Sec. Navy.
William L. Marcy, Sec. War.

1849.

ZACHARY TAYLOR, Pres.
John M. Clayton, Sec. State.
George W. Crawford, Sec. War.
Thomas Ewing, Sec. Interior.
Jacob Collamer, Post.-Gen.

Millard Fillmore, V.-Pres.
William M. Meredith, Sec. Treas.
William B. Preston, Sec. Navy.
Reverdy Johnson, Att.-Gen.

1850.

MILLARD FILLMORE, Pres.
Daniel Webster, Edward Everett, } Sec. State.
Charles M. Conrad, Sec. War.
William A. Graham John P. Kennedy, } Sec. Navy.

Nathan K. Hall, Samuel D. Hubbard } Post.-Gen.
Thomas Corwin, Sec. Treas.
Alex. H. H. Stuart, Sec. Interior.
John J. Crittenden, Att.-Gen.

1853.

FRANKLIN PIERCE, Pres.
William L. Marcy, Sec. State.
Jefferson Davis, Sec. War.
Robert M'Clelland, Sec. Interior.
James Campbell, Post.-Gen.

William R. King, V.-Pres.
James Guthrie, Sec. Treas.
James C. Dobbin, Sec. Navy.
Caleb Cushing, Att.-Gen.

1857.

JAMES BUCHANAN, Pres.
John C. Breckenridge, V.-Pres.
Lewis Cass, } Sec. State.
Jeremiah S. Black, }
Isaac Toucey, Sec. Navy.
Jacob Thompson, Sec. Interior.
Howell Cobb, }
Philip F. Thomas, } Sec. Treas.
John A. Dix, }
Jeremiah S. Black, } Att.-Gen.
Edwin M. Stanton, }
John B. Floyd, } Sec. War.
Joseph Holt, }
Aaron V. Brown, }
Joseph Holt, } Post.-Gen.
Horatio King, }

1861.

ABRAHAM LINCOLN, Pres.
Hannibal Hamlin, V.-Pres.
William H. Seward, Sec. State.
Simon Cameron, } Sec. War.
Edwin M. Stanton, }
Caleb B. Smith, } Sec. Int.
John P. Usher, }
Gideon Welles, Sec. Navy.
Salmon P. Chase, } Sec. Treas.
Wm. P. Fessenden, }
Edward Bates, } Att.-Gen.
James Speed, }
Montgomery Blair, } Post.-Gen.
William Dennison, }

1865.

ABRAHAM LINCOLN, Pres.
Andrew Johnson, V.-Pres.
William H. Seward, Sec. State.
Edwin M. Stanton, Sec. War.
John P. Usher, } Sec. Int.
James Harlan, }
Hugh M'Cullagh, Sec. Treas.
Gideon Welles, Sec. Navy.
James Speed, Att.-Gen.
William Dennison, Post.-Gen.

1865.

ANDREW JOHNSON, Pres.
William H. Seaward, Sec. State.
Edwin M. Stanton } Sec. War.
Ulysses S. Grant, }
Lorenzo Thomas, }
John M. Schofield, }
Hugh M'Cullagh, Sec. Treas.
Gideon Welles, Sec. Navy.
James Harlan, } Sec. Int.
Orville H. Browning, }
James Speed, } Att.-Gen.
Henry Stanbery, }
William M. Evarts, }
William Dennison, } Post.-Gen
Alex. W. Randall, }

1869.

ULYSSES S. GRANT, Pres.
Schuyler Colfax, V.-Pres.
E. B. Washburne, } Sec. State.
Hamilton Fish, }
J. D. Cox, } Sec. Inter.
Columbus Delano, }
G. S. Boutwell, Sec. Treas.
J. A. Rawlins, } Sec. War.
Wm. W. Belknap, }
Adolph E. Borie, } Sec. Navy.
George M. Robeson, }
George H. Williams, Att.-Gen.
John A. J. Creswell, Post.-Gen.

1873.

ULYSSES S. GRANT, Pres.
Hamilton Fish, Sec. State.
William W. Belknap, Alphonso Taft, J. D. Cameron, } Sec. War.
John A. J. Creswell, Marshall Jewell, James N. Tyner, } Post.-Gen.
George M. Robeson, Sec. Navy.

Henry Wilson, V.-Pres.
Columbus Delano, Zachariah Chandler, } Sec. Int.
William A. Richardson, Benj. H. Bristow, Lot M. Morrill, } Sec. Treas.
George H. Williams, Edwards Pierrepont, Alphonso Taft, } Att.-Gen.

1877.

RUTHERFORD B. HAYES, Pres.
William M. Evarts, Sec. State.
R. W. Thompson, Nathan Goff, } Sec. Navy.
D. M. Key, Horace Maynard, } Post.-Gen.

William A. Wheeler, V.-Pres.
John Sherman, Sec. Treas.
G. W. M'Crary, Alexander Ramsey, } Sec. War.
Carl Schurz, Sec. Interior.
Charles Devans, Att.-Gen.

1881.

JAMES A. GARFIELD, Pres.
James G. Blaine, Sec. State.
R. T. Lincoln, Sec. War.
W. H. Hunt, Sec. Navy.
Wayne M'Veigh, Att.-Gen.

Chester A. Arthur, V.-Pres.
William Windom, Sec. Treas.
S. J. Kirkwood, Sec. Interior.
T. L. James, Post.-Gen.

1881.

CHESTER A. ARTHUR, Pres.
James G. Blaine, F. T. Frelinghuysen, } Sec. State.
R. T. Lincoln, Sec. War.
W. H. Hunt, W. E. Chandler } Sec. Navy.
Wayne M'Veigh, R. H. Brewster, } Att.-Gen.
S. J. Kirkwood, H. M. Teller, } Sec. Int.

William Windom, C. J. Folger, Walter Q. Gresham Hugh M'Culloch, } Sec. Treas.
T. L. James, T. O. Howe, Walter Q. Gresham Frank Hatton, } Post.-Gen.

1885.

GROVER CLEVELAND, Pres.
Thomas F. Bayard, Sec. State.
William C. Endicott, Sec. War.
William C. Whitney, Sec. Navy.
William F. Vilas. Don. M. Dickinson } Post.-Gen.

Thomas A. Hendricks, V.-Pres.
Daniel Manning, Charles S. Fairchild, } Sec. Treas.
Augustus H. Garland, Att.-Gen.
Lucius Q. C. Lamar, William F. Vilas, } Sec. Int.

1889.

BENJAMIN HARRISON, Pres.
James G. Blaine, John W. Foster, } Sec. State.
Redfield Proctor, Stephen B. Elkins, } Sec. War.
Benjamin F. Tracy, Sec. Navy.
John Wanamaker, Post.-Gen.
Levi Parson Morton, V.-Pres.
William Windom, Charles Foster, } Sec. Treas.
William H. H. Miller, Att.-Gen.
John W. Noble, Sec. Interior.
Jeremiah M. Rusk, Sec. Agric.

1893.

GROVER CLEVELAND, Pres.
Walter Q. Gresham, Richard Olney, } Sec. State.
Daniel S. Lamont, Sec. War.
Hilary A. Herbert, Sec. Navy.
Wilson S. Bissel, William L. Wilson, } Post-Gen.
A. E. Stevenson, V.-Pres.
John G. Carlisle, Sec. Treas.
Richard Olney, Judson Harmon, } Att.-Gen.
Hoke Smith, David R. Francis, } Sec. Int.
J. Sterling Morton, Sec. Agric.

1897.

WILLIAM M'KINLEY, Pres.
John Sherman, William R. Day, John Hay, } Sec. State.
Russell A. Alger, Elihu Root, } Sec. War.
James A. Gary, Charles E. Smith } Post.-Gen.
Garrett A. Hobart, V.-Pres.
Lyman, J. Gage, Sec. Treas.
John D. Long, Sec. Navy.
Joseph M'Kenna, John W. Griggs, } Att.-Gen.
Cornelius N. Bliss, Ethan Allen Hitchcock, } Sec. Int
James Wilson, Sec. Agric.

1901.

WILLIAM M'KINLEY, Pres.
John Hay, Sec. State.
Elihu Root, Sec. War.
John D. Long, Sec, Navy.
Lyman J. Gage, Sec. Treas.
Theodore Roosevelt, V.-Pres.
John W. Griggs, Att.-Gen.
Charles E. Smith, Post.-Gen.
Ethan Allan Hitchcock, Sec. Int.
James Wilson, Sec. Agric.

1901.

THEODORE ROOSEVELT, Pres.
John Hay, Sec. State.
Elihu Root, Sec. War.
John D. Long, Sec. Navy.
Lyman J. Gage, Sec. Treas.
Ethan Allan Hitchcock, Sec. Int.
Charles E. Smith, Post.-Gen.
P. C. Knox, Att.-Gen.
James Wilson, Sec. Agric.

No. 7.—The Twelfth Census of the United States.

The population by the Twelfth Census of the United States was officially announced by Director Merriam to be 76,295,220, compared with 63,069,756 in 1890; this is a gain of 13,225,464 in ten years, or an increase of 21 per cent. The table given below is approximately correct, although it is subject to final verification. Seventy-four millions six-hundred and twenty-seven thousand nine hundred and seven persons reside in forty-five States, the remainder in the Territories, Alaska, Hawaii, etc. No provision was made by the Census for the enumeration of the inhabitants of Porto Rico, but a Census of that island taken on October 16, 1899, under the direction of the War Department showed a population of 953,243.

The population by States is as follows:

States	1900	1890
Alabama	1,828,697	1,513,017
Arkansas	1,311,564	1,128,179
California	1,485,053	1,208,130
Colorado	539,700	412,198
Connecticut	908,355	746,258
Delaware	184,735	168,493
Florida	528,542	391,422
Georgia	2,216,239	1,867,353
Idaho	161,771	84,385
Illinois	4,821,550	3,826,351
Indiana	2,516,463	2,192,404
Iowa	2,251,829	1,911,896
Kansas	1,469,496	1,427,096
Kentucky	2,147,174	1,858,635
Louisiana	1,381,627	1,118,587
Maine	694,366	661,086
Maryland	1,189,946	1,042,390
Massachusetts	2,805,346	2,238,943
Michigan	2,419,782	2,093,889
Minnesota	1,751,395	1,301,826
Mississippi	1,551,372	1,289,600
Missouri	3,107,117	2,679,184
Montana	243,289	132,159
Nebraska	1,068,901	1,058,910
Nevada	42,334	45,761
New Hampshire	411,588	376,530
New Jersey	1,883,669	1,444,933
New York	7,268,009	5,997,853
North Carolina	1,891,992	1,617,947
North Dakota	319,040	182,719
Ohio	4,157,545	3,672,316
Oregon	413,532	313,767
Pennsylvania	6,301,365	5,258,014
Rhode Island	428,556	345,506
South Carolina	1,340,312	1,151,149
South Dakota	401,559	328,808
Tenessee	2,022,723	1,767,518
Texas	3,048,828	2,235,523
Utah	276,565	207,905
Vermont	343,641	332,422
Virginia	1,854,184	1,655,980
Washington	517,672	349,390
West Virginia	958,900	762,794
Wisconsin	2,068,963	1,686,380
Wyoming	92,531	60,705
Total (for 45 States)	74,627,907	62,116,811
Indians not taxed	44,617	
Territories.	1900.	1890.
Alaska (estimated)	44,000	32,052
Arizona	122,212	59,620
District of Columbia	278,713	230,392
Hawaii	154,001	89,990
Indian Territory	391,960	180,182
New Mexico	193,777	153,593
Oklahoma	398,245	61,834
Persons in the service of the U.S., stationed abroad (estimated)	84,400	
Indians, etc., on Indian reservations, except Indian Territory	.....	145,282
Total for seven Territories, etc.	1,667,313	952,945
Indians not taxed	89,541	.....

The following list shows the population of a number of the principal cities of the United States:

Greater New York	3,437,202	Cincinatti	325,902
[Brooklyn Borough,	1,167,582]	Pittsburg	321,616
Chicago	1,698,575	New Orleans	287,104
Philadelphia	1,293,697	Detroit	285,704
St. Louis	575,238	Milwaukee	285,315
Boston	560,892	District of Columbia	278,718
Baltimore	508,957	Newark	246,070
Cleveland	381,768	Jersey City	206,433
Buffalo	352,219	Lousville	204,731
San Francisco	342,782	Minneapolis	202,718

No. 8.—Area of each State and Territory in the United States, Date of Organization of Territories, and of Admission of New States into the Union.

[Admission of States from the Report of the Commissioner of the General Land Office, and areas from the Census of 1890.]

States and Territories.	Date of Act of organization or admission.	Area.			
		Water.	Land.		Total.
ORIGINAL STATES.		*Sq. Miles*	*Sq. Miles*	*Acres.*	*Sq. Miles*
New Hampshire	——	300	9,005	5,763,200	9,305
Massachusetts	——	275	8,040	5,145,600	8,315
Rhode Island	——	197	1,053	673,900	1,250
Connecticut	——	145	4,845	3,100,800	4,990
New York	——	1,550	47,620	30,476,800	49,170
New Jersey	——	720	7,525	4,816,000	7,815
Pennsylvania	——	230	44,985	28,790,400	45,215
Delaware	——	90	1,960	1,254,400	2,050
Maryland	——	2,350	9,860	6,310,400	12,210
Virginia	——	2,325	40,125	25,680,000	42,450
North Carolina	——	3,670	48,580	31,091,200	52,250
South Carolina	——	400	30,170	19,308,800	30,570
Georgia	——	495	58,980	37,747,200	59,475
STATES ADMITTED.					
Kentucky	Feb. 4, 1791	400	40,000	25,600,000	40,400
Vermont	Feb. 18, 1791	430	9, 35	5,846,400	9,565
Tennessee	June 1, 1796	300	41,75	26,720,000	42,050
Maine	Mar. 3, 1820	3,145	29,895	19,132,800	33,040
Texas[1]	Dec. 29, 1845	3,490	262,290	167,865,600	265,780
West Virginia	Dec. 31, 1862	135	24,645	15,772,800	24,780
PUBLIC LAND STATES ADMITTED.					
Ohio — State	Apr. 30, 1802	300	40,760	26,086,400	41,060
Louisiana — Territory	Mar. 3, 1805	3,300	45,420	29,068,800	48,720
Louisiana — State	Apr. 8, 1812				
Indiana — Territory	May 7, 1800	440	35,910	22,982,400	36,350
Indiana — State	Dec. 11, 1816				
Mississippi — Territory	Apr. 7, 1798	470	46,340	29,657,600	46,810
Mississippi — State	Dec. 10, 1817				
Illinois — Territory	Feb. 3, 1809	650	56,000	35,840,000	56,650
Illinois — State	Dec. 3, 1818				
Alabama — Territory	Mar. 3, 1817	710	51,540	32,985,600	52,250
Alabama — State	Dec. 14, 1819				
Missouri — Territory	June 4, 1812	680	68,735	43,990,400	69,415
Missouri — State	Mar. 2, 1821				
Arkansas — Territory	Mar. 2, 1819	805	53,045	33,948,800	53,850
Arkansas — State	June 15, 1836				
Michigan — Territory	Jan. 11, 1805	1,485	57,430	36,755,200	58,915
Michigan — State	Jan. 26, 1837				

No. 8.—Area of each State and Territory, &c.—*Continued.*

States and Territories.	Date of Act of organization or admission.	Area.			
		Water.	Land.		Total.
PUBLIC LAND STATES ADMITTED—Continued.		*Sq. Miles*	*Sq. Miles*	*Acres.*	*Sq. Miles*
Florida ... Territory	Mar. 30, 1822	4,440	54,240	34,713,600	58,680
Florida ... State	Mar. 3, 1845				
Iowa ... Territory	June 12, 1838	550	55,475	35,504,000	56,025
Iowa ... State	Mar. 3, 1845				
Wisconsin Territory	Apr. 20, 1836	1,590	54,450	34,848,000	56,040
Wisconsin State	May 29, 1848				
California ... State	Sept. 9, 1850	2,380	155,980	99,827,200	158,360
Minnesota Territory	Mar. 3, 1849	4,160	79,205	50,691,200	83,365
Minnesota State	May 11, 1858				
Oregon ... Territory	Aug. 14, 1848	1,470	94,560	60,518,400	96,030
Oregon ... State	Feb. 14, 1859				
Kansas ... Territory	May 30, 1854	380	81,700	52,288,000	82,080
Kansas ... State	Jan. 29, 1861				
Nevada ... Territory	Mar. 2, 1861	960	109,740	70,233,600	110,700
Nevada ... State	Mar. 21, 1864				
Nebraska ... Territory	May 30, 1854	670	76,840	49,177,600	77,510
Nebraska ... State	Feb. 9, 1867				
Colorado Territory	Feb. 28, 1861	280	103,645	66,332,800	103,925
Colorado State	Mar. 3, 1875				
North Dakota Territory	Mar. 2, 1861	600	70,195	44,924,800	70,795
North Dakota State	Feb. 22, 1889				
South Dakota Territory	Mar. 2, 1861	800	76,850	49,184,000	77,650
South Dakota State	Feb. 22, 1889				
Montana Territory	May 26, 1864	770	145,310	92,998,400	146,080
Montana State	Feb. 22, 1889				
Washington Territory	Mar. 2, 1853	2,300	66,880	42,803,200	69,180
Washington State	Feb. 22, 1889				
Idaho Territory	Mar. 3, 1863	510	84,290	53,945,600	84,800
Idaho State	July 3, 1890				
Wyoming Territory	July 25, 1868	315	97,575	62,448,000	97,890
Wyoming State	July 10, 1890				
Utah Territory	Sept. 9, 1850	2,780	82,190	52,601,600	84,970
Utah State	July 16, 1894				
PUBLIC LAND TERRITORIES.					
New Mexico... Territory	Sept. 9, 1850	120	122,460	78,374,400	122,580
Arizona ... Territory	Feb. 24, 1863	100	112,920	72,268,800	113,020
Alaska ... Territory	July 27, 1868	——	——	——	590,884
Indian Territory; limits defined by act May, 1854		400	31,000	19,840,000	31,400
District of Columbia Territory	July 16, 1790	10	60	38,400	70
District of Columbia District	Mar. 3, 1791				
Oklahoma[1] ... Territory	May 2, 1890	200	38,830	24,851,200	39,030
Total ...	——	54,842	2,970,038	1,893,476,100	[2]3,616,484

[1] Including Cherokee country and No Man's Land.
[2] Includes 726 square miles in Delaware Bay and lower New York Bay.



INDEX.

The following references in Numeral Letters are, to the Preface, thus abbreviated, *Pref.*, and to the Appendix, thus abbreviated, *App.* The Numeral Figures indicate the Text and Notes in the body of the work, and *et seq.* signifies, that the authority there quoted occurs again in subsequent pages.

Abenakis, Christian Indians, 46, 84; renewal of war, 92, 93.

Abercrombie, General, appointed to command, 120; defeated at Ticonderoga, 122.

Aberdeen, Earl of, difficulties in reference to Oregon Territory arranged by, proposal for compromise on terms favourable to America, sent by, 353.

Aberdeen, Earl and Countess of, receive the President of America on occasion of their visit to the Irish Village in the Columbian Exhibition, 645.

Acadia, Governor Dudley fits out an expedition to ravage, 85; annexed by British, and renamed Nova Scotia, 86; cruel deportation and dispersion of the French inhabitants of by the British, 116; celebrated in Longfellow's immortal poem, "Evangeline," 117.

Acts of **Trade,** enforcement of, 134.

Adams, Charles Francis, American Ambassador to England; born in Boston, 1807, 422.

Adams, John Quincy, American Commissioner, 328; appointed Secretary of State, 340.

Adams, John, 198; Ambassador to the Court of St. James, 287; next in succession to Washington as President of the United States, 297 death of, 343.

Adams, Samuel, opposition to the Stamp Act of, 142, 143; signer of Declaration of Independence, 198.

Adams, William, English Commissioner, 328.

Administration, actively opposed by Governor Horatio Seymour, 430.

Aguinaldo, Emilio, a native leader, proclaims himself President of the Phillipine Republic, 656; begins a war of resistance against the Americans, 662; surrender of, 673.

Aitken, Robert, Irish Printer, 148.

Aix-la-Chapelle, treaty of, 111.

Akansas, original name of Arkansas, 65.

Alabama, a territory, formed into, 341; into a State, 341; population for 1810 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.

Alabama, Confederate warship, known as "No. 290," 490; naval engagement with the Kearsarge, 563, 564.

Alabama Claims, settlement of, 634, 635.

Alaska, extreme north-western territory of, purchased from Russia by the United States for the sum of 7,200,000 dollars, 632; disputed boundary line between Canada and, 664, 670; estimated population of, *App.* xxvii.

Albemarle, Duke of, 54

Alger, Russell A., Secretary of War, member of McKinley Cabinet, 652.

Algiers, Government of, Rupture with, Causes, American Provisions of Settlement, same accepted, 338, 339.

Algonquin, Indians, 94.

Allan, Ethan, leader of the "Green Mountain Boys," 163; his capture of Ticonderoga, 164, captured himself near Montreal, inhumanly treated as a prisoner in England, 178.

Allan family, 105.

Alison's History of Europe, 304, *et seq.*; Lives of Lord Castlereagh and Sir Charles Steward, 309.

Allison, Rev. Francis, distinguished Irish Presbyterian clergyman in Pennsylvania, 100.
Almovodar, Duke of, Spanish Minister of State, 659.
America, called "Great Ireland," 4; discovery of by St. Brendan, 6, 15; early colonization of by Irish, 8; aboriginal races of; remarkable traces of early civilization, 11, 12; evidence of Scandinavian colonization, 13; origin of name, 17; other attempts to discover, 6, 7.
American Army, mustering of the Revolutionary, 160; deplorable condition of the, 215; mutiny in the, 267, 268; disbanding the, 285; Washington's Farewell Address to the, 286; again he is called on to assume command of, 298.
American Association, formation of, 154.
American Bottom, French settlement in the, 91.
American Coast, blockade of proclaimed, 328.
American Commonwealth, its general provisions, many names of Irish and Irish-Americans, *Pref.* vi.
American Flag, decree of Congress that the American flag should have thirteen stripes to represent the Thirteen States, and that the Union be thirteen stars, representing a new constellation, 223, 224.
American Knights, the Order of, 468.
American Quarterly Review, 287.
American Reverses at opening of campaign in 1812, 310.
American Successes on Lakes Erie and Ontario, 319, 321; varying, 326, 327; successes at sea, 311, 312, 313; final successes, 331, 332, 333, 334, 335, 336, 337.
American Privateers, destruction at Bedford of, 248.
American Sailors, impressment of, by the British, 295.
American Seamen, impressment of, by Great Britain, effects of Report to Congress, 305.
American State Papers, 307, *et seq.*
Amerigo Vespucci, Western Continent called after him, 17; his right to the honour doubtful; his voyages, 18.
Amherst General, 121; marches against Ticonderoga, 123.
Amnesty, Proclamation of, 628.
Ampudia, Mexican General, fortifies the town of Monterey, defeated by United States troops, large number of Irishmen in these engagements, 354, 355.
Anaconda and **Atlas,** American brigs, captured in Ocracoke Harbour by British General Warren, 315.
Anderson, Major, surrenders Fort Sumter to Southern States, 372.
Anderson, Major-General James Patton, appointed for the Military District of Florida, 582.
Andersonville, in Georgia, in which 35,000 Union soldiers were confined by the Confederates, 594, 595.
Andre, Major John, an adjutant-general in the British Army, 266; hanged as a spy at Tappan, on the Hudson River, 267.
Andros, Sir Edmond, Governor-General of New England, 67, 68.
Annapolis, why so called, 86; capital of Maryland, 69.
Anne, Queen of England, 79.
Annesley, Peerage case, 99.
Annual Register, 122, *et seq.*
Antietam, or Sharpsburg, battle of, 447.
Appalachees, Christian Indians, persecution of, 82.
Appleton's "Atlas of the United States," *Pref.* ix. p. 3.
Appleton's "Cyclopedia of American Biography," *Pref.* ix., *et seq.*
Area of each State and Territory in United States, *App.* xxviii, xxix.
Argall, Captain, 27, 28.
Argus, surrender of ship by Americans, 318.
Arista, General, a Mexican, 354.
Arkansas, a Confederate gun-boat, 478.
Arkansas, State of, admitted into the Union, 350; hurried into the Confederacy by revolutionary terrorism; her governor openly threatens to secede from secession; movement for reconstruction of, 523, 524; ravaged by Porter, Poindexter, and Cobbe in July, 434; population of, in 1880 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.
Archives, European, relating to America, *Pref.* vii.
Arizona, organised as a territory, 642; estimated population of, *App.* xxvii.

Arlington, Earl of, 55.
Armistead, General Lewis A., 504.
Armistice, on part of England proposed by General Warren and Sir George Provost, Governor of Canada; rejected; invasion of Canada, 310.
Arms, supply of, military officer sent to Europe to purchase and make contracts for Confederates, 421.
Armstrong's "War of 1812," 316 *et seq.*
Arnold, Benedict, Commander of expeditionary forces against Lower Canada, 179, 182, 191; engagements in New York, 213; placed by Washington in command of New York 242; treachery of, 266, 267; having deserted the American arms commissioned as Brigadier-General in the British service, 268; his invasion of Virginia, 268, 269.
Arthur, Chester A., of New York, whose father was born in Antrim, Ireland, elected Vice-President of America; succeeded to the Presidency on the death of President Garfield, 638, 639.
Articles of **Peace** signed on the 30th November, 1782, in which it was declared that his Majesty had acknowledged the United Colonies to be "free, sovereign and independent states," 282.
Article of War, dismissing from U.S. Service officers guilty of surrendering fugitive slaves, approved by President Lincoln, 439.
Ashburton, Lord, selected by Sir Robert Peel to proceed to America on a pacific mission; Treaty establishes, that searching ships on high seas be abrogated, 351, 352.
Ashby, Confederate Brigadier-General Turner, killed, 400.
Assembly of **Massachusetts** suppressed, 147; sittings removed from Salem to Concord; vote passed to enrol 12,000 "minute men"; establishes depots of arms and ammunition; remonstrance of, regarding increase of troops in Boston, 153.
Assembly of **New York,** resolves to disobey the Mutiny Act; prohibited by English Parliament from transacting any legislative business, 147.
Assembly of **Virginia,** dissolved by British Crown, 147, 151.
Atalanta or **Atlantis,** fabled island of the ancients, 2.
Athens, Ala., capitulation of the garrison at, 571.
Atlanta, evacuated by Confederates, 562; Federal troops assembled at; all the depot buildings, machine shops and stores at, blown up or burned by the Federal Army, 585.
Atlantic, early geographical descriptions of, 2; frequent visits to, by Europeans, before the time of Columbus, 3, 4; St. Brendan's Trans-Atlantic voyage, 5, 6, 7; voyage of Columbus across the, 15, 16, 17.
Atlantic Cable, first laid between Ireland, Newfoundland, and New York, 368.
Augur, General, commands a division under Major-General Banks, 488.
Autonomy, separate, discussed by the Confederate Congress, 465.
Auxiliaries, ferocious, great dislike of humane British and German officers at having bands of wild Indians attached to the British Army, 224; savage deeds committed by them, 225.
Averell, General, encounters and defeats a portion of the rebel army at Winchester, 549; captures their guns, 550.

Bacon, Nathaniel, subdues Indians, 55; defeats Sir Wm. Berkeley, 56.
Baily, Captain Theodore, commanded column of the Red, consisting of eight ships, 404.
Bainbridge, Commodore, captures the "Java," British vessel, 313.
Baithen, St., Abbot of Iona, voyage of, 7.
Baltimore, See of, established by Pope Pius VI. having for its first Bishop the Rev. John Carroll, 286, 287.
Baltimore, City of, laid out, 81, threatened by the British, 329. Riots at, 378.
Baltimore, George Calvert, Lord, early history, 31; founds Baltimore 32, appoints Stone Governor, 49; deposed by the Puritans, 49, 50; his rights in Maryland again established, 51.
Bancroft's, George, "History of the United States, from the Discovery of the American Continent," 26, *et seq.*

Bank of France, failure of, 98.
Banks, General, retreat of, to Winchester; defeated, further retirement to Martinsburg; retreat across the Potomac, 399; recrossed the Potomac, 401; defeats the enemy at Pleasant Hill; cavalry advance attacked and defeated by the Confederates, who captured 19 pieces of artillery and an immense amount of transportation, waggons and stores; after a loss of 3,000 in killed, wounded, and missing, retires to Pleasant Hill, at which a battle was fought; some of the guns recaptured, 553, 554; relieved of his command, 565.
Banks, Nathaniel P., appointed Speaker in the House of Representatives, 367.
Barksdale, Brigadier-General, supported by Anderson and M'Lawes, 472; wounded, 506.
Barnes, Brigadier-General, of Volunteers, of Irish descent, 500.
Barre, Colonel Isaac, opposes the American Stamp Act, 143.
Barneys, Irish emigrants settled in Maryland, 101.
Barney, Commodore, defends Bladensburg, 328.
Bartlett, Josiah, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 197.
Barton, Colonel William, performs one of the bravest acts recorded in the American Revolution; awarded by Congress a sword and a tract of land in Vermont, 224.
Barry, John, Irish sea-captain, appointed to form an American Navy, 192; assigned to command of the "Lexington," and captures an English war-vessel, 193.
Batesville, on the White River, reached by General Seymour, 434.
Batie, Irish Immigrant in New York, 82.
Bayard, James A., American Commissioner at Ghent, 328.
Bazaine, French General, commands in Mexico, 489.
Beauregard, Pierre G. T., General; removed from Charleston to command Confederates, 380; victory at Bull Run, 381, 382; commissioned Major-General, 384; left Manassas and proceeded West, 402; evacuated Corinth, May 30th, 406; returned to Charleston, September, 1862, 437; placed in command of the Confederate Army in the West, 583.
Beckford, Alderman, member for London City, opposes the Stamp Act, 143.
Beckwith, Sir Sidney, 315.
Behring Sea, seal fisheries, 641; differences between United States and Great Britain, respecting, 642.
Belfast, Maine, Irish establishment in, 104.
Belfast, Ireland, meetings held in, approving of the American resistance, 158.
Bellamont, Lord, Governor of New York, 78; fits out an expedition to suppress piracy, 79.
Benjamin, Judah Peter, of Louisiana, Confederate Attorney-General, 465.
Bennington, Battle of, complete rout of the British, Colonel Breyman retreating in confusion, leaving his guns and baggage on the field, 227.
Benton, Thomas H., Senator of Missouri, resolutely opposes the policy of John C. Calhoun, 362.
Berkley, George, celebrated Metaphysical philosopher; his birth; arrival at Newport, Rhode Island; return to Ireland; bequest to Yale College, 103.
Berkeley, Lord, 53, 54.
Berkeley, Sir William, 55, 56.
Berry, General Hiram George, born in Rockland, Me.; courage and conduct much admired by his soldiers; commands Brigade of Thirty Seventh New York Irish Rifles and three Michigan Regiments; repulses the Confederates, 412.
Berthier, General, under whom a force of 4,000 men were destroyed by the Mexicans, 442.
Beverly's, Robert, "History of the present State of Virginia," 26, *et seq.*
Biddle, Captain Nicholas, Commander of the American frigate, "Randolph," carrying 32 guns, 249; captures the British warship, "Hornet," 337.
Bigot, Fathers James and Vincent, Missionaries in Maine, 77.
Big Bethel, Battle at, Federals defeated, 379.
Bills of Rights, passed by New York Assembly, 68; for creation of New States passed, 365; passed by Senate of United States for raising 500,000 men, and for a loan of 500,000,000 dols., 380; to free all slaves, used for military purposes by the Confederates, sanctioned by President Lincoln, 435.

Binnetean, Father Julian, Missionary in Maine, 77.

"Black Code," abrogation of, in District of Columbia, 439.

Blackstock, defeat of the British at, by General Sumpter, 267.

Blackwell, deputy-governor of Pennsylvania, 64.

Bladensburg, Battle of, 328, 329.

Blair, General Frank P., assault of, on Vicksburg, 462.

Blakely, Captain, presented with medal by President and Congress for bravery, 323.

Blakely Fort, carried by assault, 603.

Blanco, Marshal, conciliatory proclamation to the Cubans issued by, in which he promised them self-government, 653.

Blenker, General Louis, commanded division of second corps for defence of Washington, Fortress Monroe, and other places, 407.

Bliss, Cornelius A., Secretary of the Interior, member of McKinley Cabinet, 652.

Block, Adrian, Dutch navigator, 32.

Blockade of United States vessels in nearly every port, 317.

Blue Laws, why so designated, 33.

Blunt, Major-General James G. of the U.S. Volunteers, called from Kansas to repel the Confederates from Missouri, 435.

Boer War, pacific proposals of United States Government for peace between Great Britain and the Boer Republics, rejected by the English Ministry; Boer delegates arrive in New York, 670; their interview with President M'Kinley, 671.

Bonnevue, Louis Hector Calliéres, Governor-General of Canada, 78.

Boone, Daniel, first settler in Kentucky, 109; his Irish companions, 109, 139.

Booth, John Wilkes, assassinates President Lincoln, 622, 623; eludes capture for several days, eventually overtaken and shot, 624.

Boston, foundation of, 38; legality of English writs disputed in, 134; Irish families in, 138; serious riots in, 144; regiments ordered from Ireland and from Halifax to suppress opposition; surrounded by ships of war; troops landed to intimidate the inhabitants of; refusal of the Assembly to provide quarters for the troops; troops posted in State House and Faneuil Hall, and encamped on the common; resentment of people, and refusal of Assembly to transact business while threatened by armed force; people of Boston fired upon by troops, 148; Bostonians clamour for their removal from the city, 149; excisable tea thrown into Boston Harbour, 150; determination in England to proceed to extreme measures with the people of Boston; English policy of retaliation; denunciation in House of Commons of people of Boston; Port Bill passed by English Parliament, Bill passed to prevent town meetings; Bill passed to remove to England for trial persons charged with offences against the State, 151; surrounded by American Army, 161; dispositions of besieging troops, 166; siege of, 189, 190.

Boers, delegates of appeal for United States intervention in their war against English aggression, 670; popular sympathy for their cause, but the Cabinet decides on a strict neutrality, 671.

Boundary, line between the United States and British America, 635.

Boudinot, Elias, President of Continental Congress in 1782, *app.* xx.

Bowen, General J. S., at Grand Gulf, 480; defeated by General Grant, 481; assists at Conference for surrender of Vicksburg, 487.

Boxer, British vessel captured, 318.

Boyd, Colonel, moves on the Wabash, on which some of the principal Indian villages were built; disturbances originated by the British, 308.

Boyle, Jeremiah T., Brigadier-General Military Governor of Kentucky, 431;

Brackenbridge, Hugh Henry author of "Modern Chivalry," 292.

Bragg, Braxton, appointed Confederate General, invades Kentucky, 431, retreats, 433; retires before General Rosecrans, to Chattanooga, 514; his battle of Chickamauga and victory, 515, 516; his battle and defeat at Missionary Ridge or Chattanooga, 518, 519, 520, 521; at his own request removed from command of the Confederate Army, 522.

Breckenridge, Brigadier-General, musters a force of 3,500 men and marches on Staunton; defeats General Sigel at the north fork of the Shenadoah, with great loss of men and ammunition, 540; enters East Tennessee with a Confederate force and attacks General Gillem near Morristown, capturing his artillery and several hundred prisoners, 583.

Braddock, General, arrived in America, 116; his defeat and death, 117.

Bradford, William, Governor of Plymouth, 30.

Brady, Samuel, Captain over a Company of Rangers in 1779, 1780, 1781, afterwards became a colonel, 190.

Brand, Catholic Bishop of Quebec, 177.

Brandan, St., Isle of, position on Italian charts, 15.

Brandywine, battle of, 233, 234.

Brannan, Brevet-General, John Milton, an Irish-American, Chief of Artillery at the Battle of Missionary Ridge, 519.

Braxton, Carter, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 205.

Brazos Santiago, on the Rio Grande, last conflict of the Civil War occurred at, 620.

Briar Creek, rout of the Americans at, with a loss of seven cannons, and almost all their arms, ammunition, and baggage, 251.

Bridge across the Chickahominy, destroyed by the Irish Brigade, 416.

Bridges which led to Richmond, over Chickahominy River destroyed; reconstructed, or new ones built by McClelland, 410.

Bristol merchants send Irish slaves to West Indies, 47; petition from, approving the resistance of the Americans, 158.

British Army, reverses of, 334; return to England of, 335.

British Commissioners, propositions for peace submitted to Congress; absurd manifesto issued by, 241.

British Empire, dismemberment of, in America, 109.

British Expedition, against the Southern States, 249, 250.

British Forces, in America at the beginning of the year 1779, 250.

British Legislature, alleged right of, to tax Americans; determines to remove all Colonial taxes except duty on tea, 149.

British Prince Regent, barbarous avowal of, 319, 320.

Brock, General, killed at Battle of Queenstown, 311.

Brough, John, War Democrat's action in Ohio, 468.

Brown, General, attacks the British troops, 322; gains the Battle of Chippewa, 326, 327.

Brown, John, zeal for abolition of slavery, 368; invasion of Virginia by; condemned to death, 369.

Brown, Joseph E., Governor of Georgia, overtures of, to General Sherman towards withdrawing that State from the Confederacy, 573, 574.

Bryans, Irish emigrants settled in Pennsylvania, 99.

Bryan, William Jennings, Democratic candidate opposed to M'Kinley, 650, 651; a second time unsuccessful as candidate for the Presidency, 671.

Bryce, James, "The American Commonwealth," by, 288, 289.

Buchanan, James, elected President 367.

Buell, General Don Carlos, having head-quarters at Louisville, 390; his absence encourages the Confederates to advance on Corinth, 402; he arrives in time for the battle, 403; foils the attempt of Bragg to seize Louisville, 432.

Buena Vista, Mexicans defeated by U.S. Army under General Taylor, 355.

Buffalo, defence of, taken and burned by British, Indians massacre women and children, 322, 323.

Buford, Brigadier-General John, covers Federal retreat with cavalry, 493; encounters General Hill's leading Confederate division at Oak Hill, and gallantly resists 495.

Bullock, James D., 491.

Bull's Run, first battle of, Federals defeated, 381.

Bull's Run, second battle of (or, as it is sometimes called, Groveton, and at other times, Manassas), lasted for two days, 429.

Bunker Hill, 92; encampment of British on, 159; battle of, 167, 168, 169, 170, 171.

Bunker Hill Monument, laying the corner stone of, 343.
Burgmont, M., 97, 98.
Burgoyne, General at battle of Bunker's Hill, 169; placed in command of Army at Quebec, 224; issues a manifesto to the revolted Colonies accompanied with vain-glorious threats of his arms, 224; carries Ticonderoga Fort, 225; difficulties on his march, 227; crossed the Hudson on September 14th, and encamped on the heights and plains of Saratoga, 228; defeated in battle 229; surrender of his whole army, 230, 231.
Burke, Aedanus, jurist, Chief Justice for South Carolina, 285.
Burke, Edmund, protest against American taxation, 145, 146, 151; his eulogy on General Montgomery, 182; moves his thirteen conciliatory measures towards America, 157, 158.
Burke, Lieutenant-Colonel Denis F., a native of Cork, Ireland; commissioned lieutenant in the eighty-eighth regiment of the Irish Brigade, served with distinguished bravery through battles under General McClellanad around Richmond; actively engaged in the battles of the Wilderness; afterwards, and during the rest of the war, fought in most of the bloodiest battles; was recommended for the brevet of Brigadier-General, and obtained this rank; arrested in Dublin on a charge of Fenianism, and for some months was confined in Mountjoy and Kilmainham prisons; distinguished orator, writer, and literary man, 536.
Burnet, Irish immigrant in Virginia, 82
Burnside, General Ambrose, commands United States Naval Coast Division, and directed to assume command of Department of North Carolina, 389; sent in advance to Acquia Creek with 13,000 men, 425; appointed to succeed General McClelland, 452; occupies Knoxville on the 3rd September, and on the 9th September captures 2,000 prisoners and 14 guns at Cumberland Gap, thus restoring East Tennessee to the Union, 521.
Burr, Aaron, a political adventurer of doutful character, elected vice-President of America, 300, 301; conspiracy of to separate the United States, 303, defeated, 304.
Bushe, Gervase P., author of pamphlet on the Case of Great Britain and Ireland, 146.
Butler, Pierce, an Irishman; senator from South Carolina, 291, 292.
Butler, Col. Thomas, distinguished for his rare intrepidity at the Battle of Brandywine, and thanked by Washington on the field, 234.
Butler, Major-General, tomahawked and scalped by the Indians, 292.
Butler, General Benjamin Franklin, defeated at Yorktown, Va, by Confederates, 380; Southern Expedition of 10,000 forces to co-operate under, 404; with comparatively little loss Butler occupies New Orleans, 405; his able administration grossly misrepresented, 406; his removal resolved on by the Federal Government, 448; declared a felon by Jefferson Davis, 455; brilliant campaign of in Virginia, 541, 542; expedition directed against Wilmington, 597; its failure, 599; relieved of his command, 600.
Butterfield, General Daniel, Commander of the Fifth Corps at the battle of Fredericksburg; last attack on Mayre's Heights unsuccessful, 460; withdraws the Federal troops over the Rappahannock, 461; advises General Meade to send General Hancock on to Gettysburg, 496; wounded in that battle, 505,
Byrne, John, confined on board the Jersey prison ship; his cruel tortures, 210.
Byron's, Lord, poetic description of the American backwoodsmen, 136.

Cabot, John and Sebastian, engaged by Henry VII. of England to search for a north-west passage to East Indies, 18; they discover Newfoundland, 19.
Cadillac, M. de la Motte, French Governor of Louisiana, 90, 91.
Cahokia, Military and Trading French post, established at, 77.
Cailles, General, surrender of, 673.
Calhoun, John C., chosen vice-president of U.S., 343; supports Southern States against Northern, 345; resignation of vice-presidency, 346.
Calhoun, Patrick, a distinguished Irish settler in South Carolina, 100, 101; contest with the Indians, 265, 266.
Calhouns, settled in South Carolina,

California, Carmelite and Jesuit missions in, 22, population of in 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.
Calvert, Benedict Charles, fourth Lord Baltimore, recovers proprietary rights, 88.
Calvert, Leonard, governor of Maryland ; lands with 200 immigrants, 32.
Campbell, Rev. Dr. Alexander, founder of a peculiar sect of Presbyterians, 107.
Campbell, John, ancestor of the Campbells of Holston, 107.
Cambon, M., French Ambassador, acting as Spain's friendly representative, makes overtures for peace, 659.
Cambridge, headquarters of the American Army at, 159, 160.
Camden, peopled by Irish, 88, 98; battle of, 262, 263.
Canada, discovery and explorationof, 19 ; French colonization of, 24 ; failure of the British expedition against, 86, 87; invasion of Canada, by English and Colonials, 111 ; gallant defence of by the Marquis of Montcalm, 120 ; conquest of, by the English, 126; suggested invasion of, to Congress, 176 ; expedition despatched to under the Irish Major-General Richard Montgomery, 177 ; brilliant and successful campaign opened in, 178; attack on Quebec and death of Montgomery, 181 ; renewal of the invasion by the Americans in 1814, 326.
Canadian, boundary disputes, 78; French Trappers and Hunters, their life ; navigations, exploring expeditions, traffic with Indians, 135, 136 ; engagements, 316, 317 ; Houses of Assembly ; attempts to augment military force, 325 ; rebellion, disputes with Great Britain owing to political and religious difficulties, 351.
Canby, Major-General Edward Richard Sprigg, assigned to command the military division of West Mississippi, 565 ; treacherously murdered by the Modoc Indians of Oregon, 636.
Capitol, description of the, 299, 300 ; foundation stone of Capitol extension laid at Washington, 363.
Capture of 5,000 prisoners by Federals, 462.
Carleton, Sir Guy, Commander of Forces in Canada, 177.
Carlisle, city of ; taken possession of by General Ewell, 494.
Carolinas, why so called, 35 ; religious disturbances in, 81.
Carolina Settlers, wars with Indians, 88
Carolinas and **Georgia**, Irish immigration to, 104.
Carolina North and **South**, with other districts granted by Charles II. to eight proprietors, 54.
Carolina North, made subject to British Crown, 94.
Carolina South, peopled by Irish, 87 ; Indian lands offered to Irish and English settlers, 88, rice plantations ; employment of slaves, 94 ; inducements to colonists, 98.
Caroline, American vessel, cut off from Fort Schlosser by Canadian loyalists and sent adrift over the Niagara Falls, 351.
Carr, Brigadier-General, Eugene A., born of Irish parents in Erie, checked at Big Black River, 481, 482.
Carr, Brigadier-General, Joseph B., of Irish descent, severs communications of Confederates, 464.
Carroll, Charles of Carrollton, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 203.
Carrolls, founders of Carrolltown, Irish emigrants, 70.
Carroll, Father John, sent as assistant Congressional delegate to Canada 183 ; appointed first Catholic Bishop of Baltimore, 332.
Carroll, Colonel William, leads the attack on the Creek Indians, 320.
Carteret Colony, 54.
Carteret, George, obtains a grant of land in New Jersey, 53.
Carver, John, elected governor of Pilgrim Fathers' settlement, 29.
Casey, Lieutenant-Colonel Silas, of Irish descent, appointed Brigadier-General of the Volunteers, 384; joins in pursuit of Confederate General Magruder, 409 ; defends the Federal line of retreat, 411, 412, 413 ; took part in chief battles of the Mexican War 1847, 409 ; died in New York, January 22nd, 1882, 409.
Catherine, Empress of Russia ; negotiations of English Ministers with to hire twenty thousand of her troops, she refuses, 175.
Catholic Bishops remonstrate against reading Protestant Bibles in public schools, 352.

Catholics, persecution of Irish, 68, 69; exodus of in 1762, 137.
Catholic Priests, laws against, 78, 80, 81.
Cedar Creek, decisive victory for the Federals at, 579.
Cedar Mountain on the north bank of the Rapidan, chosen by General Pope, as a most desirable position for the concentration of his forces, 423.
Census, United States, first taken in 1790, 291; second, taken in 1800, 301; third, taken in 1810, 306; fourth, taken in 1820, 341; fifth, taken in 1830, 344; sixth, taken in 1840, 351; seventh, taken in 1850, 363; eight, taken in 1860, ninth, taken in 1870, tenth, taken in 1880, 638; eleventh, taken in 1890, 642; twelfth, taken in 1900, xxvi., *App.*
entennial Celebration of Revolution, 636.
Cerro-Gordo, battle of, American victory, 356.
Cervera, Admiral, Commander of the Spanish Fleet, 656; destruction of his fleet at Santiago, 658.
Chambersburg, captured by the Confederates, 447; burned by the Confederates, 549.
Chancellorsville, battles at, 471, 472, 473.
Chandler, Lieutenant-Colonel D. T., report of, respecting the condition of the Union Soldiers imprisoned at Andersonville, 595.
Champion Hills, battle of, 481.
Chantilly, a small village near Centreville, 429.
Chapultepec, successful assault on, Mexicans defeated, 359.
Charles II, King of **England**, grants Dutch Colonies in North America to Duke of York, 53; tries to destroy liberty of American Colonists, 67.
Charles II., King of **Spain**, 79.
Charleston City, foundation of 54; attacked by French and Spanish fleets, 85; British failure at, 192; surrendered to the English on the 12th May, 1780, 260; siege of, 511, 512; evacuated by the Confederate troops, 604.
Charlevoix's "Histoire General de la Nouvelle France," *Pref.* vi. 32.
Charter of Liberties, 67; repealed, 68.
Charters, intended annulment of, by English ministers, and consequent spread of discontent amongst the Colonies, 134.
Charter Oak, origin of name, 68.
Chartres Fort, built by French, 91.
Chartres, Duc de, a French prince, who served as volunteer in the Federal Army, 419; rendered most efficient service, and was much beloved and respected during his period of service, as was also his brother, Count de Paris, 419.
Chase, Samuel, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 203.
Chateaumorand, Marquis, explorer, 72.
Chatham, Lord, motion in the House of Lords for removal of General Gage's large army from Boston, 156; Bill for true reconcilement presented to Parliament by, 156; remarkable speech by, in the House of Lords, in which he urged England to peril even her national existence in renewal of the American contest; death of, 240.
Chattanooga, advance on, by General Roscrans. 513, 514, 515.
Chauncey, Commodore over the American flotilla on Lake Ontario, 314.
Cherokee Indians, their savage excesses, 265.
Cherry Valley, pitiless massacre of Colonists in, by the Tories and their Indian allies, 248, 249.
Chesapeake, American Frigate, fired upon and boarded by British in search of deserters, 305; ill-feeling towards England aroused thereby, 306; fomented by Irish throughout the United States, 307; engagement with the British man-of-war, Shannon; capture of, by British, 317.
Chesapeake Bay, the Federals get command of, 408.
Chesney, Colonel C., born near Kilkeel, Ireland; wrote "A Military View of the recent Campaigns in Virginia and Maryland," 409.
Chicago, Great Columbian Exhibition in the City of, 644.
Chickahominy River, description of the, 410.
Chickamauga, battle of, 515, 516.
Chippewa, American victory at, 326.
Church, Colonel, defeats Indians, 75.

Churchill, John, Duke of Marlboro', 79.
Church Property, restored in Cuba, 667.
Churubusco, battle of, Americans defeat the Mexicans, 358.
Cincimati, the society founded by Major-General Knox and officers of the American army, 284, 285.
Civilian Dress, Confederate officers and soldiers sent in, through state of Arkansas, in preparation for invasion of the State of Missouri, 434.
Claims against France for seizure of war vessels; treaty signed at Paris, 344; for indemnification, made on the English Government, 631; presented for damages done by the Confederate cruisers, 635.
Clair, General, St., retires with his army from Ticonderoga to Fort Edward, on the Hudson river, 225.
Clarendon, Earl of Clarendon Colony, 54.
Clarke, Abraham, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 200.
Clarke, William, appointed Governor of Louisiana, its name afterwards changed to Missouri Territory, 309.
Clay, Henry, Senator from Kentucky, 328.
Clayborne, William, 48, 49, 50.
Clayton-Bulwer Treaty, revocation of, 669, 670.
Cleburne, Irish-born General, Patrick Ronayne, commanded a brigade in General Hardee's corps, chiefly composed of Tennesseans, 402; killed at Franklin, 403.
Cleveland, Grover, elected President of the United States, 640; his presidential address, 640, 641; re-elected President, 643; message to Congress, 646.
Clinch, General, massacre of his army by Seminoles, 348.
Clinton, Charles, immigrant from Longford, Ireland, 84: figured in the French Colonial War as Colonel, 229; father of Generals George and James, 229.
Clinton, General George, distinguished Irish-American, commander of Fort Clinton, 229; elected Vice-President of United States, 303; death of, 308.
Clinton, General James, served in the expedition to Canada under Montgomery; distinguished Irish-American, Commander of Fort Montgomery, and brother of General George Clinton, 229, 253,
Clinton, British-General, Sir Henry, at Bunker's Hill, Boston, 169; burns Kingston, New York, during his advance on the 15th Oct., 1777, 230; retreats in haste to New York on receiving intelligence of Burgoyne's surrender, 231; despatched an expedition from New York in May, 1779; which destroyed Norfolk, Portsmouth, Suffolk and Gosport in Virginia, inflicted great damage on shipping and other property along the James and Elizabeth rivers, 252; violates conditions of surrender at Charlestown, in order to drive prisoners into the British ranks, 263.
Clymer, George, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 200.
Cobb, Howell, born in Cherry Hill, Jefferson County, 444; placed as brigadier general over the Military District of Georgia, 582.
Cockburn, Admiral, Sir George, makes descents on the shores of the Delaware and Chesapeake Bay, 315; proclaims a blockade of the whole American coast, 328.
Code, Puritan insurgent, 69.
Coffee, General John, encounters Indians at Tulluchatchie, 320; commands left wing of American army at New Orleans, 334.
Cold Harbour, battle of, 538, 539.
Coleraine,, Irish settlement, 84.
Colfax, Schuyler, elected Vice-President of America, 633.
Colleton, Sir John, 54.
Collier, Admiral, Sir George, chases the Constitution frigate, 338
Colman Ua Liathain, Irish, navigation of, 6
Colonial Delegates' Address to the Irish people, issued on the 10th of May, 1775. *App.* i., ii., iii., iv., v.
Colonial Rights, declaration of, by Congress, 154.
Colonial Trade, desire to monopolise by English merchants, 133; restrictions on, 134.
Colonists, American, composed of adventurers from every country, 138.
Colorado, becomes a new State by Act of Congress, 636; population of, in 1890 and 1900, *App*, xxvii.
Columbia, origin of name, 17.

Columbia, District of, seat of the General Government, 291; population of in 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.
Columbia, capital of South Carolina, captured by General Sherman, 604.
Columbian Exhibition, in the city of Chicago, 644.
Columbus, Christopher, his birth, education and early voyages, 15; furnished with a ship and open boat, by King Ferdinand; sets out on his first voyage to the west, 16; discovers West Indies; returns to Spain; second voyage, and subsequent discovery of South American Continent; brought home in irons; death and burial, 17.
Columbus, Georgia, captured by General Wilson, 619.
Commercial Enterprise, railway extension, &c.; extraordinary development of, throughout United States, 359.
Commissioned Major-Generals, by the Confederate Congress, 384.
"Compagnie de l' Occident," or Company of the West, 90, 91.
Commissioners of Customs, arrival in Boston in 1768, to enforce the new Acts; seize a sloop belonging to John Hancock; riot in Boston, and flight of the Commissioners for safety to a fort in the Harbour; directions to the Governor to arrest the ringleaders of the rioters and send them to England to be tried for treason, 147.
Compensation to owners for enfranchisement of about 3,000 slaves, 439.
Confederate Congress, Conscription Act passed by; assembled in Southern Capital, 402; adjourned, 410; resolution passed to reserve for execution Federal negro soldiers captured and white officers commanding them, p 441; report of, to vindicate their action in the treatment of prisoners, 595; pass an Act empowering the President to call on each state to furnish her quota of troops, 611
Confederate Constitution formed, articles of same, 377.
Confederate Government, head-quarters of, at Richmond, 389.
Confederate Success at Bull's Run, 382; minor in the Shenandoah Valley, 400.
Confederate War Ships built in English ports, 489; American protests, 490; suppression of, 491.
Congress assembled at New York, 1765, 145.
Congress, Revolutionary, assembly of fifty-five delegates from all Colonies, except Georgia, meet in Philadelphia to form a general Congress, opened under the Presidency of Peyton Randolph, 152; addresses to the king, to the people of Great Britain, to the colonists and to the Canadians, 153; declaration of Colonial rights, 154; requesting each of the United Colonies to set up a separate government on its own responsibility; decision of, that all authority under the crown should be suppressed, 194; declaration of Independence decreed, 194; decided on, 195; publicly announced, 196; signers of, 197; addresses of, to the inhabitants of Great Britain, and to the Irish people; deliberations of, 175; debates before declaration of Independence, 193; message to, from Lord Howe, 211.
Congress, Continental, meeting of; address to the king, to the people of Great Britain, and to the people of Ireland; vigorous measures taken by, to carry on the war, 162; mode adopted by, for issuing paper money, 163.
Congress determine to enrol eighty-eight battalions, 216; financial difficulties of, 245.
Congress ratifies the action of the Peace Commissioners, 285; adopts the articles of Confederation on 9th July, 1778, 248; financial embarrassment of; bank established in Philadelphia, and nearly half-a-million dollars subscribed by Irish to support the credit of, 261; causes a medal to be struck in commemoration of the battle of Cowpens, in which the Continentals gained a glorious victory over the British, 270: passed the first Tariff Act, A.D. 1790, 2.0; declares war against Tripoli, 302; strong position of Republican party in, 438; resolution of, against the establishment of a monarchy in Mexico, 630; gives authority for augmentation of forces by the United States, 308; state of parties at the opening of Congress in 1899, 662.

Congressional Library at Washington burned, 364.
Congressional Resolution of December 29th, 1780, *App.* xx.
Connecticut, English settlement of, 33; constitution adopted for, 34; refuses to surrender its charter, 67; population for 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.
Connor, Commodore David; directs the naval operations against Vera Cruz, 355, 356,
Conscription Bill, passed by the Federal Congress, 465.
Conscription Riots, in New York, 507, 508; in Boston and other places, 509, 510.
Constituent Assembly formed in Mexico, 489.
Constitution of the United States, Text of, *App.* viii., ix., x., xi., xii., xiii., xiv., xv., xvi., xvii., xviii., xix., xx.
Convention, secession at Mongomery, Ala. 370, 371.
Conway, Colonel Thomas, volunteers for service in America, p. 221; at the battle at Brandywine, 233; appointed Major-General by Congress, 236; for misconduct obliged to resign his command, 237.
Conway, General Henry, denies the right of the British Parliament to tax the Colonies, 141; moves for leave to bring in a Bill to repeal the Stamp Act, 145; carries the motion, 146.
"Conway Cabal," a plot to supplant Washington as commander-in-chief, 237.
Conyngham, Captain D. B., wrote "Irish Brigade and its Campaigns," 404, *et seq.*
Cooper, Samuel, commissioned Major-General, 384.
Cooper's, James Fenimore, account of the battle of Bunker Hill in his novel of Lionel Lincoln, 168; his History of the Navy of the United States of America, 165, *et seq.*
Cooper, Lord Ashley, afterwards Earl of Shaftesbury, 54.
Coote, Richard, Lord Bellamont, his hostility to Catholics, 78, 79.
Copperheads, persons belonging to the Democratic party, who were called thus from their treacherous mode of action, 443.
Corby, Father William, chaplain to the Irish Brigade, his address at Gettysburg, 498.
Corcoran, Colonel Michael, commands Irish Brigade, 373; occupies Fort Corcoran on Arlington Heights near Washington, 374; after a heroic resistance with his regiment, he was wounded and captured at the battle of Bull Run, released by exchange of prisoners in August 1862; as brigadier-general, he organised the Corcoran Legion, and took part in the battles of 1863; accidentally killed by a fall from his horse, 381.
Corcoran, Dr. Surgeon-General in the Revolutionary Army, 259.
Corinth, at which General Rosecrans was stationed; battle at, 433.
Cornbury, Lord, 84, 85.
Cornwallis, Lord, appointed in command the English land forces, 191; arrives in New York, 209; invades New Jersey, and threatens Philadelphia, 216; intends returning to England. 218; again assumes command in New Jersey, 219; succeeds at the battle of Brandywine, 233; enters Philadelphia, 235; commands in South Carolina, 262; brutality of, 265; invades North Carolina, 269; opposed by General Green, 271; ravages the country along the James River and destroys property to the amount of ten million dollars, 273; retreats upon Yorktown, 275; besieged there by the Americans and French. 276, 277; obliged to capitulate. 277, surrender of, with his army at Yorktown, 278; bears testimony to the kindness and attention bestowed on him and his soldiers by the French officers, 278; reception of the news in England and Ireland, 279, 280.
Correspondence between Napoleon III. and Alexander II. of Russia. 476.
Couch, General, reference to, 409.
Cowpens, battle of, victory for the Continentals, 269; in commemoration of this battle Congress caused a medal to be struck, 270.
Cox, General Jacob D., born in Montreal; in the battle of Antietam 446.
Craig, General, Governor of Canada; his opposition to war party disavowed by British Government, 308.

Craig, Mr., Irish Presbyterian, 83.
Crawford, General Samuel W., charge of, at Gettysburg, 501.
Craven, Lord, 54, 88.
Crittenden, Thomas Leonidas, born in Russellville, Ky., commanded one wing of the Federal Army at Bowling Green, 434.
Crook, General, commands the Kanawha expedition, 540.
Crozat, Anthony, French merchant, 90.
Crowell, Irish immigrant, 82.
Cuba, Island of, Hernando de Soto appointed Governor of, 20; insurrection in, 648, 649; autonomy to, resolved on by Spanish Ministry, 653; Church Property seized in, 567; in May, 1901, constitution of deferred, 673.
Cuban Independence, feeling in the United States in favour of, 653.
Culpepper, Lord, 55; appointed Governor of Virginia, 61; superseded, 62.
Cumberland Head, burning of stores at, 322.
Curtin, Hon. Andrew, Governor of Pennsylvania, 476.
Curtis, General Samuel Ryan, drives Confederates under Generals Price and McCulloch out of Missouri, 393; appointed to command of Department of Missouri, 434.
Cushing, Caleb, Member of President Franklin Pierce's Cabinet, 364.
Cushing, Lieut. Alonzo H., commands a battery at Gettysburg, 504.
Custer, George, A., attacks the Confederate cavalry of J. E. B. Stuart at Gettysburg, 505; his cavalry at Winchester, 579; defeated and killed by the Indians, 636.
Customs' Officers, Arbitrary powers conferred on, opposition to warrants of, 134.
Cutler, General L., at the opening scenes before the battle of Gettysburg, 495.
Czolgosz assassinates President McKinley; his subsequent execution, 674.

Dade, Major, in command of a column under General Clinch, 348.
Dakota, North and South, admitted as New States in the Union, 642.
Dane's Quarter, the Pollock or Polk settlement, 70.
Daniel, Colonel, besieges St. Augustine, narrowly escapes capture, 80.
Davenport, Rev. John, founder of New Haven, 33.
Davis, Captain Charles Henry, received command of gun-boats, 406; destroys the Confederate fleet of Commodore Montgomery, 407.
Davis, General Jefferson C., born in Clark County, Indiana, served in Mexican War, at battle of Murfreesboro', 449.
Davis, Jefferson, Member of President Franklin Pierce's Cabinet, 364; appointed Provisional President of Southern Confederate States, 371; appointed President of Confederates, 378; Jefferson Davis and Cabinet refused reinforcements to General Johnston, 410; congratulates his troops on the series of brilliant victories they had won, 420; inaugurated President of Provisional Congress, 464; despotism of, 523; imprudent and undignified oration delivered by, in Macon, Georgia, 574; resolves, after an interview with General Hood, that Tennessee should next be invaded, and Georgia be abandoned, 574; haughtily rejects proposals for peace, and declares he would fight for bitter separation to the bitter end, 582; reward offered for the apprehension of; reputed accomplice in the murder of President Lincoln, 625; expeditions in pursuit of, capture of, 626, 627, 628; trial of, 630, 631; retirement from public life of, 631.
Dearborn, General Henry, commissioned Commander-in-Chief, 310; musters an army at Plattsburg, 312; placed near Lake Ontario with the army of the centre, 313; he captures York, in Canada, 315; removal from command of, 316, 317.
D'Anville, Duke, Commander of French Fleet, 111.
D'Estaing, Admiral Count, placed in command of a fleet of twelve large man-of-war ships, together with five frigates, by the French Government, 240; arrives in the bay of Delaware, 246; naval engagement with Admiral Howe, 247; descent on the Island of Grenada, West Indies, 253; captures an English man-of-war and three frigates off the coast of Georgia, 256; assaults Savannagh, 257; re-embarks for the West Indies, 258.

D'Iberville, Lemoine, Commandant, enters the Mississippi, afterwards returns to France, 72; his brother succeeds and sails up the river, 73.
DeBourg, Very Rev. William, orders public prayers in the Catholic churches for General Jackson's victory at New Orleans, 333.
DeCastine, Baron Vincent, builds a fort at Panawiske, 70.
DeChamplain, Samuel, founds Quebec, explores the eastern coast of America, 24.
DeKalb, Baron, Lieutenant in the French service, joins the American army and receives the rank of Major-General, 221; mortally wounded at the battle of Camden after exhibiting heroic courage in the field, 263.
DeMoscoso, Luiz, 21; his disastrous retreat to Mexico, 22.
DeRaineval, M. Gerard, plenipotentiary minister of Louis XVI., accredited to Congress, 240.
De Soto, Hernando, 20.; his explorations, 21.
De Steuben, Lieutenant General Frederick William, Baron, offers his services as a volunteer, 221.
De la Warr, Lord, appointed Governor of Virginia, 27.
Decatur, Commodore Stephen, junior, brave action at Tripoli, 302; captures the British frigate, Macedonian, 312; his surrender of the President frigate, 336; despatched with a fleet of nine vessels to the Mediterranean against the Dey of Algiers, 339.
Declaration Royal of Indulgence, 67.
Declaration of Independence Congress urged on the subject, 194; decided on, 195; reception of, 196; order of signatures to, 197; text of, *App.* v.. vi., vii.; signers of, 197, 198, 199, 200, 201, 202, 203, 204 205, 206, 207; hundredth anniversary of, celebrated with great rejoicing throughout the United States in 1876, 637.
DeGrasse, Admiral, sails from the West Indies, 274; reaches Chesapeake Bay, and blocks entrance of James and York rivers, 275.
Delaware, why so called, 27; State, formerly known as "the Territories," 63; population for 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.
Denniston, Irish immigrant, 82.
Derryfield, founded by Irish immigrants, 92.
Derry, Pa., Irish settlement, 84.
Deschambeault, Father Henri H., 70, 77.
Detroit, military and trading post established at, 77; surrender of to the British, 310; their evacuation of, 319.
Devens, Brigadier-General Charles, army under the command of, the first to enter Richmond, 612.
Dewey, Commodore George, effects the total destruction of the Spanish fleet in the Harbour of Manilla, 655.
Dillon, General Arthur, Count, appointed Commander of the Irish Brigades in the French service, 240; grandson to the renowned General Arthur Dillon, 241; embarks at Brest, 241; takes Granada from the British, 253; his brigade fights desperately and suffers great loss at the siege of Savannah, 257, 258.
Dinwiddie, Robert, Governor of Virginia, 113; through a message delivered by George Washington, he demands surrender of a French Fort, St. Pierre's, at Le Bœuf, 114; he sends a force against the French from Virginia, 115.
Disputes between United States and Great Britain in reference to rectification of boundary line for Oregon territory, 352; causes which gave rise to it, settlement of question, 353.
Dodge, General, defeats Indians at Wisconsin River, 344.
Doheny's, Michael, History of the American Revolution, 145, *et seq.*
Doherty, Irish trader, 69.
Donegal, township, Pa., 83; Irish settlement at, 84.
Dongan, Thomas, Colonel, Irish Catholic, appointed Governor of New York, 57.
Doubleday, General A., at Oak Hill, 495.
Douglas, Captain the Hon. George, commander of the Levant, surrenders to Commodore Stewart, 337.
Downie, Captain George, appointed to command of British flotilla on Lake Champlain, 329; defeated and killed, 330.
Draper's, John William, "History of the American Civil War," *Pref.* viii., ix., 379, *et seq.*
Druilletes, Father Gabriel, his labours among the Indians, 45; his visit to Boston, 46; death of, 77.
Drummond, General, 326; besieges Fort Erie, 327.

Dublin, New Hampshire, called by the settlers after Irish metropolis, 83.
Dublin, City of, in Ireland, Sheriffs and Common Council of, sympathy with colonists, 174 and 175.
Dudley, Governor of Massachusetts, 85.
Dugay, M., French explorer, 65.
Dunlap, John, native of Strabane, in Ireland, started the first daily paper, "The Pennsylvania Packet," in America, 142.
Dunmore, Lord, Royal Governor of Virginia, driven out from Williamsburg, afterwards perpetrates great atrocities in Virginia, 174.
Dupont, Admiral Samuel F., commands the fleet destined for the attack on Charleston, 469.
Dutch National Company, plantations along Hudson River, and found New Amsterdam, afterwards called New York, 43; their war with Indians, Swedes and English, 44, 45; surrender New Amsterdam to the English, 53; in Europe, at war with England, when they take possession of New York; ceded to England when peace had been proclaimed, 56.

"Eagle Wing," emigrant ship, 102.
Early, Brigadier-General Jubal A., of Irish descent, left on the field of Williamsburg, as mortally wounded, but recovered, 409; became a distinguished Confederate Commander of a division, 492, he occupies York, 494; at Gettysburg, 196; repulsed at Cemetery Hill, 502; occupies the Shenandoah Valley, 547; advances upon Washington, 548; retreats, 549; defeated by Sheridan at Winchester, 576; retreats to Strasburg, 577; again advances towards Winchester, 578; routed by Sheridan, 579; defeated at Waynesboro', 605.
Eaton, Theophilus, Governor, 34.
Edmunds, Cyrus, Life and Times of General Washington, 173.
Excelsior Brigade, raised in the beginning of the Civil War by Daniel Edward Sickles, who was born in New York, 414.
Effingham, Lord Howard of, 62.
Egan, Patrick, native of Ireland, United States Minister to Chili, demands an indemnity for outrages on United States' sailors, 643.
Egg Island, British fleet wrecked on, 87.
Elizabeth River, naval yard, dry docks, etc., destroyed by Confederates, 408.
Elizabeth Town, why so called, 54.
Ellery, William, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 198.
Elliot, Rev. John, 41.
Emancipation Proclamation, issued by President Lincoln, 451.
Embargo, and Non-Importation Acts, Repeal of, 324.
Emigration, beginnings of, in the West, 135; from Holland and Germany, Ireland and Scotland, 136, 137, 138, 139, 140.
Emmet's, Dr. Thomas Addis, Address before the American Irish Historical Society, referring to Washington's family descent, 113, 114.
Emory, General William Hemsley, 475.
Empire of Mexico, proclaimed, 489; evacuation of Mexico by the French, 630.
Enfield Rifles, many of, in the hands of the Confederate troops at the battle of Shiloh, 422.
Enfranchisement of about 3,000 slaves, 439.
England and Spain, war between, 95.
England, difficulties with, regarding Clayton-Bulwer Treaty, 364.
English, Blockade-runners import-amunition to Confederates, 388, 389.
— Emigration to Philadelphia, 84.
— Government, unfriendly attitude of, towards the United States, 442.
— Ministry, stern coercive measures adopted by, 158.
— Ministry, despatch Commissioners to treat on conditions of peace, with the Americans, 241.
— Ministry, change of, and overtures of peace from England, 281.
— Parliament, joint resolution of both Horses excite insurrection, 157.
— Settlers in Maine massacred by Indians, 84.
Enlistment of Foreigners; nefarious means adopted by England to obtain recruits for her army and navy, 222.
Eutaw Springs, battle of, 273.
Espinay, M. de l', Governor of Louisiana, 91.
Evertzen, Dutch Commander, takes possession of New York, 56.

Ewell, Major-General, Confederate Corps of, 492 ; defeats Federal forces at Crosskeys, 400 ; surprises the Federals in the town of Winchester, 493 ; commands the left Confederate wing at the battle of Gettysburg, 497 ; attack on Culp's Hill, 501 ; defeated, 502.
Exchange and treatment of prisoners, 455.
Exhibition, International and Industrial, held at Philadelphia, 657.
Expedition, against the French in Canada, 121 ; under Major-General Richard Montgomery, 176, 177, 178, 179, 180, 181, 182 ; under General Dearborn, 312 ; under Major-General Brown, 326. Naval, of England against United States, 315 ; naval and land, 328 ; defeat of, at New Orleans, 335.
Expulsion of the Acadians from Nova Scotia, 116, 117.

Fair Oaks, or Seven Pines, desperate battle of, 412.
Falcon, Captain Gordon, 337.
Farmville, battle at, 613, 614, 615.
Farragut, David G., captain, plans an expedition against New Orleans, 404; passes the forts, 405 ; prepared to operate against Vicksburg, 477 ; runs past the Confederate batteries, 478 ; steams down the Mississippi to Baton Rouge, 479, to co-operate in an attack on Mobile, 529 ; his victory there, 566, 567.
"Father of Waters," name for the Mississippi, 65.
Federals repulsed with great loss in Virginia by Jackson, 425 ; in turn they repulse Lee, 427 ; a series of repulses follow, 428, 429 ; they retreat to Washington, 430.
Fayetteville, Confederate camps at, captured by Schofield, 436.
Federal Army recruited from the coloured race, 594 ; Federal Government prepare to capture and close harbours of Confederates on Atlantic Coast, 389 ; resolved on blockade of Gulf of Mexico, 404.
Federalists and **Anti-Federalists,** political contests between, 293.
Fendall, Josias, 50, 51.
Ferguson, Major Patrick, a Scotchman, organized bands of Tories in North Carolina, committed great ravages and outrages ; killed by Colonel Campbell, 266.
Fessenden, Senator William Pitt, Secretary of the Treasury, 565.
Field, Cyrus, of New York, originator of Transatlantic cable, 368.
Filmore, Millard, Vice-president, succeeds Taylor as President, 362 ; his policy, 363.
Financial Condition of Davis' Government, 454 ; expedients adopted for, 453.
Finegan, Brigadier-General Joseph, finds Maryport Mills evacuated, 437.
Fish Dam Fort, victory for the Continentals at, 267.
Fishery Rights, decision of Commissioners, 635.
Firbolgs of Ireland ; their traditions regarding an imaginary island in the Atlantic Ocean, 1.
FitzGerald, Colonel John, *Aide-de-Camp* to Washington, 172.
Fitzgerald, Lord Edward, served as an officer in the English Army, conducted himself with great gallantry in several minor engagements to the close of the American Revolutionary War, when Lord Cornwallis surrendered at Yorktown, 272.
Five Nations, Comte de Frontenac seeks support from the, 76 ; France relinquishes sovereignty of, 87.
Fletcher, Benjamin, rules in Pennsylvania, 71.
Fletcher, Lieutenant-Colonel, "History of the American War from 1861 to 1865," quoted at 370 *et seq.*
Floyd, John B., Secretary of State for War, joins Southern States, 372.
Florida, discovered by Juan Ponce de Leon, 19 ; received its name from Spaniards, 21 ; important manœuvres in, 331 ; cession of, to the United States, 340 ; secedes from the Union, 370 ; population for 1890, and 1900. *App.* xxvii.
Floyd, William, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 189
Fomorians, of Ireland, their traditions, 1.
Foote, Commodore A. H., captures Fort Henry, 392 ; captures Island, No. 10, 396 ; resigns command of gun-boats, 406.
Foote's, Rev. William Henry, Sketches, Historical and Biographical, of the Presbyterian Church of Virginia, 105, *et esq.*

Ford's Theatre, scene of the assassination of President Lincoln, 622, 623.

Forrest, Nathan Bedford, Lieutenant-Colonel of a cavalry regiment raised at the outbreak of the Civil War; escapes from Fort Donelson, 392, 393; captures Jackson in Tennessee, also Union City and its garrison in Kentucky, 554; captures Fort Pillow and orders an inhuman and a merciless massacre of the garrison, 555; occupies Memphis, 556; forces the garrison of Athens, Ala. to surrender, captures the garrison at Sulphur Branch, Trestle; escapes to Corinth in Mississippi, 571.

Fort Chartres, 91; constructed by M. Boisbriant, 97.

Fort Curtis, constructed near the town of Helena, 484; concentrates its fire on General Price, 485.

Fort Darling, battery constructed by Confederates there, 409.

Fort De Russey, captured by General Smith, 552.

Fort Donelson, surrender of to General Grant, 391; serious Confederate losses at, 392.

Fort Duquesne, original name of Pittsburgh, 92; seized upon by the French, 115; Braddock leads his forces against, 117; taken by the English, 122.

Fort Erie, surrender of to Americans, 316; capture of by Americans, 326; attempted recapture by British, severe losses, 327.

Fort Frontenac, now Kingston, in Canada, 119.

Fort George, surrender of to Americans, 316; burning of by M'Clure, 322.

Fort Harrison, capture of by the Federal army, 572, 573.

Fort Henry, surrender of Confederates to Commodore Andrew H. Foote, 392.

Fort Mercer, attacked by Count Donop with 1,200 Hessians, 235.

Fort Morgan, bombardment and capture of, 567.

Fort Niagara, Shirley marches against, 118.

Fort Niagara, surprise of by British and Indians, 322.

Fort Oswego, taken by Montcalm, 119; siege of, 326.

Fort Pillow, garrisoned by Confederates but evacuated, 407; taken again by Forrest: massacre of Federal prisoners at, 441, 555.

Fort Schuyler, occupation of, by Americans, 226.

Fort Ticonderoga, French build, 118; Johnson fortifies it, 119; defended by Montcalm, 121; the English defeated, 122; Montgomery advances to, 177.

Fort Washington, taking of, 112, 113, 114.

Fort William Henry, built by Johnson, 119, razed to the ground by the French, 122.

Foster, General, command of City of Savannah transferred to, 602.

Foster, plenipotentiary from England to pay compensation for seizure of Chesapeake, continuance of seizure, 306.

Fortress Monroe, defended by General M'Dowell and Blenker, 407.

Fox, George, founder of the Society of Friends, 52.

Fox, Charles James, administration of, 305.

France and Spain, war between, 96; war between England and, 110 to 119; Congressional Commissioners sent to in 1776, 222; favourable indications of England towards Confederates, 386; Emperor of, sent over to Mexico a reinforcement under General Forey, 442.

Francisco, Peter, one of the strongest and most daring men in the American ranks; remarkable instance of his courage and dexterity, 270.

Franklin, battle of, signal defeat of the Confederate under Hood; five general officers killed, while six others were wounded and one captured, 588, 589.

Franklin, Benjamin, his birth, 200; elected by Assembly of Americans as their Agent to sail for England, and to oppose the threatened Stamp Act, 142, 143; visits Ireland in 771; reception of by Irish Parliament, 149; signs the Declaration of Independence, his literary works, 200; appointed the first Ambassador from the United States to France; his successful diplomacy, 248; his death, 290.

Franklin, General William Buel, born in York, 444 ; success at South Mountain, 445, commands a division under General Burnside, 457, at Fredericksburg advances against the right wing of the Confederates, 458.
Fraser, General, engagement with the American rear-guard under Warner at Hubbardstown, 225 ; fell mortally wounded, in the engagement at Saratoga, 228.
Frazer and Co., Agents for the Confederate government, an enterprising Charleston and Liverpool firm, 421.
Fredricksburg, evacuated by the Confederates: surrender of to Brigadier-General Augur, 398; Confederates hold the town of, 456 ; bombardment of by Federals, 457 ; battle of, 458, 459, 460, the Federals retire from, 461.
Fremont, John Charles, a candidate for the Presidency in 1856, 367 ; a general in Western Virginia, drawn into an ambuscade in the Shenandoah valley ; orders a retreat, 400, 401.
French, Major-General William H., born in Baltimore, served with distinction in the Potomac army, 413 ; his brigade drives back the Confederates, 416.
French, extend their power in Maine, establish missions, 32 ; their early missionary labours, 73 ; settlements in Maine, 84 ; colonization of Illinois, 89 ; disasters in Louisiana, 98 ; capitulation of, in Louisburgh ; fleet, reverses of, 111 ; plantations, 112 ; arrival in Narraganset Bay, and engagement of with the English fleet under Lord Howe, 247; Revolution, its effect on the American people, 294.
Frenchtown, battle of, British repulsed, 314.
Friendly Sons of St. Patrick, Benevolent Society formed at Philadelphia before the revolution broke out, 233; contribute large sums to support the American army, 238 ; George Washington invited to a dinner given by, attended and received a suitable address, adopted as an honorary member of the Society, 279, 280.
Frobisher, Martin, his voyages in search of a north-west passage to India, 22.
Frolic, Sloop of war captured by the British, 323.
Frontenac, Count, leads French against English Colonists, 74, 75, 76.
Frothingham's, Richard, "Siege of Boston," 161.
Fugitive Slave Law passed, 364.
Fulton, Robert, 339.
Funston, Colonel, his device to capture Aguinaldo successful, 673.
Fur-trade, started by the French, 98.

Gage, General, commands the British forces in America, 145 ; lands with troops in Boston, 148 ; succeeds Hutchinson at Boston, 152 ; summons the Assembly to meet at Salem, 153 ; calls for more troops. 155 ; refused, 156 ; proclamation by, 161 ; causes the wooden houses of Charlestown to be set on fire, 170.
Gage, Lynam J., Secretary of the Treasury, member of McKinley Cabinet, 652, 665.
Gaines, General, commands at Fort Erie, 327 ; marches against Black Hawk, 344.
Gallatin, Albert, American Commissioner, 328.
Galloway, Mr., Speaker of the House of Assembly of Pennsylvania, states in his examination before a Committee of the English House of Commons, that the soldiers in the service of Congress were scarcely one-fourth natives of America, but about one-half Irish, the other fourth were English and Scotch, 259.
Gambier, Admiral Lord, English Commissioner, 328.
Gamble, Governor, issued orders to enrol and organize the entire Missouri State Militia, of which 30,000 were armed, 422.
Garcia, Calixto, Cuban General, 656.
Gardiner, Sir Robert, expelled from New England, 35.
Gardiner, The Hon. Luke, remarkable speech delivered by, in the Irish House of Parliament, 284.
Gardner, Confederate General, holds Port Hudson, 487 ; defends the fort, 488 ; surrenders it, 489.
Garfield, Colonel James Abram, of Ohio; successes of, 391 ; elected President of America, 638 ; shot by an assassin on the 2nd July, and died on September 19th, 1881, 639.
Garneau's, F.X., "Histoire du Canada," 181.

Garnett, Confederate General Robert S. killed, 379.
Garnett, General Richard Brooke, mortally wounded at the battle of Gettysburg, 504.
Garrison, William Lloyd, advocate of slavery abolition, 349.
Gary, James A., Postmaster-General, Member of McKinley Cabinet, 652.
Gates, General Horatio, appointed to assume command of General Schuyler's army, 228, surrender of Burgoyne to him, 230; implicated in the Conway Cabal, 237; appointed to command in South Carolina, 262; defeated at Camden, 262; removed by Congress from his command, 263.
Geary, John White, of Scotch-Irish descent, at the battle of Gettysburg, 499
German emigration to Philadelphia, 84.
Germain, Lord George, desirous of having bands of wild Indians attached to General Burgoyne's forces, 224.
Germany, Emperor of, arbitrates upon the disputed boundary line between the United States and British America, 635.
General Assembly summoned at Chester, by William Penn, 63.
Gettysburg, concentration of Confederate army at, 495, 496; taken by the Confederates, 496; battle of, 497, 498, 499, 500, 501, 502, 503, 504, 505, 506; great concourse of people assembled at, to dedicate a portion of the battle-field as a cemetery for the remains of those national soldiers who had there fallen in defence of the Union, 522.
George II., of England, grants Royal Charter to Georgia, 94.
George III., King of England, express commands of, that tax on tea be retained, 149; advises Lord North to use every means for distressing America, 185; leaden statue of, pulled down at Bowling Green and melted into bullets, 192; most desirious of having bands of wild Indians attached to the general army, 224.
Georges, Sir Ferdinand, 30.
Georgia, foundation and colonization of, 94; invasion of by Spaniards, 95; Irish emigration to, 104; submits to the invaders, 250; secedes from the Union, 370; population for 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.
Gerry, Elbridge, married daughter of Charles Thompson; signer of the Declaration of Independence; Vice-President of the United States, 198.
Gibbon, General John, born near Holmesburg, Pa.; at the battle of Fredericksburg, 458; wounded at Gettysburg, 505.
Gibbons, Lieutenant James, 256.
Gibbs, General, mortally wounded at New Orleans, 335.
Gilbert, Sir Humphrey, 22.
Goldsborough, Commodore Louis M., commands the fleet at Fortress Monroe and at Annapolis, 389, 390.
Goodwin, John; supposed case of witchcraft, 69.
Gorham, Nathaniel, President of the Congress of the Confederation for 1786, *App.* xx.
Gorman, Willis A., of Irish extraction; bravery in the battle at Antietam Creek, 446.
Gosnold, Bartholomew, navigator, 23; councillor of the London Company, 26, 29.
Goulbourn, Henry, 328.
Grahame's James, "History of the Rise and Progress of the United States of North America," *Pref.* vi., 20, *et seq.*
Granada, capture of, by the French, 253.
Grand Alliance of the Succession, War of, 79, 80.
Grant, Second Lieutenant Ulysses S., great bravery of, promoted on account of same, 358; takes possession of Paducah, 390; captures Fort Donelson, 392; important victories in the West; encamped near Pittsburgh Landing, 402; joined by the other portion of his army, 403; puts Beauregard to flight, 404; under General Halleck, 400; left in command of Tennessee, 421; Federal troops massed in triangular form by, 433; begins the siege of Vicksburg, 479; operations against General Bowen, 480; victory at Champion Hill, 481; surrender of Vicksburg to, 487; appointed to take command over the new military division of the Mississippi, including the three Departments and Armies of the Ohio, Cumberland and Tennessee, 517; arrives at Chattanooga; reconnoitres the Confederate position; determines on his plan of action, 518; at the

battle of Chattanooga, 519, 520; appointed Lieutenant-General over all the United States Army, 527; communicates his plan of campaign to General Sherman, 528; instructions to Major-General Meade and to Major-General Butler, 529; advance against Richmond, 532; the campaign against Richmond by, 533, 534, 535, 536, 537, 538, 539; new plan of operations devised by, 544; foiled in his attacks on Petersburg, 545, 546, 547; recommends Sheridan for supreme command of Washington and Midland Department, 567; operations at Petersburg, 572, 573, 580, 600, 609, 610, 612; surrender of General Lee to, 615; elected President of United States, 633; claims on the British Government, 634; re-elected President, 635; opposition to his Government experienced, 637.

Granville, Lord, 88.

Great Britain, commercial intercourse prohibited with, 147; deputies to consider the relations between her colonies and, 187; troops of, in New Jersey, 217, 218, 219; warships of, placed at openings of United States harbours to board merchant-men, 307.

Greeley, Horace, journalist and politician, 508.

Green Mountain Boys, capture the fort of Ticonderoga, 163, 164; prevent the Governor of Canada from crossing the St. Lawrence, 178.

Green, Clay, General, relieves General Harrison, 314.

Greene, Nathaniel, appointed Brigadier-General, 172; serviceable regiments drilled by, 173; appointed to defend Long Island, 209; at the battle of Trenton, 218; set over the Quarter-Master's Department, 250; blockades New York and defeats Knyphausen, 263; his operations in the South, 269; victory at Gilford Court House, 271; marches into South Carolina, 272; manœuvres against Lord Cornwallis, 273, 274; after surrender of Lord Cornwallis left to oppose the English in the South, 279.

Gregg, Confederate General, defeated, 480.

Grey, Major-General, surprised an American regiment of light dragoons near Tappan, where several were inhumanly bayoneted, although they sued for quarter, 248.

Grierson, General Benjamin Henry, remarkable raid of, 480; brilliant services of, 597.

Griffin, Cyrus, President of the Congress of the Confederation for 1788, *App.* xx.

Griffiths, General of the Confederates, killed in a battle near the Chickahominy, 417.

Griffin, Major-General Charles, of Irish descent; won distinction in several great battles; received the surrender of the Confederate Army, 616.

Griffin, Simon Goodell, born in Nelson Co., N.H.; at battle of Fredericksburg, 460.

Griffith, Sergeant Joseph E., at the siege of Vicksburg, 483.

Griggs, John W., of New Jersey, Attorney-General 665.

Grover, General Cuvier, sent to take possession of Baton Rouge, La., 474.

Guam, Island of, the largest of the Ladrones ceded by Spain to the United States, 660.

Guantanamo Bay, American troops landed at, after severe fighting, 657.

Gilford Court House, battle of, severe British loss, 271, 272.

Guiteau, Charles Jules, assassin of President Garfield, 639.

Guizot's, "Vie, Correspondence et Ecrits de Washington," 173.

Gustavus Adolphus, King, encourages early settlers in Delaware, 31.

Guthrie, Member of President Franklin Pierce's Cabinet, 364.

Gwinnett, Button, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 207.

Habeas Corpus, Act, power given the President to suspend the, 466: General Burnside refused a writ of, 467.

Haklvyt, Richard, preacher, 18.

Hall, General, American, defends Buffalo, 322.

Hall, Lyman, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 207.

Halleck, Major-General Henry W., commands the Union army at St. Louis, Mo., 390; collected large army at Pittsburg Landing, 406; supersedes General McClellan as Commander-in-Chief of

the whole land forces of the United States, ordered to repair to the capital, so soon as he could with safety, 421, leaves General Schofield to command in Missouri, 422; urges McClellan to pursue Lee, 451; advises an attack on Confederate flanks, 452; congratulates General Meade on his victory at Gettysburg, 506; urges General Roscrans to advance on Chattanooga, 514.

Halltown, reached by General Hunter, 568; takes up a position at, 575.

Hamlin, Hannibal, elected Vice-President, 369.

Hamilton, Lieutenant-Governor Henry, surrenders the fort at Vincennes to Colonel George Rogers Clarke, 253.

Hamilton, Alexander, Colonel; his attack at Yorktown, 277; Secretary of the Treasury in Washington's Cabinet, 290; arranges Finance 291; Federalist leader, 293; resigns his office, 296; killed in a duel by Aaron Burr, 303.

Hamilton, General, A. J.. Military Governor of Texas, 474.

Hamilton, Irish settler in Virginia, 104.

Hampton Roads, loading of a powder-boat at, 598.

Hampton, taken by British, also guns in batteries, 315.

Hancock, General, defends the line of the Chickahominy, 417; selected to lead the attack at Fredericksburg, 458; sent on to Gettysburg, 496; favourably reports of its military position, 497; brings up supports in time, 500; commanded north of Little Round Top, 503; General Picketts's attack near his position, 504; wounded, 505; he passes the Rapidan, 532; attacked by Longstreet and Anderson, 533; he leads the second corps at Spotsylvania, 535, 536; forces a passage at the North Anna, 537; his corps repulsed, 539; drives the Confederates within their works at Petersburg, 580.

Hancock, John, British Commissioners seize a sloop of, 147; provincial Congress in Massachusetts, President of, 154; President of Continental Congress for, 175, 162; first signer of the Declaration of Independence, 197, 198; *App.* xx.

Hand, Colonel Edward, a surgeon in the British army, 173; as Brigadier-General, serves in the Pennsylvania line, 187; his riflemen surprise the Hessians at Trenton; 218.

Hanson, John, President of the Continential Congress for 1781. *App.* xx.

Hardee, General, W. J.; his corps in front of firing line at Pittsburg Landing, 402; assigned to the department of South Carolina, Georgia and Florida, 582; besieged at Savannah, 596; retreat along Union Causeway, 597.

Harper's Ferry, raid of John Brown at, 368; General Jackson captures, 445; concentration of Federal troops at, 567; General Sheridan sent to, 568; corps formed at, 569.

Harris, Isham G., and legislature over-awe people of Tennessee into secession, 391.

Harrison, Benjamin, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 205.

Harrison, Major-General William Henry, marches against the Indians, 308; appointed to operate against Detroit, 313; defeats the British at the battle of the Thames, 321; elected President of the United States, 351.

Harrison, Benjamin, elected President of the United States, 641.

Hart, John, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 200.

Harvard College, founded 41.

Hatcher's Run, battle of, 580; Major-General Ord reaches, 609; victory of General Miles at, 611; Confederates retreat south of, 612.

Havanna, expedition of French and Spaniards fitted out there against the Carolinas, 85.

Hawaian Islands, protectorate of the United States over, proclaimed by the American Minister at Honolulu, Republic proclaimed, protectorate cancelled by President Cleveland, 644; annexed to United States, and called the Territory of Hawaii, 660.

Hawaii, population for, in 1890 and 1900. *App.* xxvii.

Hawkins, Sir John introduces slavery into West Indies, 36.

Hay, John, of Ohio, chief writer of the valuable work, "Abraham Lincoln," a History, quoted at 371 *et seq.*; Secretary of State, 665; negociation with Lord Pauncefote, 669.

Hayes, Rutherford B., of Ohio, elected President of America, 637 ; his successful financial management, 638.
Hayne, Irish settler in Virginia, 104.
Hazel Run, a deep ravine, with a high road above it, 459.
Hazlitt, Charles E., killed, 500.
Heath, William, appointed Brigadier-172.
Heintzelman, General Samuel P., commands a corps, 407 ; engaged in the seven days' battles before Richmond, 414, 418 ; Pope's right flank covered by, 430.
Helena, General Curtis crosess to, 435 ; a town in Arkansas, 483 ; a fort there erected by General Curtis, 484 ; Confederate attack on, 485 ; their signal defeat, 486.
Hennepin, Father Louis, 65.
Herkimer, General, mortally wounded in an engagement at Oriskany, 226.
Heroism exhibited by coloured troops, 440.
Herron, Francis J., born in Pittsburg, Pa., served with distinction in the Missouri campaigns, 436.
Hessians, arrive under Lord Cornwallis, 209 ; attack Chatterton Hill, 212 ; attack Fort Washington, 214 ; defeated at Trenton, 218 ; repulsed at Fort Mercer, 235.
Heth, William, Confederate Major-General in Hill's corps, 492 ; wounded at Gettysburg, 506.
Hewes, Joseph, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 205.
Heywood, Thomas, jun., signer of the Declaration of Independence, 206.
Hibernian Magazine, 189.
Hill, English General, having seven thousand soldiers under his command, 86 ; wrecked with Admiral Walker, 87.
Hill, Ambrose P., 427.
Hill, General D. H., of Irish descent, served bravely in Mexican war, and afterwards in Confederate army, 411 ; at the Chickahominy, 415 ; directed to move his corps on the right of the Federal army, 429 ; his division acts independently of other corps, 443 ; arriving late at the battle of Antietam, 446 ; Meade charges his line of division at Fredericksburg, 458 ; his force left there as a screen, 492 ; encountered by General Buford, 495 ; attacks Reynolds' and Howard's corps, 496 ; his position on Seminary Ridge, 497 ; supports Ewell, 498 ; engages Getty's advanced column, 532 ; succesful rush, 546 ; gains a victory over the Federals, 570.
Hillsborough, Lord, adminstration of the colonies assigned to, 147 ; treated Benjamin Franklin in Ireland with marked courtesy, 149.
Hindman, Fort, 462, 484, 485.
Hindman, General, arrived in Arkansas, assumed command there, 434 ; takes possession of the Ozark Mountain district, Mo., 435 ; retreat from Missouri, 436.
History of the War in America between Great Britain and her Colonies, a work printed in Dublin, in three volumes, 8vo., 1779-1785, 183, *et seq.*
Hitchcock, Ethan, A., of Missouri, Secretary of the Interior, 666.
Hobart, Garrat A., of New Jersey, elected Vice-president, 651 ; death of, 667.
Holly Springs, demolition of, by Van Dorn, 461.
Holmes, Major-General Theophilus H., assigned to command rebel forces in the Trans-Mississippi department, 434.
Holston, buffalo hunter, 138.
Hood, General, appointed to succeed Johnston, 561 ; attacks the army under General Sherman at Atlanta, and is repulsed with considerable loss, 562 ; retreat of his army from Atlanta, 563 ; crosses the Chattahoochee, having 36,000 toops under his command, 574 ; he moves northwards, 587 ; retarded by General Thomas, 588 ; defeated at Franklin, 589 ; fortifies a position, 590 ; defeated with great loss by General Thomas at Nashville, 591 ; his retreat, 192 ; relieved of his command, 593.
Honey Hill, defeat of the Federal troops at, 586.
Hooker, General Joseph, served bravely in the Florida and Mexican wars ; tendered his services to the Government when the Confederate war broke out, 411 ; at the battle of Seven Pines, 413, 414 ; covers the retreat, 418 ; at the battle of South Mountain, 444 ; losses of his division at Antietam, 446 ; remonstrates with General Burnside at the battle of Fredericksburg, 460 ; appointed to succeed Burnside, 465 ; resolves to

advance against the Confederate capital, 470; crosses the Rappahannock to Chancellorsville, 471; stunned by the fall of a pillar, 472; retreats across the river, 473; withdraws from that line, 493; resignation of, 494.

Hooker, Thomas, "Light of the Western Churches," 33.

Hooper, William, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 205.

Hope, Captain Henry, of the British frigate, Endymion, 336.

Hopkinson, Francis, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 200.

Hopkins, Lieutenant-Colonel, commanded the post of St. John's Bluff, on St. John s River, Florida, 437.

Hopkins, Stephen, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 198.

Hostilities commence between Northern and Southern States, 371.

Houston, General, commands the Texan revolutionists, 349.

House of Wisdom, the new, 34.

Howard, Oliver Otis, commissioned Brigadier-General for his bravery at Bull Run; his brigade was distinguished at Seven Pines, where he was severely wounded, 413; crosses Kelly's Ford, 471; opposed at Gettysburg, 496; aids General Green at, 502.

Howe, Sir William, Commander-in-Chief of English Land Forces, 157, 161; commands the British troops at the battle of Bunker Hill, 167, 168, 169, 170, 171; besieged in Boston, 189; evacuation of, 190; sails for New York, 208; appointed English Commissioner, 209: baffled at Long Island, 210; dilatoriness in attacking Americans, 212; retreats to Kingsbridge, 213; retires to New York Island, 215; expedition under, designed to effect the capture of Philadelphia, 223; inefficiency of, 231; embarks with forty-six battalions and two regiments of cavalry for Philadelphia, 232; at the battle of Germantown, 235; resigns, 242.

Howe, General Lord, Commander of the British Navy, 191; arrives at New York, 208; appointed English Commissioner, 209; futile attempts to treat of peace with the Americans, 211; sails for Philadelphia, 232; draws his ships away from it, 241; a storm prevents his encounter with the French fleet, 247.

Howes demand, more troops from England, 215; failure to intimidate or deceive the Americans, 241, 242.

Hudson, Henry, explorer, 23.

Huger, General Benjamin, withdrew Confederate troops from Norfolk, 408: at the battle of Oaks Station, 411.

Hughes, Most Rev. John, Roman Catholic Archbishop,, quells riots in New York, 509.

Huguenots, French, settle in Carolina, 25.

Hull, General, surrender of at Detroit, in Michigan territory; found guilty of cowardice by a court-martial and sentenced to be shot; sentence remitted by President on account of his past services, 310; defence of his conduct written by himself and by his daughter, 311.

Humphreys, General, leads an attack at Fredericksburg, 460.

Hunter, General David, issued an order declaring the slaves of Georgia, &c., for ever free; which was afterwards repudiated by the President, 440; rage of Confederates, 441; appointed to supersede General Sigel, 541; defeats the Confederates at Piedmont after a battle lasting for ten hours; returns by way of Kanawha, his troops enduring great hardships on the route, 541; ordered to retreat on Harper's Ferry, 547; captures Confederate guns and trains, 550; forces under him concentrated on the Monocacy. 567; relieved of command at his own request, 568.

Hunter, James, of Lynchburgh; wrote an account of the siege of Vicksburg, 487.

Huntingdon, Samuel, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 199; President of Continental Congress for 1779, *App.* xx.

Hutchinson, Chief Justice Thomas, enforcement of powers of Board of Trade by, 134; his unpopularity in Boston, 135; wrote a "History of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay," and "The History of the Province of Massachusetts Bay," *Pref.* vi., 34, 38, *et seq.*

Hutchinson, Mrs., starts Antinomian tenets, 39; murdered, 40.

Hyde, Edward, Lord Cornbury, Governor of New York and New Jersey, 84; his avarice and rapacity cause him to be recalled, 85.

Iceland, early intercourse with Ireland; Pagan traditions; Christian religion introduced into, by Irish; Scandinavian colonization of, 3; Sagas and Eddas of, 7, 8, 9.
Idaho, erected as a new state by Act of Congress, 642; population for, 1890 and 1900. *App.* xxvii.
Illinois, Indians of; spread of French influence in; Indian converts, increase in, 77; French colonization of, 89; M. de la Motte arrives in, 90; population for 1890 and 1900. *App.* xxvii.
Independence Declaration of; names and short biographies of the signers of, 197, 198, 199, 200, 201, 202, 203, 204, 205, 206, 207; Constitutions formed by most of the States after, 208.
Independence of America, formally declared by France, 239; acknowledged by the different European nations, 281.
Independence, town of; taken possesslon of by the Southern Missouri rebels, 435.
Indiana admitted as a new state into the Union, 339; population for, in 1890 and 1900. *App.* xxvii.
Indians, various tribes of, 12; their religious beliefs, languages, customs, locations, and monuments, 13, 14; allies of France and Spain, 97; depredations by, 308; Creek, massacre of whites by, 320; Seminole and Creek, aggressive action of, 311; inroads by Seminole on border settlers of Florida, 348; insurrection of Winnebagoes; overawed by heavy forces, 343; troubles caused by, on borders of the Mississippi, 344; on Indian reservations, not taxed, population of, in the United States for 1900. *App.* xxvii.
Indian Tribes, disturbances of, beyond the Mississippi, 631, 632.
Indian, territory, population for 1890 and 1900. *App.* viixx.
Indian War in Maryland, 55.
Iowa, admitted a new State into the Union, 353; population for, in 1890 and 1900. *App.* xxvii.
Ireland, her early inhabitants and their notions regarding America, 1; how far her myths influenced maratime enterprise in Christian times questioned, 2; frequent intercourse between Iceland and, 3; St. Brendan sails from, 5; early Irish mariners driven back to, 6; Ireland-it-Mickla, or Great Ireland, a name given to the unknown western continent in other countries as in, 7; westward of, 9; vessels said to have gone thither from, 8; European emigration to America seems to have originated in, 10; sends emigrants to New England, 38; Irish Papists transported from, 47; almost completely denuded of her native population, 48; Irish emigrants settle in North Carolina after the Williamite and Jacobite war in, 55; Quakers leave, 56, 57; William Penn in, 62; Carrolls emigrate from, 70; numerous emigrants from, 82, 83, 84, 87, 88, 99, 100, 101, 102, 103, 104, 105, 106, 107, 108, 109, 110, 136, 137, 138, 139, 140; general sympathy for the colonists in, 156; excitement in, 158; alarm in, 159; Parliament of, 174; address of Congress to people of, 175; pretended settlement of public affairs in, 241; rejoicings on the victory at Yorktown in, 280; Parliamentary independence of, 283, 284; death of Washington lamented in, 299; at close of civil war numbers of troops that fought on both sides from, 620, 621; immigrants from, 633, 634; represented at the World's Fair in Chicago, 644, 645.
Irish-Americans, before the Revolution, 69, 70; in the Colonies, 82, 83, 84, 87, 88, 99, 100, 101, 102, 103, 104, 105, 106, 107, 108, 109, 110; Western parts of America half formed of Irishmen, 137; numerous in New England, and Maryland, 138; largely influenced American progress, 139, 140; John Stark enlists in a short time eight hundred men mostly, 160; the O'Briens fought the first battle for American Independence on the seas, 164, 165; serving in the Continental armies, names of, 168, 169; Catholics under General Moylan, 173; almost exclusively Irish or, recruited in Pennsylvania, 187, 188, 189; at the siege of Savannah, 257, 258; subscribe to defray costs of the war, 261; in Carolina, 265, 266, 272; constituted with Irish-born half the Revolutionary army, 283, 284; Catholics, organised into a distinct ecclesiastical province under John Carroll as Prefect Apostolic, and afterwards placed under a hierarchy, 286, 287; Hugh Henry Brackenridge's statement regarding, 292; distinguished native, 342, 343; in **Texas**,

349, 350; in the war with Mexico, 355, 357, 358, 364; with Irish in New York enlist as Federal troops, 373, 374; distinguished soldiers, 376, 381, 382, 384, 403, 404, 409, 411, 412; in Mr. Law's division, 459; Generals Carr and McNeil, 464; Hon. Andrew Curtin and Colonel John McLeod Murphy, 476, 479; Generals Michael K. Lawler and George Meade, 482, 494; Generals Geary and Barnes, 499, 500; Generals Brannan and McCook, 519, 559; Captain James S. Thornton and General John Adams, 564, 589; Generals Devens, Thomas A. Smith and Griffin, 612, 613, 616; McKinlays, 650; Sampsons, 654, 655; Blood of, in President Theodore Roosevelt, 671.

Irish Brigades, in France, petition from the regiment of Dillon to the French War Office, claiming the privilege of being sent out to fight the English in America, 240.

"Irish Celts," written by a Member of the Michigan Bar, *Pref.* ix., 100, *et seq.*

Irish, early traditions regarding a land out in the Atlantic Ocean, bardic poems and stories referring to, 1, 2; earliest designation of America, by the, and thought to have been first reached from Europe by, 4; navigators, 5, 6; recorded settlement there by; language said to have been spoken in Florida by early inhabitants, 7, 8, 9; accounts of St. Brendan's voyage to newly discovered land spread in the different countries of Europe, 10; names for America on early Italian charts, 15; traditions studied by Christopher Columbus, 16; transported as slaves to Barbadoes and New England, 47; send contribution to relieve distress in Plymouth Colony, 61; early settlers a chief source of American heroism, character and prosperity, 69; servants, a tax on, in Maryland, 86; Papists, enactments against, in Maryland, 88; influx of emigrants especially to Philadelphia, 99; settlers and settlements of early date in the old colonies, 100; Parliament tries to stop emigration to America, 101; tide of emigration continues to flow, especially among the Presbyterians of Ulster; records of names, families and places of settlement, 102, 103, 104, 105, 106, 107, 108, 109, 110; Parliament paralysed through agencies of English commercial jealousy, monopoly, corruption and intrigue, completely dependent on the Crown and Ministers, and prevented by Navigation Acts from having any direct trade with the American Colonies, 133, 134; emigration to America, in reign of George III., 136; settlers, inducements to leave their own country, 137; thousands of, emigrate to the American Colonies, 138, 139, 140; sympathy for American cause, 156; protests against the English Ministry, 158; enrolled in great numbers in New England for American army; names of one company raised in Bedford, 160; names of, recorded, 168, 169; soldiers, four thousand drafted to America from Ireland, 176; Catholics, attempts of English Government to raise regiments of, they refuse to enlist, 185, 186; for Irish-American Brigade, recruited in Pennsylvania, 887; regiments of French Army mostly recruited from Ireland, embarked on board the French fleet, destined to assist the Continentals, 241; Parliament, moves an address to King George III., carried by a large majority, recommending the restoration of a lasting and an honourable peace with the Americans, 280; Volunteers declare for Irish Legislative Independence; Independence of Parliament obtained for Ireland; trade with the United States inaugurated, 283, 284; Colonel Corcoran's American Brigade formed, 373; Zouaves of Captain Thomas Francis Meagher, 374; Rifles at Seven Pines, 412; Brigade, commanded by Meagher, ordered to the front, 413; charged the Confederate Army at Seven Pines, who retired before them in great disorder, 414; cover the retreat, 416; check the attack of Jackson, 417; break the enemy's ranks, 418; cover the retreat, and charge the Confederates, 419; Brigade, bravery of the, at the battle of Antietam, 446; regiments in front of battle at Fredericksburg, 459; desperate valour and great loss of, 460; Brigade, assemble for address from their chaplain, Father Corby; 498, 499; Brigade, the battles of.

and names of officers recorded, 501; incited to riots in New York, 508; quelled by Archbishop Hughes, 509; troops, in the Federal and in the Confederate Armies; one hundred and fifty thousand, fought on the Federal side alone in the war of secession, 620, 621; immigrants, vast accession of, to the American Republic, 633, 634.

Irishwoman, charged with being a witch in New England and hanged, 69.

Irvine, or Irving, Colonel William, at first a surgeon in the English navy, joins Washington, 173; his regiment ordered to Canada, 188.

Irvine, Matthew, brother to William, Physician and Surgeon in General Lee's division, 188.

Irvine, Callendar, William and Armstrong, sons of Colonel William, served as officers in the war of 1812 between Great Britain and the United States, 188.

Irving's, Washington, "History of the Life and Voyages of Christopher Columbus," *Pref.* vi., 15, *et seq.*; "Voyages and Discoveries of the Companions of Columbus," 18; "Life of George Washington," 114, *et seq.*

Island, of Breasal, of Life, great magic, lost Atlantis, Western, 2; fabled, in the Atlantic, 5; of Birds, of Sheep, 10; battles on Long, 209, 210, 211.

Izard, Major-General George, American, marches to relieve Fort Erie, 331.

Jackson, Andrew General, compels submission of Seminole and Creek Indians, 311; victories over Southern Indians, 320; remonstrates with Spaniards for breach of neutrality laws, 331; takes possession of Pensacola, 332; prepares to defend New Orleans, 333; great victory there, 334, 335. Succesful operations against Seminole and Creek Indians, Invasion of Florida by, Capture of St. Mark's, Seizure of Pensacola, Spanish troops and civil authorities sent to Havanna for stirring up the Indians to hostilities, compromise with Spain of great advantage to the United States, 340; appointed Governor of Florida, resignation owing to ill-health, 341; elected President, 343; compels French Government to pay an indemnity, 344; quells threatened Southern disturbances, 345, 346; re-election of, refusal of a charter to United States Bank, withdrawal of Government funds from same, 347; results, 348; menacing message to Congress, determined attitude, 349; retires into private life, 350.

Jackson, Brigadier-General, Thomas Jonathan, known as "Stonewall" Jackson restrains McDowell at Bull's Run, 381; defeats the Federal forces at Cross Keys, 400; withdrew through Brown's Gap, 401; his corps posted at Cedar Mountains, 424; crossed the Rapidan, 425; his move on the 25th of August, 427; Pope's main army confronted by, 428; move to Harper's Ferry, 445; commands Confederate right at the battle of Fredericksburg, 457; rapid flanking March at Chancellorsville, 471; fired upon and mortally wounded, 472.

Jackson, Claiborne F., Governor of Missouri, in favour of Confederate States, 375.

Jackson, Irish Colonists family, 88.

Jacksonport, General Price marches to, 570.

Jalapa, attacked by Americans, Mexicans defeated, 357.

Jameson, Charles Davis, bravery at battle of Bull Run, appointed Brigadier-General of Volunteers, fought at battle of Seven Pines, 412.

James I., issues letters patent for colonizing America, 26; his laws against recusancy, 29.

James II., sent out as Lord High-Admiral to New Amsterdam when Duke of York, 53; he proclaims religious freedom when king, 57; his esteem for William Penn, and its results, 64; his efforts to curtail the civil liberty of American colonists, 67; despotism in New York, 68.

James', William, Naval Occurrences of Wars between Great Britain and the United States of America, 311, *et seq.*

Jamestown, Colony of, 27.

James River, English settlement there commenced, 27; Arnold ravages along the, 368; Lord Cornwallis retires to mouth of, 274; Federals get command of, 408; retreat on, 418; across the, 419; McClellan urged to retire from, 424; General Butler moves on, 541; various actions near,

545; Grant crosses the, 544; manœuvre on north bank of, 546; General Lee crosses the, 569; Federals cross to north of, 572; Kautz attacked north of the James, 579.

Jasper, Sergeant William, a brave Irishman, whose gallant efforts are memorable in American history, his life sacrificed to save the American flag at Savannah, 257, 258.

Jaurez, Mexican President, succeeded in breaking up alliance of England and Spain with France. 442.

Jay, John, President of the Continental Congress for 1788, *App.* xx.

Jenkins, General Micah, Confederate army, killed by his own troops at the Battle of the Wilderness, 533.

Jefferson, Thomas, the honour of drawing upa draft of Declaration of Independence devolves upon, 195; signs it 204; Governor of Virginia, 205; calls out the militia to resist Arnold's invasion, 208; Secretary of State in Washington Cabinet, 290; fails to become President, 297; elected President of America, 300, 301; re-elected, 303; his message to Congress, forecasts necessity for constructing gunboats, 305; resignation of, 307; death of, 343.

Jeffereys, Colonel, ends Indian war, 56.

Johnson, Colonel Richard M., charges British and Indians at battle of the Thames, 321.

Johnson, Dr. Samuel, treatise by, entitled "Taxation no Tyranny," 157.

Johnson, General Bradley Tyler, at battle of Gettysburg, 502.

Johnson, Robert, Governor of Carolina, 89.

Johnson, Sir Nathaniel, defends Charlestown, 85.

Johnson, Senator, Andrew, appointed Military Governor of Washington, 393; nominated for the vice-presidency of the United States, 581; elected Vice-President, 583; succeeds Abraham Lincoln as President of the United States, 625; impeachment of, by the House of Representatives, 629; test Vote taken and acquittal of, 632.

Jones, Paul, naval exploits of, 254; capture of Serapis and Countess of Scarborough, off Flamsborough Head, in England, 255.

Judges in State of New York, proposal to make them dependent on the pleasure of the Crown, refusal of the

Johnson, Sir Willam, settles in Johnstown, New York, 108; defends fort at Lake George, 118; builds Fort William Henry at head of the Lake, 119

Johnston, Albert Sydney, Commissioned Major-General of Confederate army, 384; commences war in Kentucky, 385; attacks General Grant at Pittsburg Landing, 402, killed at, 403.

Johnston, Edward, born, 492.

Johnston, General Joseph E. reinforces Confederates at the battle of Bull's Run, 381; commissioned Major-General of Confederate army 384; placed in command of the Confederate army of the Potomac, 397; drew up army at Williamsburg for battle, 409; ordered from the Rappahannock to oppose General McClellan, 410, severely wounded at battle of Seven Pines, and incapacitated for duty for some time, 413; appointed to succeed General Bragg as Commander of the Confederate army, 522; urged by Jefferson Davis and his cabinet to take the initative in a campaign against General Sherman's forces, 556; engagements with Sherman's army, 557; retreats across the the Etowa river, 558; his victory at Kenesaw, 559; defeated by the Federal troops at the Chattahoochee river, 560; retreat of, to Atlanta, superseded by Jefferson Davis, and General Hood appointed to succeed, 561; unwillingly reappointed by Jefferson Davis to command of the Confederates opposed to Sherman, 608; negotiations with Sherman for the surrender of the Confederate army 616, 617; counsels the flight of Jefferson Davis, and deliberately assumes the responsibility for ending the war; surrender and disbandment of army, 618.

Johnstone, Chevalier De, constructs entrenchments for the French near Quebec, 124.

Jones, Brigadier-General Samuel, killed at Gettysburg, 502.

Jones, Lieutenant Thomas Ap Catesby, defeated by a greatly superior British naval force, 333.

Jones, Major-General Samuel, appointed to take charge of the military district of South Carolina, 582.

State Assembly to grant salary to judges so appointed, 134.

Juka, Confederates under Price, defeated at, by General Rosecrans, 433.

Kansas, becomes the scene of disorder and violence, 365; quarrels between the free-state and pro-slavery men, 366; John Brown's action in, 368; President resists admission as a State to the Union, 369; population for in 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.

Kasson, James, his father and six brothers, Irish emigrants, 103.

Keane, British-General, killed at New Orleans, 335.

Kearney, General Stephen Watts, served gallantly in the war of 1812-14; placed in command of Western States' volunteers; conducts an army over the plains to Santa Fe; continues his march through Mexico; for his services in campaign he was promoted to Brevet of Major-General; made Military and Civil Governor over the City of Mexico, 357.

Kearney, Philip, Biography of, by J. Watts de Peyster, 409; his division on the railroad from Savage Station to the bridge, 411; comes up at Seven Pines, 412; occupies rifle-pits, 413; fire opened on, by Confederates, 418; mortally wounded at Chantilly, 430.

Kearsarge, naval engagement with the Alabama, 563, 564.

Keenan, Major Peter, killed at Chancellorsville, 471.

Kelly, Colonel Benjamin Franklin, defeats Confederates at Phillippi, 379.

Kelly, Colonel Patrick, commander of the Irish Brigade at Gettysburg, 501.

Kelly, John, of Newbury Colony, Mass., 83.

Kelly's Creek, in Virginia, called after an Irish settler, 83.

Kelly's Ford, battle of, resulting in victory for the Federal Army, 522.

Kenrick, Most Rev. Peter Richard, Archbishop of St. Louis, issues a pastoral to preserve peace, 375, 376.

Kentucky, State of, admitted into the Union, 294; some of its inhabitants in sympathy with Confederates, 384; rebellion, and Confederates enter the State; some Confederate successes in, 384, 385; invasion of, 431; Confederates set up a State Government in Frankfort; defeated at Perryville, 432; Rosecrans assumes command at Louisville, 434; organization of Secret Societies in, 468; John H. Morgan invades, 514; population for, 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.

Keyes, General Erasmus Darwin, commands corps, 407; at the battle of Fair Oak Station, 411; sends for reinforcements, 412; moves forward to meet Confederates, 418.

Kidd, William, Captain, pirate, 79.

Kieft, William, third Governor of New York, 44.

Kilpatrick, Hugh Judson, for distinguished cavalry service made Brigadier-General, 493.

Kinawha County, Va., Irish settlement at, 83.

King Philip, Indian Chief, wages war with white settlers, 59; his camp surprised by Major Church, 60; betrayed by one of his own people and killed in a swamp, 61.

King, William R., of Alabama, elected Vice-President, 364.

King's Mountain, battle fought at, resulting in victory for the Americans, 266.

Kingston, New York, burned by the British, during the advance of Sir Henry Clinton, 230.

Knights of the Golden Circle, 468.

Knox, Colonel James, leader of band of hunters in Kentucky forests, 138.

Knox, Henry, great exploit of, 164; his artillery play with great effect on Cornwallis' forces at the battle of Brandywine, 233; at the battle of Monmouth, 243; becomes Secretary of War in Washington's Administration, 290.

Knoxville, the Confederates desire to hold, 514; siege of, 521; Longstreet retires from, 522.

Kosciusko, Thadeus, the renowned Polish patriot, joins the American army as a volunteer, 221; throws up entrenchments at Bemis' Heights, 228.

Lacuna, Urbana, General of the Filipinoes, 673.

Lafayette, Marquis de, purchased a ship at his own expense, and sailed to America to offer his sword without pay to the Congress; appointed Major-General of the American Army,

221; wounded at the battle of Brandywine, 234; sends a challenge to the Earl of Carlisle, chief of the English Commissioners, 242; received in France with great honour by his countrymen and by the Court; urges on the French Government the invasion of Ireland with a view to establish its independence, and to create a diversion for the United States, 268; stationed at Richmond, Va., 273; joined by Generals Washington and Rochambeau at Williamsburg, 275; prepared to storm English redoubt at Yorktown, 277; last visit to the United States, 342; re-embarks for France, 343.

Lafayette, town, concentration of General Banks at, 515.

Laclede, Pierre Liguest, founder of St. Louis, 128, 129.

La Colle Mills, victory of British at, 325.

Ladrones, The, or Marianne Archipelago, 659.

Laird and Co., construct a warship, mysteriously known as "No. 290," 489.

Lake Borgue, operations of the British against, 333.

Lake Champlain, American victory on, 336.

Lake Erie, victory of Commodore Perry on, 319.

Lake Ontario, portion of British squadron captured on, 326.

Lamb's, Sargeant R., original and authentic Journal of the American War, 159, *et seq.*

Lambert, General, succeeds General Pakenham in command of British army, 335.

La Saussaye, sails to America in a small French vessel, 24; sent adrift in a small barque by Samuel Argal, rescued by a French fishing vessel, 25.

Las Casas, Bartholomew de, benevolent efforts on behalf of the Indians, 20.

Laurens, Henry, President of the Continental Congress for 1777, *App.* xx.

Law, John, establishes the "Compagnie de l'Occident" 90, 91; his failure, 98.

Lawler, Brigadier-General Michael K., restores the battle at Big Black River, 482.

Lawton, General Henry, sent on an expedition to the Philipines, had twenty-two engagements and captured twenty-two towns, 663; killed in an attack on San Mateo, 667.

Lecky's, William Edward Hartpole, History of England in the Eighteenth Century, 150, *et seq.*

Lee, Charles, made Brigadier-General, 172; made prisoner by the English, 215; exchanged by the British for General Prescott, 224; tried by court-martial for his misconduct at Monmouth, 243.

Lee, General Robert E., commissioned Major-General of the Confederate forces, 384; commands Confederate army around Richmond, 407; succeeds General Johnston as commander-in-chief, and held that position until end of war, 413; autograph letter of, falls into General Pope's hands, from which he learned of that commander's movements, 426; crosses the Rapidan, 428; issues a Proclamation from Frederick City, 444; at the battle of Antietam, 446; retreats across the Potomac, 447; concentrates his army at Fredericksburg, 456; able dispositions for battle, 457, 458; great victory, 460; anticipates renewed attack, 461; his army reinforced, 492; invades Pensylvania, 493; retires towards Gettysburg, 494; dispositions for battle, 497, 498; his signal defeat, 499, 500, 501, 502, 503, 504, 505; retreats from Gettysburg, 506; recrosses the Potomac, 507; escapes through want of enterprise on part of the Union army, 510; advance to Manassas and retreat to the Rapidan, 522; resists the army of General Grant, 531; directs an assault on General Hancock; fired on by his own troops in mistake, and his right arm shattered, at the battle of the Wilderness, 533; victory at Spotsylvania, 535; holds a strong position at the North Anna, 538; victory at Cold Harbour, 539; keeps to his defences around Richmond, 544; sends Early large reinforcements, 575; gives his assent to recruiting negroes, 594; appointed Confederate Generalissimo, 605; overtures made by to General Grant for a military conference, 605; army of, pursued by General Grant, 613; re-

pulses General Humphreys on the line of retreat, 614; negociates for the surrender of his army, 615; formal capitulation, 616.

Lee, Fitzhugh, joins General Lee at Gainsville with his brigade of Cavalry, 427; his cavalry move on Front Royal, 575.

Lee, Francis Lightfoot, Signer of the Declaration of Independence, 205.

Lee, Major Henry, obtained a victory over the British, and took many prisoners at Paulus Hook, now Jersey City, 256.

Lee, Richard Henry, delegate of Virginia; receives from his State power to propose a Declaration of Independence, 194; President of the Congress of the Confederation for 1784, *App.* xx., Signer of Declaration of Independence, 204, 205.

Le Febouse, M., Captain, attacks Charlestown, 85.

Leisler, Jacob, seizes the Fort of New York; arrested and hanged, 68.

Lesueur, erects a fort and trading post for the French, 97.

Lewis Creek, 82.

Lewis, Francis, Signer of the Declaration of Independence, 199.

Lewis, John and Mary, oppressed Irish emigrants, 82; John first white resident of Bellefont; gave name to Lewis Creek, Va., 105.

Lexington, Mass., breaking out of the war at, 158; first blood drawn in the war of Independence, 159.

Lexington, Mo., defended by Colonel Mulligan, 383.

Libby Prison, at Richmond, converted after the war into an Historical Museum in Chicago, 456.

Lightfoot, Thomas, an eminent Quaker preacher, 83.

Lincoln, Abraham, elected President of U.S., 369; his inauguration, 371; issues proclamation, 372; denounces action of seceding States; calls out militia, 373; proclamation of; Forts of South Carolina, Georgia, Alabama, Mississipi blockaded, 374; Volunteers for War called out by, 375; proclamation by, preventing all commercial intercourse with seceders, 383; primary object of, declared, the preservation of the Union, and integrity of the Republic, 438; issues an order that Mr. Stephens, who had been sent on an embassy by the Richmond Government, should not proceed to Washington or pass the Federal lines, 507; delivers a remarkable oration at Gettysburg on the occasion of the dedication of a portion of the battle-field as a cemetery for the remains of those national soldiers who had there fallen in defence of the Union, 522; issues his annual message with a proclamation of Amnesty and reconstruction, 523; nominated for re-election, 581; re-elected, 583; inaugurated President for a second term, 607; assassination of, planned, 621; the plotters, 622; his lamented death, 623.

Little Round Top, battle at, 501.

Livingston, Philip, Signer of the Declaration of Independence, 199.

Lochen, Sieur de, French explorer of Missouri, 91.

Locke, John, English philosopher, frames a constitution for Carolina, 54.

Lockyer, Commander M., of United States gun-boats, 333,

Logan, James, appointed Governor of Pennsylvania, 71, 72.

London Company, formed, 26.

London, Treaty of, 97.

Londonderry, settlement formed by Irish emigrants from, 102.

Long, John D., Secretary of the Navy, member of M'Kinley Cabinet, 652, 666.

Longford, Ireland, emigrants from, 83.

Long Island, disastrous battle on, 209; evacuated by Washington, 210

Longstreet, Brigadier-General James, served in United States army, and with bravery, in Mexico; at Fair Oaks Station, 411, 412; at Gettysburg, 503; designed to take Knoxville from Burnside, 518; besieges it, 521; retreats from Knoxville towards Virginia, followed by General Burnside's cavalry, 522; fired on by his own troops in mistake, and wounded at the battle of the Wilderness, 533.

Lopez, General Narciso, organizer of revolt in Cuba, 648; his defeat and execution, 649.

Lossing's, Pictorial Field Book of the Revolution, 67, *et seq.*

Lost Mountain, battle at, 558, 559.

Louis XIV., King of France, an enterprising monarch, lends support to French exploring expedition, 65, 79; allows the colony of Louisiana to drift into penury, 81; grants trading privileges in Louisiana, 90.

Louisiana, called after King Louis XIV. of France, 65; its extent originally, 67; poverty-stricken condition of, 81; French enterprise in, 90; Spanish designs upon, 97; surrenders its charter, 98; ceded to the French Republic by Spain, subsequently ceded to the United States, 301; admitted as a new State into the Union, 309; secedes from the Union, 370; reconstruction of and abolition of slavery in, 524, 525; population for 1892 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.

Louisana Lower, important manœuvres of United States and British troops in, 331, 332, 333, 334, 335; expedition against, by General Butler, and Commodore Farragut, 404, 405, 406; operations of General Banks in, 488, 489.

Louisiana Upper, mines of, 77.

Louisville City, Ky., plan and site of, laid out by John Campbell and John Connolly, 139; head-quarters of Major-General Henry W. Hallock there, 390.

Lovell, Mansfield, Confederate General, having only 3,000 troops for its defence, evacuates New Orleans, 406

Loyalists, The English, in America, 155, 156.

Lowry, Colonel Alexander, an Irishman by birth, a cordial hater of Monarchy, a determined foe of England, and an enthusiastic Republican, 233, 234.

Lucon Island, one of the Philippines, 673.

Lundylane, American captures and victory at, 327.

Lynch, an Irish Colonel, distinguished for his coolness and bravery at Savannah, 257.

Lynch, Thomas, jun., Signer of the Declaration of Independence, 206.

Lyon, Captain Nathaniel, preserves Missouri from joining seceders, 376; created Brigadier General; killed at Wilson's Creek, 382.

Lyon, Matthew, an Irish hired emigrant, afterwards became a member of Congress from Vermont and Kentucky, 99.

Lyons, Lord, English Ambassador at Washington; disappointed in his projected peace compromise of a separation between North and South, 476; inflexible resolve of Mr. Seward to reject such a proposal, 477.

Mackenzie, William Lyon, commander of Canadian rebels, 351.

Mackey, John, Irish settler at Buffalo Gap, 82.

Macomb, Brigadier-General Alexander, victory at Plattsburg, 330.

Macon, taken possession of by General Wilson, 619

McCall, Irish settler in Virginia, 104.

McClary, Major Andrew, killed at Bunker Hill, 171.

McClellan, Major-General George B., defeats Confederates in West Virginia, 379; organises the Grand Army of the Potomac, 384; appointed commander-in-chief of the United States forces, 385; operations against Richmond, in front of Yorktown defences, 401; has command of nearly 150,000 men, 407; commenced siege of Yorktown, 408; victory at Westpoint, 409; army placed in a disadvantageous position, 410; retreating battles, 411, 412, 413, 414, 415, 416, 417, 418, 419; sends offensive and almost mutinous despatches to the President and to Mr. Stanton, Secretary of War, because they had not forwarded more troops, 420; President having lost confidence in his capacity or judgment as commander-in-chief, decides upon having him removed, 421; defers sending reinforcements to Pope, 429; at battle of South Mountain, 444; battle of Antietam, 445; hesitates to pursue General Lee, 447; urged by President and General Halleck, 451; removed from command by order of President Lincoln, 452; nominated as a candidate for the Presidency at a Democratic convention in Chicago, 582; defeated and resigns his commission in the army, 583.

McClernand, General John A., succeeds Sherman in command, 462.

McClure, General, commands Americans at Fort George, 322.

McCollum, Irish immigrant, 82.

McCook, Alexander McDowell, commanded one wing of the Federal army at Bowling Green, 434,

MacDonald, Donal, leader of the Scots' Royalists, 184.
MacDonough, Commodore Thos., victory on Lake Champlain, 330.
McDowell, General Irvin, commander of Federal army, 380; defeated at Bull Run, 381; deposed from command of Federal forces, 383; advance checked, 401; in command of corps, 407.
McGee's, Thomas D'Arcy, History of the Irish Settlers in America, 98, *et seq.*
McGowan, John Porter, leads division of Kirby Smith's corps, 449; his brigade largely composed of Irishmen, and commanded by a man of Irish descent, takes possession of Gettysburg, 496.
McGrady, Major Hugh, 109.
McKean, Thomas, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 202; chosen president of the Continental Congress for 1781, 272. *Appd.* xx.
McKenna, Joseph, Attorney-General, member of McKinley Cabinet, 652.
McKennans, Irish settlers in Pennsylvania, 99.
McKinley, William, of Ohio, elected President of America, his address at the Capitol, 651; his Cabinet, 652; his Message devoted to the Cuban question, 653; proclaims a blockade of the northern coast of Cuba, 654; annual Message, 661; issues a commission to report on the Philippines, 663; his Cabinet at the opening of the fifty-sixth Congress, 665; re-elected President, 671; assasination at Buffalo, 674.
McKinley Tariff, 645.
McLaughlin, Colonel Thomas, fought at Bunker Hill and at Bennington, 171.
McLawes, General Lafayette, commanded a division of Longstreet's corps, 443; at Fredericksburg, 457, 459; at Chancellorsville, 472; leads his division against Sickles at Gettysburg, 499; driven back, 500; attack on the right, 505.
McLeod, Colonel John Murphy, Irish-American, takes part in the Vicksburg campaign, 479.
McLeod, publicly boasts to have taken part in the incident at Fort Schlosser; arrested by American authorities on charge of murder, a *nolle prosequi* afterwards entered, 351.
McNeill, Colonel John, action in Missouri, 435; occupies Cape Girordeau, and clears Missouri of rebels. 464.
McNeill, General John, of Irish parentage, born in Halifax, Nova Scotia; victorious in a bayonet charge against the British, 326.
McPhearson, General James, defeats two brigades of the Confederates under Gregg and Walker, 480; ordered by Grant to march against Vicksburg, 481; at siege of Vicksburg, 482; joins in a raid from Vicksburg, 526; appointed to command the Department of the Tennessee, as immediate successor to General Sherman, 528; takes part in Sherman's advance, 556, 557; his action at Little Kenesaw, 359; killed in an encounter with the enemy at Atlanta, 562.
McQuade, Colonel James, of the 14th N. Y. Regiment, served bravely at Malvern Hill, 418.
McSparran, Rev. Dr. James, settler in Narraganset, 104; serves his Church at Narraganset, 139.
Madison, James, elected President of United States, 307; he recommends augmentation of the military and naval forces to prevent the wrongs sustained from the British Government, 308; issues a message to Congress in June 1812, 309; proclaims War against England, 310; renews the War in 1813 after vain attempts at negociation, 313; obliged to retire from Washington, 329; ratifies a treaty of peace, 337; his term of the presidency closes in 1817, 340.
Maelduin, his wanderings on the Atlantic, 7.
Magruder, Colonel John B., defeats the Federals, 380; Confederate army of 12,000 commanded by, 401; withdrew from Yorktown, 409.
Mahon's Lord, History of England from the Peace of Utrecht, 118, *et seq.*
Maine, early colonization of, 30; French settlers in, 70; State of, admitted into the Union, 341; population for in 1890 and 1900. *App,* xxvii.
Maine, United States battle-ship, destruction of, with great loss of life, while lying in the harbour of Havana, 652.

Mallory, Stephen R., of Florida, Secretary of the Confederate Navy, 4 5.

Malvern Hill, an elevated plateau near the James River, 418.

Manassas Junction, valuable military stores and supplies at, secured by General Jackson, 427.

Manchester, Mass. originally called Derryfield, 92.

Manhattan Island, purchased from Indians, 43.

Manifesto against engaging too much in the culture of cotton issued by Confederate President, 466.

Manilla, city of, surrendered to the Americans, 655 ; articles of capitulation, 656.

Manning, settler in Virginia, 104.

Mansfield, General Joseph King Fenn, at the battle of Antietam, 446.

March, Colonel, moves on Port Royal, 85.

Marcy, member of President Franklin Pierce's Cabinet, 364.

"Marion's Men," the most enterprising revolutionary corps in the South, 264

Marlboro', Duke of, 79.

Marmaduke, Confederate General John Sappington, invades South-Western Missouri, but retreats, 464.

Marquette, Father, explores the Mississippi river to the mouth of the Arkansas, his missionary labours, 58.

Marshall, John, a Great American statesman, frames the American Constitution, became Chief Justice of the United States, 287 ; personally a remarkable character and a distinguished writer, 283 ; author of Life of General Washington, 191, *et seq.*

Martin, settler in Virginia, 104.

Marye's Estate, a sharp eminence near Fredericksburg and surrounded by a high ground, held by the Confederates, 458, 459 ; stormed by General Sedgwick, 472.

Maryland, granted by Charles I. of England to Sir George Calvert, and so called in honour of Queen Henrietta Maria, 31 ; his brother, Leonard Calvert, visits it, with 200 immigrants, several of these Irish ; a General Assembly constituted, with reservations to the family of Lord Baltimore, 32 ; Claybourne excites rebellion in ; Catholic Assembly of, passes an Act of Toleration for persons of all creeds; Catholics in, under Governor Stone, side with Charles I. against Parliament, 49 ; a new Assembly acknowledges Cromwell's authority and disfranchises the Catholics, 50 ; the rights of Lord Baltimore again established on the restoration of Charles II., 51 ; Catholics persecuted in, 85, 86 ; large emigration to, from Ireland, 138 ; Confederate invasion of, 492 ; abolition of slavery in State of, decreed, 525 ; population for, in 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.

Mason, John, obtains a grant of territory in New England, 30 ; burns the Pequods' chief fort, 33 ; contests with the Indians, 42.

Massachusetts, Puritans found Plymouth colony in the present State of, 29. 30 ; Jesuits forbidden to enter, 40 ; Government of, offer £100 for Abenakis' scalp, 93 ; delegates of, meet other colonial delegates, 145 ; assembly of, issues a circular letter to other colonies, 147 ; Provincial Congress meets in, 154 ; declared by English Parliament to be in a state of rebellion, 156 ; resolve to reduce it to submission, 157 ; renounces allegiance to King George III., 193 ; people of, declare in favour of separation from England, 194; population for, in 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.

Mather, Increase, president of Harvard College, writes on witchcraft, 40.

Mather, Rev. Dr. Cotton, adjudges an old Irish woman to be a witch, 69 ; denounces witchcraft from the pulpit and fans popular superstition, 40, 74.

Matthews, settler in Virginia, 104.

Maude, Captain, brings treaty of peace to New York, 336.

Maximilian, Arch-Duke of Austria, designated Emperor of Mexico, 489 ; condemned to death and shot, 630.

Maxwell, Brigadier-General William, served under General Schuyler, 176 ; at the battle of Brandywine, 233 ; at Valley Forge, 236.

May Flower, arrives with Puritan Pilgrim Fathers, 29.

Mayhew, Thomas, labours among the Indians, 41.

Maysville, on the western border of Arkansas, 435; thither Blunt followed Cooper and defeated him, 436.
Meade, General George Gordon, his division at Fredericksburg, 458; appointed to succeed General Hooker, 494; orders the occupation of Gettysburg, 495; receives account of Reynolds' reverse, 496; selects position for battle. 497; his troops hurry onwards, having marched 35 miles without rest, 498; at the battles of Gettysburg, 500, 501, 502, 503, 504, 505, 506; congratulated by the President on his victory at Gettysburg, and urged to follow General Lee, 507; marches southward, 510; second in command to General Grant, 531; countermands attack at Cold Harbour 539; receives Grant's direction for a co-operative movement, 609; sends a division from the front of Petersburg, 612; follows Lee north of the Appomatox, 615.
Meagher, Captain Thomas Francis, commands a company of Irish Volunteer Zouaves, 374; marched to Fair Oaks, through a dismal swamp, 413; charges and repels the Confederates, 414; covers retreat and checks pursuit, 416; charges to the guns of a Virginian battery, 417; engaged in battle each day, before Malvern Hill was reached, 419; led his troops against the stone wall defences of Marye's Estate; prodigies of valour performed by his Irish Brigade, two-thirds of their officers and men killed or wounded on that bloody field, 459.
Mechanicsville, carried by Federal forces, 410; attacked by General Lee with great vigour, 415.
Mecklenburgh County, declaration of Independence by people of, 164.
Melendez, Pedro, Admiral, takes French Fort Carolina by surprise, 25.
Memminger, Charles Gustavus, Secretary of the Treasury, 465.
Memphis, City of, surrendered by Confederates, 407.
Mercenaries, German, recruited for America, 190.
Meredith, General Soloman, opposes the Confederate advance, 495.
Merrimac, Confederate steam-frigate, sank a sloop of war, drove a frigate ashore and burned it, afterwards damaged by the Federal iron-clad Monitor, 394; war-ship owned by the Confederates, and blown up by themselves to prevent her capture by the Federals, 408.
Merrimac River, Mo., discovery of lead on, 91.
Merritt, Major-General Wesley, Brigadier at the battle of Gettysburg, 498; commander of the American troops at Manilla, 655.
Mervill, Colonel Lewis, sent in charge of Cavalry force, to oppose the Confederates in Arkansas, 435.
Metamoris, capture of, by General Taylor, 354.
Mexico, city of, taken by the Americans, 359; General Forey enters, and establishes a Triumvirate Government there, 489.
Mexico, war breaks out with, 364; peace concluded, 361; surrender of a vast territory to the United States by, 362; Napoleon III. desires to establish an Empire in Mexico, 387; French unsuccessful in their intrigue, deserted by England and Spain, 442; fresh invasion, 489; resolution of Congress against the re-establishment of a Monarchy in; French evacuation of, demanded, disembark at Vera Cruz, 630.
Michigan, re-organization of Government for, 320; admitted as a State into the Union, 350; population for, in 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.
Michillimakinac, seizure of, by British General Rogers, 310.
Middleton, Arthur, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 206.
Mifflin, Thomas, President of the Congress of the Confederation for 1783, *App.* xx.
Miles, Colonel, defends Harper's Ferry, 444; killed, 445.
Miles, Major-General, arrives at Santiago with a large reinforcement of United States troops, 658 successful encounter with the Spaniards, 659.
Military Academy, founded at West Point, on the Hudson River, 301.
Millbourne, Secretary, hanged, 68.
Miller, Colonel James, his bravery, 327.
Miller, Irish settler in Virginia, 104.
Milroy, General Robert Houston, surprised at Winchester, 493.

Minnesota, admitted as a State into the Union, 368; population for, 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.

Minuit, Peter, first Dutch Governor of Manhattan Island, now New York, 43; recalled, he next entered the service of Sweden, and built a fort near the present site of Wilmington in Delaware, 44.

Minute Men, vote to enrol, 153; they fire on British retreating from Lexington, 159.

Missionary Ridge, battle of, 518, 519.

Mississippi River, exploration of, by French, 58; prior discovery of southern by the French, 73; Indian troubles on borders of, 344.

Mississippi, State of, admitted into the Union, 341; population for, in 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.

Missouri, discovery of lead in, 41; Indians of, discover plot for their destruction, and massacre Spanish conspirators, 97; great opposition to admitting her as a slave-state into the Union, but at length with what was known as the "Missouri Compromise," a proviso to prevent slavery for the future in States or territories, north of 30 deg. 30 mins. North latitude, 342; guerilla war broke out in various quarters of, and under different leaders, 422, 423; plan for combined invasion of, agreed to by Governors of Arkansas, Louisiana, and Texas; Department of, to be commanded by General Samuel Curtis, 434; State of, decrees the freedom of slaves, and ratifies the new constitutional ordinance of immediate and unrecompensed emancipation, 525; population for, in 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.

Mobile, city of, attack on, by sea and land, 566; capture of, 602, 603; evacuated by the Confederates, 619.

Modoc Indians, of Oregon, treacherously murder General Canby during a parley with their chiefs regarding a treaty of peace, 636.

Mohawk Indians, help New Englanders in war with Abenakis, 93.

Molino del Rey, battle of, Americans under General Worth, defeat Mexicans, 358.

Molly, Captain, the handsome wife of an Irish Cannonier, displays great bravery and presence of mind at the battle of Monmouth; commission conferred upon her by Washington, 243, 244.

Molyneux's, Case of Ireland eagerly read by the American Colonists, 141.

Monadock, town of, otherwise called Dublin after the Metropolis of Ireland, 83.

Monk, General, a proprietor in Carolina, 54.

Monmouth, description of battle at, 242, 243, 244.

Monroe, Colonel, capitulates to Montcalm, 120.

Monroe Doctrine, defined by the President and called after him, 342.

Monroe, James, Ambassador to France, recalled, 295; elected President of United States; his congratulations to the country on its prosperous condition, 340.

Montana, becomes a State by Act of Congress, 642; population for, in 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.

Montauk, a Federal ironclad, sets the Confederate war-vessel Nashville on fire, 409.

Montcalm, Marquis of, appointed French Commandant in Canada, 119; his successes, 120; defends Ticonderoga, 121; English retreat before, 122; defence of Quebec by, 124; mortally wounded on the Heights of Abraham, 125.

Montgomery, Commodore, commanded Confederate fleet of eight gun-boats; destroyed by Federal fleet under Commodore Davis, 407.

Montgomery County, N.Y., Irish settlers in, 110.

Montgomery, constituted the original seat of the Confederate Government, 371; captured by Brevet Major-General James H. Wilson, 619.

Montgomery, Richard, appointed Brigadier General, 172; destined to conduct an expedition to Canada, 177; takes possession of Montreal, 178; appears before Quebec, 180; killed in an assault on the city, 181; his eulogy, 182.

Montreal, surrender of, to the English, 126; capture of, by General Montgomery, 178.

Moore, Frank, edited "The Rebellion Record" in twelve octavo volumes, *Pref.* viii., 378, *et seq.*

Moore, James, Brigadier General, takes up arms against the English in North Carolina, 184.
Moore, James, Governor of Carolina, defeated at St. Augustine, 80; divisions between the proprietors and people under his rule, 81.
Moore, James, son of the Governor of Carolina, unsuccessful against St. Augustine; burns the villages of Christian Indians, 82.
Moore, John, Colonel, elected Chief Magistrate by the Assembly of Carolina, 89.
Moore, Major, killed at Bunker Hill, 171.
Moore's Creek, disaster to Scots Royalists at, 184, 185.
Morgan, Daniel, joins Washington at Boston, 189; drives back the English under Burgoyne, 228; serves under General Green in the South, 269; great victory at the Cowpens, 270; joins Green, 271.
Morgan, George Washington, served in the Mexican war; commands a corps in the army of the Mississippi, 462.
Morgan, John Henry, daring Confederate officer, 434; surprised and killed near Greenville, Tenn., 572.
Morgan, William, abduction of, at Canandaigua, New York, for divulging the secrets of Freemasonry; causes ill-feeling throughout United States; anti-Masonic party formed in conquence, 343.
Morgan's Brigade, of Irish and Virginian riflemen, march on foot to Boston, 189; bravery of, at Saratoga; did great execution, 229.
Mormons, sect founded by Joseph Smith, 359, 360; rebellion of suppressed, 367; rising of, in Utah checked, 383.
Morris, Mayor of New York, resolute measures successfully taken by, to quell anti-religious disturbances, 352.
Morris, Robert, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 200.
Morton, John, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 200.
Morton, Levi P., of New York, elected Vice-President, 641.
Mosby, John Singleton, an active guerilla raider; afterwards disbands his partisans, and labours to restore peace in the South, 464.
Moulton, Colonel, surprises Norridgewock and the Abenakis, 93.
Mound-builders, mystery surrounding their origin; skill in working metals, 14.
Moylan, Colonel Stephen, joins Washington and becomes his *aide*; brother to the Catholic Bishop of Cork, 173, 174; merchant in Philadelphia and Quarter-master, he recruits cavalry, 188; conspicuous for his valour at Long Island, 209; at Valley Forge, 236.
Mulhollin, Polly, a romantic and adventurous Irish girl in Virginia, 104.
Mulligan, Colonel James, organizes and commands the Western Irish Brigade, 382; surrender of, to General Stirling Price at Lexington, 383; checks the Confederate cavalry in an engagement at Leetown, 548; mortally wounded at Kernstown, 549.
Murfreesboro, battle of, 449, 450.
Murphy, settler in Virginia, 104.
Murray, Colonel, advances with a strong British force against the Americans, 322.
Murray, General, defeated by the French near Sillery, 126.
Murray, Thomas Hamilton, General Secretary of Irish-American Historical Society; collected a list of nearly 250 Patricks who served in Washington's army, with their family names pointing to an Irish origin, 168, 169.
Murray's, Hugh, United States of America, 28, *et seq.*
Mutiny Act, passed to empower the Ministry to quarter troops on the Colonists; resistance by the Americans, 147.

Nagle. General James, served in the Mexican War; his brigade gallantly resisted overwhelming numbers at the battle of Oaks Station, 411; his bravery at the battle of Antietam, 446.
Napoleon III. desires a dismemberment of the United States, 387; design frustrated by President Jaurez, in Mexico, 442.
Narraganset Indians, conspiracy with Pequod tribe, 42.
Narragansets, at war with settlers, 59; massacre of whites by, 60; subdued by Major Church, 61.

Nashville, headquarters established there by Rosecrans, 434; sets out from, to meet Bragg, 449; reinforced from, 450; moves from, against Bragg, 514; Grant reaches, 518; Thomas advances from, to meet Hood, 587; retreats on, 588; Federal line of battle formed in front of, 589; Hood moves on, 590; great battle at, 589, 590; Hood's defeat at, 591.

Nashville, the, a Confederate war-steamer destroyed, 470.

Natchez, military and trading post established at, 77.

Native American Party, its policy, 365.

Naval engagements, Jeremiah O'Brien captures the Margaretta in Machias Bay, 164; commands that sloop, and captures the Diligence, with many other British vessels, 165; victories of Captain John Barry, 193; of Paul Jones, 254, 255; Captain Truxton captures a French vessel, 298; American victories at Tripoli, 302, 303; Chesapeake fired on by a British ship, 305; victory of Commodore Rogers, 307; in war of 1812, 311, 312, 313; in 1813, 314, 315, 316, 317, 318, 319, 321, 322, 323, 324, 325; in 1814, 326, 328, 330, 333; in 1815, 336, 337, 338.

Navigation, oppressive laws passed by English Parliament, 53.; Acts passed to prevent colonists from building ships or to trade with any country but England, 134.

Neal's, Daniel, "History of the Puritans," and History of "New England," *Pref.* vi., 29, 41, *et seq.*

Neale, Irish family of, settle in St. Mary, Maryland, 32.

Nebraska, admitted into the Union as the thirty-seventh State, 632; population for, in 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.

Negro Emancipation, legislation for, in Congress, approved of by President Lincoln, 438; decreed by Act of Congress, 602.

Negro Plot, alleged, in New York, 95; a great number of negroes hanged on suspicion, 96; regiment formed by Colonel Higginson, 440; volunteers, a limited number of, enrolled, their organization not generally encouraged, 423.

Nelson, Thomas, Junr., signer of the Declaration of Independence, 205.

Neutral Cargoes, question respecting, 663; English pretension that they have a right as belligerents to prevent the trade of neutrals with a neutral territory, 664.

Neutrality, laws, breach of, by Spain, 331; proclamation of, issued, as between belligerents having equal international rights, 442; violation of, by the English, 490.

Neutral Powers, doctrines set up by England with regard to, 304.

Nevada, enters the Union as a New State, reckons as the thirty-sixth State in the Union, 581; population for, in 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.

Newburgh, N. J., early settlers of, 82.

Newburn, captured by Federals, 390.

Newfoundland, discovery of, 19.

Newport, Christopher, sails from the Thames for Virginia, 23; enters Chesapeake Bay, 26.

Newton, John, his corps at Fredericksburgh, 458.

Newtown, now Elmira, in the State of New York, British Tories and their Indian allies concentrated at, 253; completely routed by General Sullivan, 254.

New Amsterdam, settlement formed by Dutch, 43; name changed to New York, passes under English Rule, 53.

New England, wars of colonists with Indians, 42; United Colonies of, 43; wars between whites and Indians in, 84; first organized resistance to measures of English Government in, 149.

New Englanders, infamous conduct of, in the war with Indians, 93.

New France, old name for Canada, 19.

New Hampshire, Irish settlers in, promote the linen manufacture, 103; population for, in 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.

New Haven, founded by Thomas Hooker, 33.

New Jersey, Danish and Swedish settlements in, 30, 31; so called in compliment to George Carteret, governor over Jersey Island in the English Channel, 53, 54; Irish colonists in, 101; State of, carried by the Democrats, 430, population for, in 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.

New Mexico, conquered by United States troops, 357; population for, in 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.
New Netherlands, called by the Dutch on the strength of Hudson's discoveries, 28; granted by Charles II., to his brother James, Duke of York, 53.
New Orleans, foundation of, 96; American victory at, 332, 333, 334, 335, capture of, planned by Navy Department, 404; rebel flag taken down, and United States flag hoisted, 405.
New Windsor, oldest village in Orange Co., New York, 108.
New York, city incorporated by special charter, 54; first legislative Assembly held in, 67; alleged plot to murder inhabitants of, 95; State of, founded by Dutch, 28; British attempts upon, foiled, 191; invasion of, by General and Admiral Howe, 208; engagements at, 209, 210; evacuation of, by the Americans, 211; State of, villages of Levistown, Youngtown, Manchester and Tuscalora, burned by the British, 323; blockade of ports north and south of, 325; arrangements for invasion of, 329; population for state of, in 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.
Nicaragua Canal, preparations for constructing, 668; rejection of the Clayton-Bulwer Treaty in reference thereto, 669; its construction deferred, 673.
Nicholson, Colonel, commanded troops destined for Montreal, 86.
Nicholson, Francis, sent out as Royal Governor to Carolina, 89.
Nicholson, Lieutenant, Governor of New York, fled to England, 68.
Nicholls, Brigadier-General F. F., at the battle of Gettysburg, 502.
Nicolls, Richard, Colonel, summons the Dutch colonists of New York to surrender to the English, 53.
Norfolk Town, burned in January, 1776, 174; taken by General Wool, 408.
Norridgewock, mission station, 92; destruction of, 93.
North Carolina, Congressional Army of, 185; first State to direct her representatives in Congress to declare for independence, 193; secedes from the Union, 370, population for, in 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.
North, Lord, becomes Chancellor of the Exchequer, 146; and Prime Minister, resolves to remit American taxation, 149; his denunciation of General Montgomery, 182; George III's recommendation to, 185; introduces two bills into the House of Commons proposing to concede everything the Americans contended for, except their nominal independence of the Crown, 239; poignant anguish of, on hearing about the surrender of Lord Cornwallis, 279; announces the resignation of his ministry, 281.
North Dakota, formed into a territory in 1861; into a State in 1889, 642; population for, in 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.
North-West Territories, possession of forts in, kept by the British, 294; their surrender afterwards agreed to, 295.
Notes, Legal Tender, originated by Secretary Salmon P. Chase, to Finance the Treasury, 448.
Nova Scotia, new name for Acadia, 86.

O'Brien, Jeremiah, first battle for American independence on the seas fought by; captures a British armed schooner in Machias Bay, Maine, 164; captures the Diligence and other British vessels, 165.
O'Brien, John, brother to Jeremiah, served under him as lieutenant on the Diligence, 165.
O'Brien, William, brother to Jeremiah, served as lieutenant under him, 165.
O'Byrne's, William R., Naval Biographical Dictionary, 315.
O'Callaghan's, John Cornelius, History of the Irish Brigades in the Service of France, 183.
O'Dunne, Lieutenant-Colonel Humphrey, a heroic Irishman, greatly distinguished for his intrepidity at the attack on Savannah, 258.
Odyssey, the Christian, of St. Brendan, 10.
Ogdenburg, British victory at Fort of; surrender of Americans after a gallant defence; massacre of the wounded by the Indians, 314.
Ogilby's America, 29.
Oglethorpe, General James Edward, founds Georgia, 94; his exertions to bring over colonists from England; he returns to England, 95.

O'Hara, General, submits to Washington and Lincoln after the surrender of Yorktown, 278.
O'Hara, James, one of the founders of Pittsburg, 100.
Ohio, admitted as a new State into the Union, 301; population for, in 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.
Ohio Company, formation of, 112.
Ohio River, fort built at head of; seized by the French, 110; evacuate it and retreat down the, 122.
Oilean-na-m-Beo, or "Island of the Living," imagined to have place in the Atlantic, 1.
Oklahoma, its organisation as a territory. 642; population for in 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.
"Old Kaskaskia," known throughout Illinois and Canada, 77, 89.
Oldmixton's British Empire in America, 29.
Oliver Cromwell, after the massacre of Drogheda, sends Irish slaves to Barbadoes, 47.
Oliver, Stamp Master of Bostor, hung in effigy, 144.
Omahas, Indian tribe of, 13.
Onahan, William J., account of the Irish Brigade at the siege of Savannah, in *Donohue's Magazine*, 258.
Oneidas, assailed by the Comte de Frontenac, 76.
Onondages, successes obtained over, by Comte de Frontenac, 76.
Opecancanough, enters upon a project to exterminate the white settlers in Virginia, 37.
Opequon, the, in Virginia, settled by Irish families, 105.
Ord, or **Orr,** General Edward Otto Cresap, at Bolivar; unable to cooperate in time at Corinth, 433; commands Eighteenth Corps, and captures Confederate entrenchments, 572; commander of Virginia and North Carolina Department, 600; examines Confederate lines, 610; pursuit of Lee by, 612. 614, 615.
Order of the Star, organization favouring the Confederates, 468.
Oregon, admitted as a State into the Union, 368; population for, in 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.
Oreto, afterwards called the Florida, first foreign-built Confederate cruiser, the keel of which was laid in Liverpool, nominally for the use of the Italian Government; warning of Mr. Adams, American Ambassador, to the British Ministry regarding her real purpose; allowed to leave the Mersey; within three months captured fifteen United States vessels, 422.
O'Reilly, Count, Don Alexander, entered the Spanish service, and afterwards passed over successively to the Austrian and French armies; re-entered the Spanish service; restored to rank and position in that army; promoted to be field-marshal, he was sent to Havana; afterwards took possession of the French territory, and was nominated Governor of Lousiana; established laws for the regulation of that whole province; in 1769 recalled to Spain; made Governor of Madrid; died in 1797, full of years and honours, 130, 131.
Organization of the Navy, 454.
Orleans Fort, completion and occupation of, 97; massacre of French occupants at, 98.
Ormond, Butler family in Ireland; said to have representatives in America, 100.
O'Rorke, Colonel Patrick Henry, native of Cavan, Ireland; a remarkably brave officer; saved Little Round Top, at Gettysburg, from being taken, but with the loss of his own life, 500.
Osages, the Spaniards mistake them for the Missouri tribes, and are massacred by, 97.
Ostend, conference at; attended by American Ministers to Spain, England, and France; effort to have Spain forced to sell Cuba to United States, 366.
Osterhaus, General Peter Joseph; served under Hooker at Missionary Ridge, 519.
Oswego, forts at, captured by the French, 119.
Otis, General Elwell Stephen, sent as second in command of the American troops in the Phillipines, 663.
Otis, James, advocate-general of the Crown; refusal of, to defend writs of assistance or general search warrants; enforcement of the writs abandoned, 134.
Otoes, Indian tribe of, 13.
Ozark Mountains, the Federal Army establish their winter quarters in the, 437.

Paca, William, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 203.
Packenham, General Sir Edward, conducts an English expedition to the Mississippi, 333; directs the British movements at opening of the battle at New Orleans, 334; killed early in the assault, 335.
Pagan Irish, traditions regarding the great Western Continent, 1.
Paine, Robert Treat, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 198.
Paldnan, Aguinaldo's head-quarters, 673.
Palo Alto, Mexicans defeated by the United States troops at, 354.
Panama, Isthmus of, 668,
Papineau, Louis Joseph, Speaker of the House of Assembly, leader of Canadians in rebellion against England, 351.
Paris, Count de, French Royal Prince; served as volunteer in the Federal army; departs for Europe after the battle of Malvern Hill, 419.
Parker, Admiral Sir Peter, Commander of British squadron, 191; repulsed at Charleston, 192
Parkman, historian, *Pref. et seq.*
Parliament of Ireland, sympathy of, with colonists, 174; resistance in it to send out troops from the Irish establishment, 176.
Parzis, Rev. Mr., acknowledges the delusions under which he laboured in reference to witchcraft, 74.
Patrick County, settlement of Irish there, 82.
Patricks, numerous in the continental army that served under Washington, 168.
Patterson, Robert, Major-General of Volunteers; distinguished for bravery at Jalapa, 357.
Patton, Colonel James, emigrated from Donegal, Ireland, to Virginia, 106.
Pea Ridge, battle of, Confederates defeated by Generals Curtis, Benjamin M'Culloch, and James M'Intosh, 393, 394.
Peace concluded between Mexicans and United States; California and New Mexico ceded to the latter, 361; proposals of, Russia attempts to mediate, 327; meeting of Peace Commissioners at Ghent; unsatisfactory results. 328; terms of, between Great Britain and the United States, 336.
Peace Party, discontent of, at continuation of the war, 324, 325.
Peirpoint, Francis H., elected Governor of West Virginia Legislature, 475.
Pemberton, General, plan of defence at Charleston disapproved by Beauregard; repairs to Richmond, and sent to occupy Vicksburg, 437: defeated at Champion Hill, 481; surrendered to General Grant, 487.
Pender, William D., Major-General in the Confederate service, 492.
Pendleton, George Henry, of Ohio, nominated as a candidate for the Vice Presidency at a Democratic convention in Chicago, 582.
Pendleton, William Nelson, Brigadier-General in the Confederate army, 492.
Penn, John, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 205.
Penn, William, professes himself a convert to Quakerism at Cork, in Ireland, 62; establishes the Quaker colony of Pennsylvania, 63; opposition to, and calumnies against, him 64; political troubles in England, and debts he incurred; his writings, 71.
Pennsylvania, its foundation, 63; early settlers of, 64; Irish immigration to, 83, 84; French encroachments on, 112; their successes in, 115, 117, 118; driven out of, 122; soldiers of the "Line" recruited there, 187; hesitation of delegates to vote for Independence, 195; forms its constitution in 1776, 208; Washington retreats to, 217; Confederate invasion of, 492; Confederate army in, 493; Lee returns from, 506; population for, in 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.
Peoria, military post established at, 77,
Pepperel, William, commander of colonists, 111.
Pequod Indians, their wars with settlers, 33; massacre of, 42.
Perry, Oliver Hassard, equips a fleet on Lake Erie, 318; utterly destroys and captures the British fleet, 319.
Personal Liberty Acts passed by Free States, 368.
Petersburg, siege of, 544, 545, 546, 547; assault on, 569, 570; combined assaults around, and capture of, 609, 610, 611, 612.

Phelps, Brigadier-General John Walcott, served bravely in Mexican war; ordered to be treated as an outlaw and felon by the Confederate War Department, 441.

Philadelphia, meaning of name, 63; second Continental Congress assembled there, 162; excitement in, on Declaration of Independence, 196; Lord Cornwallis threatens, 216, 217; Hessians paraded as prisoners in, 218; Americans fall back on, 234; British enter it, 235; the British evacuate, 242; Congress returns to, 245; mutineers in the American army march for, 267; news received in, of Lord Cornwallis's surrender, 279; convention to form a Constitution for the United States meets at, 287; great International and Industrial Exhibition held at, 637.

Phillippine Islands, 655, 656, 660, 663, 670.

Philippinos repudiate American protection, 663.

Phipps, Sir William, his belief in witchcraft, 74; commands fleet against the French, 75.

Pickett, George E., commands a Confederate division at the battle of Fredericksburg, 457; Longstreet commands his division, 492; directed to lead the decisive Confederate assault at Gettysburg, 503; complete failure and disaster, 504, 505.

Pierce, Colonel Ebenezer, commands Twenty-ninth Massachusetts Regiment, 414.

Pierce, Franklin, of New Hampshire, elected President, 364; disorders in Kansas during his administration, 365, 366.

Pigot, Brigadier-General, assists Gen. Howe in the advance on Bunker's Hill, 167; rallies the retreating British, 169.

Pilgrim Fathers settle in Plymouth, Massachusetts, 29; reinforced, 30.

Pitcairn, Major, summons patriots to surrender at Lexington, Mass., 158; his retreat to Boston, 159; killed at Bunker Hill, 171.

Pitman, Benn, author of "Treason Trials at Indianapolis," disclosing plans for establishing a North-Western confederacy, 469.

Pittsburg Landing, battle of, 402, 403, 404.

Plan of Campaign by General Lee, possession of, obtained by a Federal officer, 444.

Plantation Committee divides the boundaries between Maryland and Pennsylvania, 64.

Plattsburg, American victory at, 330.

Plot to murder President Lincoln and the Secretary of State, Mr. Seward, 621, 622; trial of the conspirators, 624, 625.

Plymouth Company, its origin and objects, 26, 28.

Plymouth, N. C., captured by Confederates, 530.

Pocahontas, Rebecca, marries John Rolfe, 27.

Point Comfort, in Virginia, 410.

Polk, James Knox, of Tennesse, elected President of United States, 353; wages war against Mexico, 354; treaty of peace under, 361, 362.

Polk, Leonidas, General, Protestant Episcopal Bishop, fought under General Bragg, 431; at Murfreesboro, 449; his corps around Chattanooga, 514; in the battle at, 516, 517; commander over the Department of Mississippi and East Louisiana, 523; killed by a cannon shot at Pine Mountain, 558.

Pollock, Robert and Magdalen, Irish family of; name contracted to Polk; settle in the colony of Lord Baltimore, Maryland; descendants, 70.

Pomeroy, Seth, Brigadier-General, resigns his commission, 172.

Ponce de Leon, Juan, in Florida, 19.

Pontiac, a celebrated Indian chief, 129; revolt of against, the English in Canada and his death, 130.

Pope, General John; his services at New Madrid, Mo., and capture of Island No. 10 on the Mississippi River, 395; receives the submission of three general officers and six or seven thousand Confederate troops, 396; commanding 20,000 troops at Pittsburg Landing, 406; commissioned Brigadier-General in regular army and called from the West to take command of the corps of M'Dowell, Banks, and Fremont, reserved for the defence of the capital, 423; makes a demonstration to assist the retreat of M'Clellan's army from the James River, 424; head-quarters at Culpepper's Court-house, 425; pre-

pares for the advance of Lee, 426; outflanked by Lee, 427; retires before the Confederates, 428; his desperate defensive battle at Groveton, 429; orders a retreat on Washington and tenders his resignation to the President, 430.

Popery, Act to prevent increase of, in Maryland, 80.

Popham, Captain, English, repulsed by the Americans, 325.

Populists, called also People's Party, a new political organization, 642; small representation in Congress, 643.

Porter, Captain, capture of Essex commanded by, 325.

Porter, David Dixon, Naval Commander; approves plan of expedition against New Orleans, 404; Farragut co-operates with, 474; passes Confederate batteries at Vicksburg, 478; commands naval squadron on Upper Mississippi, 479; captures batteries at mouth of Yazoo River, 482; Grant's congratulations with, 487; difficulty at Red River overcome, 554; armada collected under, in Hampton Roads, 598; his fleet off Fort Fisher, 599; a second attempt on Fort Fisher successful, 600; wrote a "History of the Navy in the War of the Rebellion," 404.

Porter, General Fitz-John, assigned direction of siege of Yorktown, 408; repulses the Confederates at Hanover Court House, 410; holds the left of Federal position at Malvern Hill, 418; gallant defence against the Confederates, 419.

Porterfield, Colonel G. A., sent to West Virginia to suppress efforts of United States in their endeavour to keep that State from joining Confederates, 379.

Port Hudson, held by the Confederates, 487; bombardment of, 488; surrender of, 489.

Port Jackson, flag of truce sent by General Banks to General Gardner in, and summons to surrender, 488; capitulation of, 489.

Port Royal, projected attack on, abandoned, 85; surrender of, and renamed Annapolis, 86.

Port of Valparaiso, blockade of, 325.

Porto Rico, special expedition directed against, 656; ceded to the United States, 659.

"Potomac, Campaigns of the Army of"—a critical history of operations in Virginia, etc., during war, 1861-65, by William Swinton, 418, *et seq.*

Potter's "Early History of Narragansett," 33.

Prairie Grove, battle of, 436.

Prentiss, Benjamin Mayberry, taken prisoner at Pittsburg Landing, 402.

Presbyterians, emigration of, from Ulster, in Ireland, 107; caused chiefly by civil and religious disabilities, 108; their case stated in Rev. Dr. James Seaton's "History of the Presbyterian Church in Ireland," 109; Protestant Episcopalians in the Irish Parliament enact that they and other Dissenters must receive the Sacrament according to the English Test Act to qualify for any public office, 136; in Pennsylvania, according to Bancroft, their voice was first raised to dissolve English connexion, 137; eviction of, from Marquis of Donegal's estates in Antrim, 138.

Prescott's, William Hickling, "History of the Conquest of Mexico," 11 *et seq.*; "History of Ferdinand and Isabella the Catholic," 16.

Presidential Election, law passed regulating, in case of a vacancy, 641.

Presidents, Vice-Presidents, and Cabinet Officers of the United States from the adoption of the Constitution to the present time, *App.* xx., xxi., xxii., xxiii., xxiv., xxv., xxvi.

Preston, Major, commanding officer at St. John's, Canada; surrenders to General Montgomery, 178.

Prevost, Sir George, British Commander-in-Chief, lands at end of Lake Ontario; defeated in attempt to take Sackett's Harbour; re-embarks, 316; his defeat by the Americans at Plattsburg, 330; disorderly retreat of, to Canada, 331.

Price, General Stirling, raises the flag of rebellion, 376; driven out of Missouri, 393; renewed invasion of Missouri by, 570; retreats into Northern Arkansas, 571.

Printing, the first printing press set up in the United States, 41.

Prisoners of War, confinement and treatment of, by the Confederates, 594, 595.

Proctor, General, retires with 1,300 troops before Major-General Harrison, 321.
Prohibition of Slavery, Act of, passed, 439.
Protestants, emigration of, from Ulster, 109.
Provisional Congress, Jefferson Davis inaugurated President of, 464.
Pryor, General, attacked the Federal lines at Mechanicsville, 415.
Puebla taken possession of, by the French, 489.
Pulaski, Count Casimir, a distinguished soldier, joins the Americans, 220.
Puritans, their hostility to Catholics, 50.
Putnam, created Major-General, 172; send to defend Long Island by Washington, 209; defends the Hudson River, 212; sent with 5,000 troops to the Jerseys, 215; ordered by Congress to send Washington a reinforcement, 234; pursues the British under General Tryon, recaptures much of their plunder, and takes fifty prisoners, 251.

Quaker Hill, Rhode Island, engagement at, between the Americans, commanded by General Sullivan and the British, under Pigot; victory obtained by the Americans, 247.
Quakers, Persecution of, and harsh laws against, in New England, 52; settle in New Jersey, 56; General Court of Massachusetts hold toleration of, a henious offence, 60; first emigrants to Pennsylvania mostly, 64.
Quebec, besieged in 1759, 124; taking of, 125; Montgomery's advance on, 178; assault on, 180; failure to capture, 181; Americans continue the siege of, 190; retreat from, 191.
Queenstown, in Canada, battle of; Americans defeated by British, 311; American defeat, near, 322; occupation of, by the Americans, 327.
Queenstown, in Maryland, Capture of, by British, 315.
Quitman, Major-General John Anthony, assaults Chapultapec, 359.

Raleigh, Sir Walter, puts to sea for America, but obliged to return, 22; explores eastern coast of America, 23.
Ramsay's, David, Life of George Washington, 113 *et seq.*
Randolph, Edmund, Attorney-General, member of Washington's Cabinet, 290.
Randolph, John, votes against war with England, 309.
Randolph, Peyton, of Virginia, presides over the Continental Congress in 1774 and 1775, 152. *App.* xx.
Ransom, Robert, at the battle of Fredericksburg, 458.
Rappahannock, Army of, 401.
Rasles, Father Sebastian, S.J., presides over the Mission at Norridgewock, 84; accused of keeping up French influence among the Abenakis, 92; the New Englanders surprise and murder, 93.
Rawdon, Lord, sent to Camden, on the Santee River, 262; returns to England, captured by a French frigate, and brought a prisoner to Brest, 272; served from the opening of the Revolutionary War nearly to its close, afterwards became the distinguished Liberal Statesman, Earl of Moira, 273.
Read, George, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 202; brother to Thomas Reid, whose surname is thus spelled, who was First Commodore of the Pennsylvanian Navy.
Reagan, John Henninger, of Texas, Confederate Postmaster-General, 465; prepares a written plan of capitulation for Jefferson Davis, 617.
Rebel Congress pass a bill prohibiting any dealing in the currency of the United States, 523.
Rebel Slaves not recognised as soldiers by the Confederate Government, and ordered to be executed without trial, 455.
Receipts for June 30th, 1901.
Recruits and reinforcements brought by England from Germany to quell the American Revolution, 223.
Red River Expedition planned, 551; reverses, 552; its failure, 553.
Reed, Joseph, President of Pennsylvania, gives a noble answer to one of the British Commissioners who attempted to bribe him, 242.
Reeder, Governor Andrew H., of Kansas, deposed, 366.

Reid, Thomas, appointed First Commodore of the Pennsylvania Navy, and served under Washington on land, until his ship was completed, successfully defends the Delaware, 193.

Reiter's Hill, Fort of, to defend Helena, 484.

Renault, Philippe Francis, Director-General of Louisiana Mines, 91.

Renewal of American Taxation in a new form ; duties imposed on paper, tea, glass, with other imported goods, 146.

Reno, General Jesse Lee, served bravely in Mexican War ; was killed whilst gallantly leading an assault at Crampton's Gap, 444.

Republican Congressmen, heavy losses in the States of Pennsylvania, Ohio, and Indiana, 431.

Republican Party, strong position of, in Congress, 438; under President M'Kinley, 662.

Report of Secretary of the Treasury, 666, 667, 672.

Resaca de la Palma, battle of, 354.

Revenue Laws, enforcement of ; warning from South Carolina to Federal Government that it will withdraw from the Union ; compromise recommended by Henry Clay arrived at. 346.

Revenues for June 30th, 1901, 677.

Revenue System, extension of United States, over territory beyond the Neuces, regarded as tantamount to a declaration of war against Mexico, 354.

Reynolds, General John Fulton, served with distinction in Mexican war, commanded the Federals at Mechanicsville, and repulsed General Lee, 415 ; advances to Oak Hill with Federal forces, 495 ; killed in the battle there fought, 496.

Rhode Island, State of, renounces allegiance to King George III., 193 ; population for, in 1890 and 1900. *App.* xxvii.

Riall, General, defeated at Chippewa, 326; retreat of, from Chippewa, 327.

Richardson, Israel Bush, entered United States Army ; his bravery caused him to be called "Fighting Dick" by his troops, 412 ; killed at Antietam, 446.

Richmond, preparation by General M'Clellan to capture, 396; Confederate Army of the Potomac assembled for defence of, 397 ; defended by Confederate Army under General Lee, 407 McClellan advances within seven miles of, 409 ; Jackson falls back on, 410 ; Federals retreat from, 419 ; Financial distress at. 454 ; Burnside marches against 456 ; preparations for Grant's expedition against, 528, 529 ; ably defended by Lee, 538 ; evacuated by the Confederate Army, 612.

Rio Grande, orders for troops in Texas to remain on, 620.

Riots in Philadelphia, 352.

Ripley, General Eleazar Wheelock, takes possession of Fort Erie ; gains the battle of Chippewa, in Canada, 326, 327.

Ripley, General Roswell Sabine, served in Mexican War, took sides with the Confederates, and directed the fire on Fort Sumpter ; directed the construction of the defences around Charleston. 437.

Roanoake Island, captured by Federals, 390.

Roberts, General W., killed at the battle of Murfreesboro, 450.

Robertson's, Dr. William, "History of America," *Pref.* vi., 11, *et seq.*

Robertson, Major-General, declared in the English House of Commons, the American General, Lee, had informed him that "half the rebel Continental army was from Ireland," 283.

Rockbridge, settlement of Irish immigrants in, 82.

Rockingham, Marquis of, forms a new Ministry, 145 ; on retirement of Lord North forms a Cabinet, 281 ; death of, 282.

Rodes, Robert Emmett, becomes Confederate Major-General, 492.

Rodney, Cæsar, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 202.

Rogers, Commodore of the President, fired upon by the Little Belt ; naval engagement with the British warship; great indignation aroused in the States, 307.

Roman, Alfred, author of "Military Operations of General Beauregard in the war between the States, 1861-65," etc., 380, *et seq.*

Roman Catholics, in the United States, address the Holy See to have a Resident Bishop, 286; placed temporarily under the Rev. John Carroll as Prefect Apostolic, 287.

Roosevelt, Colonel Theodore, Vice-President of America, 671; succeeds as President, 674; his first Message to Congress, 674, 675, 676; his Cabinet, xxvi.

Root, Elihu, of New York, Secretary of War, 665.

Rosecrans, General, stationed with his troops at Corinth, appointed to supersede General Buell as Commander-in-Chief over the large army of the Cumberland, 433; establishes his headquarters at Nashville, 434; marches with his troops to Murfreesboro'; constantly under fire there, 450; enters Murfreesboro' as victor, 451; action of, at Chattanooga, 514, 515; defeated, 516; at his request General Thomas supersedes him, 517.

Ross, George, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 201.

Ross, Irish immigrant, 82.

Ross, Major-General Robert, commands the British at Bladensburg, 328; leading an advance against Baltimore, killed in a skirmish, 329.

Rowan, Irish family of, emigrates to Kentucky, 137.

Ruger, Thomas Howard, repels the Confederates at Gettysburg, 503.

Rush, Benjamin, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 200.

Russell, Jonathan, American Peace Commissioner at Ghent, 328.

Russell, Lord John, delivered a peremptory summons to both North and South to make up their quarrel, 441; disregarded by the Federal Government, 442; protest of the American Secretary of State and Ambassador in London that he connives at building of Confederate vessels in British ports, 490; denies responsibility for that proceeding; his subsequent curious avowal on the subject of neutrality, 491.

Rutledge, Dr. John, emigrated to Carolina in 1735, 104.

Rutledge, Edward, son of Dr. John, born in Charleston, S.C., 1740; the youngest of seven children, distinguished fer his eloquence, represents South Carolina in the General Congress of 1774; signer of the Declaration of Independence, 104, 252, 206.

Rutledges, Irish colonists in Carolina, 88.

Ryan, Luke, native of Rush, in Ireland, Commander of the Black Prince, was distinguished as a daring privateer, who took many prizes, 250.

Rymer, Captain; his brutal treatment of Irish immigrants, 83.

Ryswick, peace of; ends war between English and French colonists, 76.

Sackett's Harbour, Blockade of, 326.

Sagg Harbour, Long Island, British surprised by Lieutenant-Colonel Meigs, their stores destroyed and vessels burned, 222.

Saint Brendan, sails in quest of Western Continent, 4; dangers on voyage; discovers land, 5; romantic accounts of his voyage, 6; written in various languages, and circulated throughout European libraries long before the period of Columbus, 9. 10,

Saint Clair, General Arthur, placed under command of Thompson, 191; opposes Burgoyne, 224, 225; President over the Congress of the Confederation for 1787, *App.* xx; utterly defeated by the Indians near the present site of Fort Wayne, in Indiana, 292.

Saint Louis, foundation of, city so called, 135.

Saint Louis, name given to Mississippi River by Robert de la Salle, 65

Saint Patrick's Day, evacuation of Boston by the British on the day of Ireland's National Apostle, and celebrated by the Irish in Washington's army, with such countersign, given by the Commander-in-Chief, 190; orders of Washington for celebration of, in his army to compliment his Irish soldiers in 1780, with universal military rejoicings, 259.

Saint Philip, name given to Missouri River by Robert de la Salle, 65.

Salle, Robert de la, French explorer, 65; his sad fate, 66.

Salling, John, settler below the Natural Bridge, Va., 82.

Salt Catchers, battle at, and Yamassees routed, 88,

Samoan Islands, recognised as neutral territory, 664; kingship of, abolished, partitioned between United States and Germany, 665.
Sampson, Rear Admiral, sails with his fleet from Key West, Flor., 654, 655; assumes command of the combined American fleets in Cuba, 656; during his temporary absence the Spanish fleet destroyed, 658.
Sanders, Colonel C. C., account of Irish Brigade's heroism at the battle of Fredericksburg, 459.
San Jacinto, battle of, between Mexicans and Texans, Mexicans defeated, President of Mexico made prisoner, 350.
San Pasqual, engagement at, by General Kearney, 357.
Santa Anna, General Antonio Lopez de, President of Mexico, 349; Commander in-Chief of the Mexicans, 355; resigns Mexican Presidency, 359.
Santa Fe, a provisional civil government appointed for, 357.
Santarem, Le Vicomte de, Rescherches historiques, &c., 17.
Santiago, surrendered to the Americans, destruction of the Spanish fleet at, 658.
Saratoga, N.Y., severe engagement near Saratoga, resulting in favour of the Americans, 228; Burgoyne falls back to heights in rere of, 230; capitulation and surrender of the British at, 231.
Sassacus, head sachem of Pequod Indians, murdered, 42
Savannah, foundation of, 94; captured by the British, 249; attack on, by the French, 256, 257; Irish officers whose names figure among the killed and wounded at the attack on, 258; evacuation of, by the Confederates, 597
Savannah, small Confederate schooner, escaped from Charleston in June, 1861, 422.
Saybrooke, Connecticut, immigration to, from County of Longford, Ireland, 103.
Schley, Commodore, commander of flying squadron which sailed to establish a blockade at Cienfuegos, 656.
Schofield, General John McAlister, left in charge of Missouri, 492; assigned to the command of the Military Department of North Carolina, 600; enters with the United States troops into Wilmington, 601.
Schoolcraft's, Henry R., Historical and Statistical Information about the Indian Tribes of the United States, 7, *et seq.*
Schuyler, Philip, appointed Major-General, 172; appointed to conduct an expedition against the British in Canada, 176; ably obstructs the passage of Burgoyne's army on their march to the Hudson, 226.
Scotch emigration to Philadelphia, 84.
Scott, Brigadier-General, leads the American advance at Chippewa, 326; severely wounded in the battle at Lundy Lane, 327; operations against the Indian Chief, Black Hawk, 344; appointed Commander-in-Chief against Mexico, 355; lands at Vera Cruz, and carries Sierra Gordo, 356; takes possession of Jalapa, 357; victory at Churubusco, 358; entry of, into the city of Mexico, 359; fought in chief battles of Mexican War, 409; commander-in-Chief of the United States forces, 380; resigns the command, 385.
Sea Engagements, Sir William Phipps ravages the coast of Acadia and of other French settlements in America, 75; misfortunes attending the French fleet, 111; of the O'Briens in Maine, 164, 165; of English ships in the Harbour of Boston, 167, 169; Lord Dunmore's naval war along the coasts of Virginia, 174; English fleet retires from Boston, 190; attacks many sea-port towns, 192; operations of Admirals Lord Howe and Sir Peter Parker, 209, 212, 235; French fleet destined for America, 240, 241; French and English fleets, 247, 248; American vessels at sea, 249, 250; exploits of Paul Jones in, 254, 255; French fleet at mouth of York river, 275; English naval force prisoners, 278; in the Mediterranean, 302, 303, 304; British ships outrage and insult American vessels, 305, 306; naval battle between, 307.
Secret Societies, started by the revolutionary Americans, 148.
Sedgwick, Major-General John, served with distinction in Seminole and Mexican wars, commanding the sixth army corps engaged at the battle of Seven Pines or Fair Oaks, 412; restores Federal line in the battle of the Wilderness, 533, 534; killed by a rifle shot near Spotsylvania, 535.

Segovia, Captain, personation of, 673.
Selma, Ga., fortified city of, captured by General Wilson, 619.
Seminole and Creek Indians, inroads of, subsequent defeat, 340.
Semmes, Captain, in command of schooner, "Sumter," escaped from Charleston in June, 1861, 422.
Senate and **House of Representatives,** joint resolutions respecting the Island of Cuba, adopted by; these resolutions accepted by Spain as a formal declaration of war, 654.
Seven Pillars for the new House of Wisdom in the Wilderness, 34.
Seven Pines, or Fair Oaks, battle of, cost the victors 5,739 men, 412.
Seven Years' War, state of colonies after, 132; effect on trade of England; increase of National debt consequent; proposal that revenue be raised from colonies to pay expense of, 133.
Seward, Secretary of State, advises United States to surrender Confederate prisoners; his official correspondence, 387, 442; claims of United States urged on Lord John Russell by, 490; attempted murder of, 622; perpetrator escapes, 624.
Seymour, Horatio, elected as Governor of the State of New York, 430.
Seymour, Truman, General, commanded Federal Army at Mechanicsville, 415.
Shackamaxon, treaty of, between William Penn and the Indians, 63.
Shafter, Major-General, commander of the army invading Cuba, 657; his overtures for the surrender of Santiago rejected, 658.
Shaftesbury, Earl, one of the Carolina proprietors, 54.
Shannon, appointed Governor of Kansas, 366.
Sharpsburg or **Antietam,** battle of, 447.
Shea, John Gilmary, "History of the Catholic Church in the United States," invaluable for that special study. *Pref., et. seq.*
Sheaffe, General, restores the battle at Queenstown Heights, 311.
Shenandoah Valley, settlement of, 82; serious disaster to Federals in, 399; the army of, 569.
Sheridan, Colonel Philip Henry, greatly distinguished himself at the battle of Boonville, 376; bravely repulsed the Confederates at Murfreesboro, 450; particularly distinguished for his bravery and conduct at the battle of Missionary Ridge, 520; cavalry raid by, pursues the Confederate Horse under Fitz Hugh Lee to Richmond, 535; expedition of, in the Shenandoah Valley, defeats the Confederates at Trevillian Station, moves with an immense train to the James river on his way to join the army of the Potomac, 542; appointed to an independent command, 567; campaign against Early, 575; despatch from, to General Grant, 604; moves from Winchester with two divisions of cavalry, 605; presses the attacks on Confederates, 606; receives reinforcements from General Grant, 610; his generalship at Dinwiddie Court House, 611; Confederates threatened by approach of, 612; struck the Danville road near Jettersville, 613; detains the Confederates in their retreat, 614; drove the enemy from Appomatox station, 615; nominated Lieutenant General, 636.
Sherman, General William Tecumseh, movements of, in the West, 526; commands division under General Grant, 403; appointed by Grant to command the military division of the Mississippi, 528; masterly manœuvre of, for completing the campaign, 573; recommends his marching southwards, 574; celebrated march of, through the State of Georgia, with an army of 60,000 men perfectly equipped, 584; provides for his communications, 585; receives despatch from General Grant, 595; advance of, upon Savannah, 596; enters Savannah at the head of his bodyguard, 597; determines to move through the interior of South Carolina northwards, 602; procures the evacuation of Charleston, 603; visits General Grant at City Point, 608; captures Raleigh, 616; receives the surrender of General Johnston, 617; the agreement not sanctioned by United States Government, 618; appointed General-in-Chief of the United States troops, 636.

Sherman, John, distinguished statesman, Secretary of State, member of M'Kinley cabinet, 651
Sherman, Roger, assists in drafting Declaration of Independence, 194; signs it, 199.
Shields, Brigadier-General James, great gallantry of, in battle of Cerro-Gordo, 356; defeats Confederates at Kearnstown, under General Jackson, 398.
Shipping, developments of, by steam, 339.
Ships of War, competent and well-deserving navy officer sent by Confederate President and Cabinet to Europe to obtain by purchase or by building vessels which could be transformed into ships of war, 421.
Shirley, William, Governor of Massachusetts, active in aiding the English against the French, 111.
Shute, Governor of Massachusetts, sends out a secret expedition from Boston to seize Father Rasles, 92.
Sickles, Daniel Edgar, raised the Excelsior Brigade in New York city, and commissioned Brigadier-General of Volunteers; conspicuous in the battles around Richmond, 414, 418; at battle of Fredericksburg, 458; at Chancellorsville, 471, 472; at Gettysburg conspicuous for gallantry, and lost a leg under fire, 499.
Sigel, Colonel Franz, defeated at Carthage by Confederates, 376; again unsuccessful at Wilson's Creek, 382; protects Virginia for the Federals, 529; operates in the Shenandoah Valley with 6,000 men; defeated by General Breckenridge at the north fork of the Shenandoah, with great loss of men and ammunition, 540; removal from command, 541; opposes the Confederates, 548.
Sill, General Joshua W., killed at Murfreesboro, 450.
Simcoe, Colonel, leader of the British at Spencer's ordinary, 272.
Sitting Bull, an Indian chief of the Sioux, wages war against the United States, 636.
Six Nations, the, an Indian federation, 88.
Slavery, promoted and maintained by English Government, notwithstanding reluctance of the various provincial, colonial Legislatures, 95; contest on admitting Missouri as a State for extension or repression of, 342; bitter discussion in Congress regarding; by a compromise California admitted into the Union as a free State, 362.
Slaves, Irish Catholics sold as, and sent to the West Indies, 47; negroes introduced from Barbadoes to South Carolina, 55; insurrection of, in New York, speedily suppressed, 87; fugitive slaves who had sought protection under the flag of the National armies, 438.
Sligo town, proposed plantation of, with New England families, 48.
Slocum, Henry Warner, at battle of Chancellorsville, 471; loses heavily at the battle of Gettysburg, 502.
Sloughter, Colonel Henry, sent by William III., as Governor of New York, 68.
Sly, Irish immigrant, in New York, 82.
Smith, Charles E., of Pennsylvania, Postmaster-General, 665.
Smith, General Andrew Jackson, captures Fort De Russey, 552; defeats the rebels at Henderson's Hills, 553.
Smith, General Persifor F., carries the entrenched camp at Contreras, 357.
Smith, John, founder of the English Colony in Virginia, 23; agent of the London Company, 26; saved from death by Pocahontas, 27.
Smith, Joseph, proclaims himself a prophet, Mormon Church established at Nauvoo, 359; afterwards himself and his brother killed by a mob, 360.
Smith's History of Canada, 127.
Smyth, Brigadier-General Thomas A., an Irishman, mortally wounded at the battle of Farmville, 613.
Smyth, James, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 200, 201.
Society of Friends, their appearance in Boston, 52.
Somerset, British warship at Boston, 167.
Sons of Liberty, sympathisers with the Confederates in the Northern States, 468.
South Carolina, declares for a bold policy, 193; forms its constitution, 208; invasion of, by the English, 251; contests in, 262, 263, 264, 265, 272, 273; accepts the United States

Constitution, 288; defiant action of, suppressed by President Jackson, 446; State of, passed ordinance of secession from the Union, at Charleston, 370; Confederate war breaks out in, 371; population for in 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.

South Carolina Volunteers, first negro regiment formed by Colonel Higginson, 440.

South Dakota, admitted as a territory, admitted as a State, 642; population for, in 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.

Southern Confederacy, minor successes in, 373.

Southern States, re-construction of, 628, 629.

Spain, war between England and, 95; complications of United States with on question of Cuba, 364; declaration of war by the United States against, 654; peace concluded with, 659.

Spaniards, first Europeans known to permanently colonize America, 19, 20.

Spanish Fort, bombardment of, 602, 603.

Spanish Government Plot, to destroy Missouris, 96: retribution, 97.

Spanish Missionaries, their early labours, 73.

Sparks, Jared, Correspondence of the Revolution, 165; editor of "Life and Writings of George Washington," 219; "Life of Benjamin Franklin" and editor of his Collected Works, 222.

Spencer, Joseph, appointed Brigadier-General, 172.

Spencer's, Rev. J. A., History of the United States, 69, *et seq.*

Spotsylvania, battle at, 534, 535, 536.

Springfield, New Jersey, indecisive battle between the British and the Continentals fought at, 263.

Stafford Heights, range of hills opposite Fredericksburg, 456.

Stamp Act, brought forth in Parliament, 141; strong opposition to, 142; passed, 143; great excitement and riots in America on account of, 144; measures taken to resist, 145; repealed, 146; renewed under another form and renewal of resistance, 147; all colonial taxes removed except duty on tea, 149.

Standish, Miles, Captain, alarms the Wessagussett settlers against the Indian plot, 30.

Stark, John, regiment of Irish and Irish-American rebels raised by, 160; defends the rail fence at Bunker Hill, 168; receives General Howes' column with a destructive fire, 169; repeated on the second assault, 171; commander of New Hampshire force, largely composed of Irish-Americans; victorious in two engagements fought at Bennington on the same day, 227.

State Banks, insolvency of, independent Treasury, for safe-keeping and disbursement of public money, sanction obtained by President Van Buren from Congress for, 350.

State Treasury, empty, and impossible to collect taxes in July, 1861, 422.

States, Free and Slave, jealousies and misunderstandings between, 345.

Steedman, Rear-Admiral Charles, co-operates with General Sherman in the attack upon Savannah, 596.

Steele, General, march from Camden to Little Rock, repulses the enemy with considerable loss at Jenkins' Ferry, 554.

Stephens, Alexander H., elected Vice-President of the Southern Confederate States, 371; wrote subsequently a History of the War between the States, 378; despatched by the Richmond Government on an embassy to President Lincoln to treat about a peace, 507.

Stevens' "Facsimiles of Manuscripts in European Archives relating to America," *Pref., et seq.*

Stevens, Surgeon George T., author of "Three Years in the Sixth Corps; a Narrative of Events in the Army of the Potomac from 1861 to the close of the Rebellion," 408.

Stevens, Issac J., mortally wounded at Chantilly, 430.

Stevenson, Adlai E., of Illinois, elected Vice-President of America, 643.

Stewart, Commodore, brilliant American victory of his vessel, the Constitution, over two English vessels captured, 337; in turn chased by a heavy British squadron, 338.

Stockton, Richard, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 199.

Stone, Protestant Governor of Maryland, appointed by Lord Baltimore, 49; deposed, 50.
Stone, Thomas, signer of the Declaration of Independence. 203, 204.
Stoneman, General George, his cavalry follow the retreating Confederates, 409; endeavour to move across the Rappahannock, 457; routed the enemy under Vaughan at Marion, and pursuing him to Wytheville captured all his artillery, trains, and 198 prisoners, destroys the extensive salt works at Saltville, a large amount of stores, and captures eight pieces of artillery, 587; successful movement of, 608.
Stone River, defeat of Confederates at, 451.
Stonycreek, defeat of British at, 316.
Stony Point, storming and capture of, 256.
Strasburg, defeat of the rebels at, by the Federal army, 577.
Sturgis, General Samuel Davis, goes in pursuit of Forrest, 556; defeated, 567.
Stuyvesant, Peter, succeeds Kieft as Governor of New York, 44; submits to the English, 53.
Sudbury, in Georgia, surrendered to the British general, Prevost, 250.
Sullivan, Colonel Jeremiah C., at the battle of Kearnstown, 397.
Sullivan, James, Governor of Massachusetts, 104.
Sullivan, John, a Limerick schoolmaster, settles in Maine; his sons, John and James, win great distinction in after times, 104.
Sullivan, John, captures the first fort in the Revolutionary War, 163; made Brigadier-General, 172; to him assigned defence of Long Island, 209; made prisoner by the English, 210; selected by them as bearer of a message to Congress, 211; at capture of Trenton, 218; attempt to cut off his division defeated, 231; at battle of Brandywine, 233; co-operates with the French fleet in Rhode Island, 247; expedition of, against the Six Nations, 253, 254.
Sullivan's Island, held by Colonel Moultrie for the Americans, 192.
Sumner, General Edward Vose, served in the war against Black Hawk and other Indian wars, as also in the war against Mexico, commands a corps under General McClellan, 407; his forces ordered to charge with bayonet, which they gallantly did, and the rebels yielded, 412; the Irish Brigade a part of his corps, 413; covers the retreat at Gaines' Mill. 416; takes up a position at Savage Station, 417; distinguished at battle of Antietam, 446; his division crosses the Rappahannock River, and occupies Fredericksburg, 457; attacks the heights in front, 458; head quarters at Laguna.
Sumpter, Colonel, exploits of, in South Carolina, 264, 273.
Sumpter, schooner, commanded by Captain Semmes, escaped from Charleston, 442.
Susquehanna, bridge over, destroyed by the Federals, 494.
Swinton, William, author of "Campaigns of the Army of the Potomac," &c., 418; also of "The Twelve Decisive Battles of the War," &c., and "A Condensed History of the United States," 419.
Sykes, George, led the second division of the Ninth Army Corps at Fredericksburg, 460; at Gettysburg, 497, 499; forces back Hood's Division, 505.
Symmetry, British ship, at Boston, 167.

Taliaferro, General William Booth, at the battle of Fredericksburg, 457.
Talladega, encounter with Indians at, 320.
Tallopoosa, encounter with Indians at, 320.
Tal Placido, Colonel, personation of, 673.
Taney, Chief Justice, violent opinions as a pro-slavery partisan, excite intense indignation among the Abolitionists, 367.
Tariff Bill, of McKinley, passed into law, recommended to be modified by President Cleveland, 645.
Tarleton, Lieutenant-General, routs the American Cavalry, 260; pursuit of, after the battle of Camden, 263; massacres over one hundred of the Virginia Regiment in cold blood, 264; defeated at the battle of Cowpens, 269; his retreat, 270.
Taxes, proposed for North-American colonists, 141.

Taylor, General Richard, surrenders to General Canby all the remaining rebel forces east of the Mississippi, 620.

Taylor, General Zachary, in command of American Army, ordered to occupy western bank of Nueces River, 353, victories at Palo Alto, Resaca de la Palma, Metamoras, and Monterey, 354 355; at battle of Buena Vista, 556; inaugurated President of the United States, his death soon follows, 362.

Taylor, George, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 201.

Tecumseh, excites the Indians to take up arms for the British, 314, 318; opposed in the South by General Jackson, 320; killed at battle of Thames, 321.

Tennessee, State of, admitted into the Union, 296; secedes from the Union, 376; attempts on western, by Confederates, signally defeated by General Rosecrans, 433; reconstruction of the old constitution so amended as to prohibit slavery, 525; population for, in 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.

Tenure-of-office-Act, a law passed to prevent the President from removing civil officers without the consent of the Senate, 629.

"Territories," the, former name of Delaware State, 63.

Texas, Christianity introduced into, 22; revolt of, from Mexico, 349; received as a slave State into the Union, 353; secedes from the Union, 370; population for in 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.

Thayendanegia, celebrated Indian Mohawk, and by election the great war chief of the Six Nations, induced to enter into an active alliance on the side of the British, 245.

Thomas, General George H., serves under General Buell, 390; defeats Confederates at Mill Spring, 391; got command of right wing of the army of Mississippi, 406; opposes General Bragg, 432; brave defence of the Federal lines at Chickamauga, 515, 516; deliberately falls back to Rossville, 517; supersedes General Rosecrans at the request of the latter, and left in a very precarious situation, 518; position at Missionary Ridge, 519; ordered to make the final charge by General Grant, 520; commands army of the Cumberland, 556; Sherman sends him back to Nashville, 575; lines of the Tennessee strengthened for, 585; directs General Sherman against the Confederates, 586, 587; retards General Hood as much as possible, 588; Grant orders his removal from command, 590; order delayed, and Hood is attacked in his position, 591; great victory at Nashville gained by, next day, 592; stops the pursuit of Hood at the Tennessee, 593.

Thomas, John, commissioned Brigadier-General, 172.

Thompson, Charles, native of Donegal, reply to Benjamin Franklin, 143; appointed Secretary of the First or old Revolutionary Congress, 152; reads the Declaration of Independence to Congress, 196; reads the despatch, announcing the fall of Yorktown to Congress, 279.

Thompson, Colonel William, attempts to surprise the van-guard of the English army at Three Rivers, 188; forced to retreat, 191; conspicuous for valour at the battle of Long Island, 209.

Thompson, Jacob, Secretary of the Interior under the Administration of Buchanan, engages in treasonable plots to create an insurrection in the States of Illinois, Indiana, and Ohio, 550, 551.

Thompson, John and Andrew, Quaker settlers from Dublin in Pennsylvania, 63.

Thompsons, an Irish family, help to form Quaker settlement in Philadelphia, 57.

Thornton, Colonel, leader of the British on right bank of the Mississippi, at battle of New Orleans, 334.

Thornton, Matthew, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 197, 198.

Thury, Father Louis Pierre, establishes a mission among the Indians, 70, 77.

Tilgman, General, slain at the battle of Champion Hills, 481.

Tippecano, battle of, Indians defeated at, 308.

Tir-na-m-Beo, 1.

Tir-na-Nōg, 1.

Tomkins, D.D., elected Vice-President, 340.
Toombs, Robert, Confederate Secretary of State, 464.
Topeka, Convention at, framed a Free State Constitution, 366.
Toral, General José, Commander of the Spanish troops at Santiago, 658.
Trade, unjust restrictions on, 146.
Treason, charge of, brought against 23 American soldiers who were sent to London to answer the charge; prevailing belief in England was that once a subject, allegiance could not be transferred to another nation, 319.
Treaty of Paris in 1763, 127.
Treaty of **Peace** ratified with Mexico, 336, 337.
Treaty of **Peace,** ratified between United States and Spain, 660, 663.
Trenton, battle of, 218, 219.
Tribute, paid by the Great Powers of Europe as well as the United States, to the Barbary States, Tunis, Tripoli, Algiers, and Morocco, to secure immunity for commerce, 302.
Tryon, ex-Royalist Governor of New York, destroys the magazines and sets fire to the town of Danbury, Connecticut, 222; ravages the coasts of Long Island; his expedition carried out with wanton and shameful destruction of property, and every species of barbarity against the unprotected people, 251.
Tullushatchie, encounter with Indians at, 320.
Turkey Bend, retreat from, by General M'Clellan, 425.
Twiller, Wouter Van, Governor of New York, 44.
Tyler, Erastus B., wounded at Fredericksburg, 460.
Tyler, John, of Virginia, opposed to Jackson, and gives name to the Whig Party, 347; elected Vice-President; succession as President on death of General Harrison, 351.
Tyrone, Pa., Irish settlement, at 84.

Ulster, Ireland, emigration from, to America, 70.
Unadilla, a settlement of Tories and Indians, attacked by the Continentals, 348.
Union Army compelled to spend three weeks in a swampy and malarious region, suffered greatly from fever and ague, 415.
United Colonies of New England 43.
United States of America, adoption of title, 195; formation of the Constitution of, 287, 288; census of, first taken in the year 1790, 291; census, second, taken in 1800, 301; census taken in the summer of 1870, 633; differences with other Powers, 297; formulate a treaty with the French Government, 301; policy of non-intercourse with English and French; lengthened negociations between England and the, 306; resolution passed by Senate that Executive assumed authority in derogation of laws and Constitution, 347, 348; protest of, against action of Canadian loyalists during a time of peace, British Ambassador's attempt to justify such action, his Government assumes responsibility for same, 351; finances and public debt of, 565; amendment of the Constitution of, 601; Bank, application for renewal of Charter passed in the Senate and House of Representatives, but vetoed by the President, 344; Government, financial and physical difficulties of, 238; Mint established at Philadelphia, 294; Navy, glorious successes achieved by, 311, 312, 313, 314, 323, 324; Navy Yard at Norfolk dismantled, 375.
Upper Louisiana, extension of settlements in, 128.
Ury, Rev. John, judicial murder of, 96.
Utah, organised as a Territory in 1850, 642; as a State in 1894; population for in 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.
Utrecht, peace of, 87.

Vallandigham, Clement L., leader of the "Copperheads," 466; his trial and sentence, 467.
Valley Forge, American Army retires into winter quarters at, 235; severe privations endured by the army at, 236.
Van Buren, Martin, elected President of United States, 350; disputes with England, in consequence of the Canadian Rebellion, 351.
Van Buren, town of, taken possession of by General Blunt, 437.
Van Dorn and Price, attacked the outlying posts of the Federal Army at Corinth, 433; Van Dorn interrupts the communications of General Grant, 461.

Van Rensselaer, Colonel, crosses into Canada 311.
Venezuelan Arbitrators, award of, 664.
Venezuelan Boundary, question of, 646; Lord Salisbury denies the application of the Monroe doctrine thereto, 647; obliged to accept the United States as sole umpire, 648.
Vera Cruz, siege of, fortress of San Juan reduced; surrender of town to Americans, 356; taken by Spanish, English, and French without a declaration of war, 387; first two powers afterwards withdraw, 388; remnant of the French army disembarked at, 630.
Verazzani, John, sails from Florida to Newfoundland, 19.
Vermont, admitted as a State into the Union, 292; population for, in 1890 and 1900, *App.*, xxvii.
Vicksburg, on the Mississippi, headquarters of General Pemberton, 437; the Federals fail to carry it on their first efforts, 462; siege of, 477, 478, 479, 480, 481, 482; assault on, 483; sufferings of the besieged, 486; capture of, by the Federals, 487.
Vincennes, military and trading post established at, by the French, 77.
Vincent, Colonel Strong, defends Little Round Top, at Gettysburg, 500; killed, 505.
Vincent, English General, operates on the Niagara frontier, 322.
Virgil St., Bishop of Saltsburgh, his theory regarding the earth's sphericity, 16.
Virginia, early colonization of, by English, 23; slavery introduced into, 36; constitution granted to, 37; constitution withdrawn, 38; inhabitants of sympathise with Charles I. in his struggle with the Parliament, 51; Irish settlers of, 82, 83, 105; sends delegates to Congress instructed to declare for independence, 194; secedes from the Union, 370; Convention of State delegates from twenty-five counties met at Wheeling to prevent same from falling under Confederates' power, 378, 379; chief seat of the Confederate war, 380, 381, 382, 397, 398, 399, 400, 401, 402, 407, 408, 409, 410, 411, 412, 413, 414, 415, 416, 417, 418, 419, 423, 424, 425, 426, 427, 428, 429, 430, 443, 444, 445, 446, 447, 456, 457, 458, 459, 460, 470, 471, 472, 473, 510, 532, 533, 534, 535, 536, 537, 538, 539, 540, 541, 542, 543, 544, 545, 546, 547, 548, 549, 550, 568, 569, 570, 575, 576, 577, 578, 579, 580, 605, 606, 608, 609, 610, 611, 612, 613, 614, 615; population for in 1890 and 1900, *App.*, xxvii.
Virginia, or Merrimac, Confederate warship blown up by Confederates to prevent her capture by Federals, 408.

Wadsworth, Captain, and 50 men killed when marching to the relief of Sudbury, 60.
Wadsworth, General James Samuel, distinguished at the advance on Gettysburg, 495; reinforces General Green, 502; his desperate struggle against the Confederates, 532; killed at the battle of the Wilderness, 533.
Wadsworth, over a large body of Militia during the battle at Queenstown, 311.
Wade-Hamilton, General, expected to advance from Lake Champlain with a supporting American force, 321; his retreat, 322.
Walker, Admiral Hovenden, British expedition under, 86; his fleet wrecked in the River St. Laurence; he returns to England, 87.
Walker, General William H. T., commands a Confederate division at Gettysburg, 443.
Walker, Leroy P., of Alabama, Confederate Secretary of War, 465.
Walpole's, Horace, Memoirs of the Reign of King George III, 143, *et seq.*
Walton, George, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 207.
War, between the English and French colonists, 74, 75.
War, between France, Spain and England, 79, 80.
War, carried on for Independence, 158, 159, 160, 161, 162, 164, 165, 166, 167, 168, 169, 170, 171, 172, 173, 174, 176, 177, 178, 179, 180, 181, 182, 183, 184, 185, 186, 187, 188, 189, 190, 191, 192, 193, 194, 208, 209, 210, 211, 212, 213, 214, 215, 216, 217, 218, 219, 220, 221, 222, 223, 224, 225, 226, 227, 228, 229, 230, 231, 232, 233, 234, 235, 236, 237, 238, 239, 240, 241, 242, 243, 244, 245, 246, 247, 248, 249, 250, 251, 252, 253, 254, 255, 256, 257, 258, 259, 260, 261, 262, 263, 264, 265, 266, 267, 268, 269, 270, 271, 272, 273, 274, 275, 276, 277, 278, 279, 280.

War, declaration of, against England, 309; beginning of, in the year 1812, 310; continuance of, 311, 312, 313, 314, 315, 316, 317, 318, 319, 320, 321, 322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 330, 331, 332, 333, 334, 335, 336, 337, 338.

War, discontent consequent on continuance of, 324; announcement of end, in New York, 336.

War, great Confederate, breaks out in April, 1861, 372, *et seq.*

War, threatened between United States and France, 348; peaceful termination, 349.

War, with Algiers, 338, 339.

War, with the Miami and Wabash Indians, 293.

War, Whiskey, quelled, 295.

War, with the Barbary States, 302, 303.

War, with Mexico, 353, 354, 355, 356, 357, 358, 359; end of, 361, 362.

War, with Spain, 654, *et seq.*

Ward, Artemus, appointed Major-General for the Revolutionary Army, 172.

War Inquiry Commission, appointed by President McKinlay, 660.

Warren, Commodore, fleet of one hundred vessels ordered against Louisburgh, 111.

Warren, Doctor, in retiring from Bunker Hill, shot dead, 171.

Warren, General Gouverneur Kemble, defends Little Round Top, at Gettysburg, 500.

Warren, Sir John Borlase, with a powerful English fleet, sent to blockade the American Coasts, 315.

Warrington, Captain of the United States sloop of war Peacock, captures a British brig, 323.

Washington, a Western Territory taken from Oregon, becomes a State by Act of Congress, 642; population for, in 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.

Washington City, so called in compliment to the First President, 291; seat of Government transferred to, from Philadelphia, 299; British advance on, 328; capture of, and burning by the British, 329; defended from Confederates, by Generals McDowell and Blenker, 407.

Washington, George, said to have been of Irish ancestry; his birth and early life, begins his public career; dangerous mission accepted by, 113; early adventures of, journal of, 114; appointed Lieutenant-Colonel, his defeat of the French at Great Meadows, Fort Cumberland erected by, 115; his advice rejected by General Braddock, 117; his coolness and courage in the battle which took place, 118; appointed Commander-in-Chief of American Army, 165; refuses all pay except for his own personal expenses, 166; measures adopted for organizing the army by, 172; his personal appearance, 173; he and the army sole representatives of the country, 175; manifesto from, circulated amongst the Canadians, 179; urges Congress to form regular and disciplined regiments, receives secret message from Congress that Boston must be taken, 186; recruiting for his army, 187, 188; Boston surrendered to him on St. Patrick's Day, publicly thanked by Congress, issues a general order in compliment to Irishmen, 190; causes the Declaration of Independence to be read before his army, 207; declines Lord Howe's communication without acknowledging his title, 209; sends secret orders for evacuation of Long Island, 210; defence of New York, 211; engagements near New York, 212, 213; meditates a retreat through New Jersey, 214; rumours prejudicial to his military character, addresses a strong letter to the President of Congress, insisting on the necessity of forming a permanent army, 216; retreats to Trenton, made military dictator for six months, daring plan of attacking all the British posts on the Delaware, 217; organizes a force to cross the river, 218; the battle of Trenton, his march round Cornwallis, 219; posted his army in a strong position, and public confidence in his judgment restored, 220; uncertain regarding the movements of Lord Howe, 231; proceeds by forced marches to Philadelphia, 232; at the battle of Brandywine, 233; conducts the American retreat, 234; obliged to evacuate Philadelphia, 235; takes up winter quarters at Valley Forge, 236; adversely criticised by several officers of the American Army, 237; moves to a strong position at Middlebrook, condition of

his army, British intrigues to seduce the loyalty of Irishmen serving under him, 241; crosses the Delaware in pursuit of the British retreating from Philadelphia, 242; at the battle of Monmouth, administers a severe rebuke to General Lee, 243; the pursuit of the British directed by, 244; reorganization of his army, 250; he plans the capture of Stony Point, 255; causes it to be evacuated, 256; position of, at the opening of the year 1780, 259; as the most considerable portion of his troops were Irish, he congratulates them, and in compliment orders that St. Patrick's Day, 1780, be celebrated with military rejoicings, 259; sends 2,000 Continental troops to the South under Baron de Kalb, 261; sends Lafayette with some troops to capture the traitor Arnold, 269; combines with Rochambeau to march southwards, 274; joins Lafayette at Williamsburg, 275; investment of Yorktown, 276; preparations for storming the redoubts, 277; receives the submission of Lord Cornwallis and his army, 278: greeted with a congratulatory address by the President of Congress on his arrival in Philadelphia, 280; returns to take up a position with his army near New York; indignantly rejects the proposition of "The Cincinatti" that he should be declared King, 284; proclamation published in Washington's camp at Newburg announcing the end of the war, 285; his farewell address to the army, 286; elected as President over the convention to frame a constitution for the United States, 287: elected as First President of the United States, 289; his inaugural speech delivered to the Senate and House of Representatives, 290; selects a seat for the Government, 292; re-elected President for a second term of four years, 293; he sides with the Federal Party, 294; policy of, in the war between France and England, 295; dissensions in his cabinet; he declines to hold office a third time; his farewell address, 296; marks of public respect paid to him; assists at inauguration of his successor, 297; recalled from his retirement to resume command of the army; his lamented death, 298, 299.

Washington, Lieutenant-Colonel William, a distant kinsman of General George Washington, distinguished himself for his gallantry at King's Mountain, 269, 270; for his conduct at Eutaw Springs he obtains a gold medal from Congress, 273.

Wasp, captures the British brig Avon, loss of Captain and crew of, at sea same year, 321.

Wateree River, occupied by Irish in 1734, 88.

Waterford, in Ireland, petition from, setting forth the evil consequences that should result from a continuance of the differences between Great Britain and the Colonies, 158.

Watertown, assembly of Congress in, 159.

Wauch, Irish immigrant in New York, 82.

Waxhaws, on the Santee River; colonised by Irish, 88.

Wayne, Anthony, called "Mad Anthony" among the Americans; celebrated hero, 187; raised the Fourth Regiment of Pennsylvania troops for Washington, 188; defends Chad's Ford, at the Brandywine, 233; his services at the battle of Monmouth, 243; his victory at Stony Point, 255; severely wounded in the assault, 256; quells the mutiny in the Pennsylvanian line, 267; victories over the Indians, 293.

Waynesboro', captured by General Sherman, 605.

Wear, Irish immigrant, in New York, 82.

Webster, Daniel, Secretary of State, correspondence wih Lord Ashburton, 351; conducts the boundary of Maine question to a peaceful solution, 352; appointed Secretary of State by President Filmore, 363; opposed to the compromise measures regarding slavery, 364.

Weed, General Stephen H.; killed at the head of his brigade at Gettysburg, 500.

Weitzel, Godfrey; commands a brigade under General Banks, 475; directed to co-operate in the expedition against Wilmington, 598.

Welles, Gideon, Secretary of the Navy; active in equipping war vessels, 383; his great exertions manifested in the results obtained, 454.

Welsh, emigration to Philadelphia, 84.
Westbrooke, Colonel, attacks Norridgewock, 92 ; destroys the Abenakis settlement, 93.
Westfield ; the Federal flagship grounded, and afterwards blown up by her captain, 463.
West India Company, Dutch origin of, 28.
West Point, battle gained at, by McClellan, 409.
West Virginia, resolves on separation from the Confederates, 379 ; became one of the United States, 476 ; population for in 1890 and 1900. *App.* xxvii.
Whalley, father-in-law of General William Goffe, one of the Puritan judges of Charles I., who took refuge in New England, 60.
Wheeler, William A., of New York, elected Vice-President of America, 637.
Wheelright, John, propagates Antinomian tenets, 39.
Whipple, William, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 197.
Whiskey Duties, unpopular, in consequence of them, formidable riots took place in Western Pennsylvania, 295.
White, General Julius, retreats from Winchester to Martinsburg, 444.
Wilderness, battles of the ; 531, 532, 533 534, 535, 536, 537, 538, 539.
Wileman, Henry, an Irishman, founder of Wilemantown, New York, 82.
Wilkes, Captain Charles, misinterpreting the rules of international Law, captures Confederates on board an English vessel, 386 ; England demands their release, 387.
Wilkes, John, Lord Mayor of London, presents address to the King, approving of the action of the Colonists, 158.
Wilkinson, General, appointed to General Dearborn's position ; suspected by President Jackson to have been a Confederate in Aaron Burr's conspiracy, 317 ; embarks his troops to descend the St. Lawrence, 321 ; abandons the attempt to reach Montreal, 322 ; failure of his expedition, 323.
William III., of England, reinstates Lord Howard of Effingham, 62 ; erects Maryland into a Royal province, 69 ; organizes for hostilities against Louis XIV., when his death soon afterwards follows, 79.
Williams, General Seth, served in the Mexican war, at Gettysburg, 499.
Williams, General Thomas, an artificial channel on the Mississippi cut by, to effect the capture of Vicksburg, unsuccessful, 477, 478.
Williams, Roger, founds Providence City, and obtains a charter for Rhode Island, 35.
Williams, William, signer of the declaration of Independence, 199.
Williamsburg, South Carolina, peopled by Irish from 1734 to 1737, 88, 98.
Williamsburg, Va., Federals reached, 409.
Willing, Thomas, opposed to Declaration of Independence, 195.
Wilmington, expedition directed against, 597 ; under command of Admiral David D. Porter, 598 ; failure of the attempt, 599 ; a renewal of the assault successful, 600.
Wilson, Brevet Major-General James H., commands 12,500 mounted men in the South West, 618 ; his successes, 619.
Wilson, Ensign, an Irish-American, received from the conquered British army at Yorktown their standards and battle-flags, 278.
Wilson, General, moves against the enemy's railroad South of Richmond, defeats a force of the enemy's cavalry at Nottoway Station, destroys the Danville railroad to Roanoke Bridge, forced to retire at Reams Station, with loss, 546.
Wilson, Henry, of Massachusetts, elected vice-President of the United States, 635.
Wilson, James, Secretary of Agriculture, member of M Kinley Cabinet, 652. 666.
Wilson, James, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 201.
Wilsonn's Creek, battle of, Federals defeated, 382.
Winchester City, General Stonewall Jackson retires from, and General Banks takes possession of, 397 ; leaving General Shields to guard it, he advances against Jackson and

defeats him at Kearnstown, 398; Jackson again advances and forces Banks to retreat on, 399; Banks driven from, Jackson retreats from, 400; the Confederate General Ewell surprises, 493; the Confederates cover, 575; retire from, up the valley followed by Sheridan, 576, 577; during the absence of Sheridan in Washington, attack on by Confederate General Early, 578; General Sheridan arrives in time at Winchester, and defeats Early, 579.

Winchester, General, holds command in Canada under General Harrison, 314.

Winder, John H., General, jailer of the Union soldiers imprisoned at Andersonville, 594; his inhuman order, 595.

Wingfield, President of London Company's American Council, 26.

Winslow, Josiah, defeats the Narragansets, 59.

Winsor, Justin, "Narrative and Critical History of America," its great value, *Pref.* vii., viii.; 2, *et seq.*

Winthrop, Fitz-John, son to the Governor of Connecticut, set over an expedition against the French, 75.

Wisconsin, admitted as a new state into the Union, 359; population for in 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.

Witamo, Indian Chieftainess of Pocasset, 60; drowned in trying to escape from Major Church, 61.

Witchcraft, delusion regarding, spread among the people of New England, 40; laws against, and penalty of death for recorded, 41; prevailing belief in, causes great excitement, 69; Cotton Mather's frantic denunciations of it from the pulpit, 74.

Witherspoon, Doctor John, advocates independence, 194; signer of the Declaration of Independence, 199, 200.

Wolcott, Oliver, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 199.

Wolfe, Major-General James, accompanies the English expedition to Canada, 121; the division to operate against Quebec under his command, 123; stations his troops on the Island of Orleans, 324; ascends the Plain of Abraham, engages Montcalm, killed in that battle, 125.

Wool, General John Ellis, served in the War of 1812-1814, and in Mexico, his troops withdrawn from M'Clellan, 401; took possession of Norfolk City, 408.

Wooster, David, appointed Brigadier General in Washington's army, 172; mortally wounded in a skirmish near Danbury, 222.

Worth, General William Jenkins, assailed the position of Molino del Rey, 358; enters first the captured City of Mexico, 359; fought in Seminole War, 1837-42, 409.

Wright, General, withdraws his troops and restores order, 533.

Wright, Major-General, H. G., assigned to command all the troops that could be made available against Early, he commences that pursuit, 519; effort to capture the Weldon Road, 546.

Wyoming admitted into the Union as a new state, 642; population for in 1890 and 1900, *App.* xxvii.

Wyoming, attacked by Colonel John Butler, and defended by Colonel Zebulon Butler, 245; the garrison defended itself bravely, but was soon overcome; without respect to age or sex, all the survivors, with the most savage cruelty, were massacred by the British and their Indian allies, 246.

Wythe, George, signer of the Declaration of Independence, 204.

Xenia, in the State of Ohio, 643.

Ximenes, Cardinal, endeavours to redress the cruelties, crimes and abuses of Spaniards in America, 20.

Yale College, presentation by George Berkley, of his collection of books to, 103.

Yamassee Indians, ravage South Carolina, defeated by colonists and driven into Florida, 88.

Yeo, Sir James, conveys British reinforcements to the Niagara frontier, 322; combines with General Drummond by land and water on Fort Oswego, 326.

Yonge's History of the British Navy, 317, *et seq.*

York, Duke of, takes possession of Dutch settlements in North America, 53.

York River, 275.

Yorktown, Lord Cornwallis retreats to, 274; investment of, 275; defence of by Lord Cornwallis, 276; surrender of, 277; rebel army at, covered about seven miles, defended by field works of all kinds, 408; occupied by Federal troops, 409.

York, town of, now Toronto, in Canada, captured by the Americans, 315.

Young, Brigham, appointed as Joseph Smith's successor, leader of the Mormons, elected Governor of Deseret, 360.

Zeigler's Grove, 504.

Zollicoffer, General Felix K., Confederate General, prepares to invade Kentucky with Confederate troops from Tennessee, 384; defeated by General Thomas, 391.

Zook, General Samuel Kosciuzko, killed at Gettysburg, 499.

Zouaves, New York Irish, formed, 340.